

Stanisław Giers ,Zain Agha,Ayano Chindy,Dawn VanVamp Asami'z,Princess Yuki
Nyan,Titankronos9,Dorothea Kirilova,Eunice Rie Ichikawa, Micanikko,Shin Kim Kyujong
Auska,Bogdanescu Anca-Maria,Seena Komoniwa,Sasuke Uchichaa,Chesca Glass,Vishal
Sinha,Bahamut Azakayi,Taisuko Esperado Vergil,Leslie Barrera,Mitsuki Hakurou Otomari.

Dedicated in memory of my Grandmother.
Irene who died in 2002 ,may God bless her and give her a peacefull rest.

BLAZE MASTER ETERNAL WAR

WRITTEN BETWEEN 2011-2014
with the help of my friends

Mathew 16:28

„I can guarantee this truth: Some people who are standing here will not die until they see the Son of Man coming in his kingdom.”

“One distant star that shines with the power of God, celebrating the life in the Universe, home to warmth. One distant star that shines so far away in space engulfed in the cold darkness spreading its warmth to planets every plant and every animal carries it's light in its own core... Oh the distant star I send you a prayer from the coldest deapth of Universe as a beloved creation of GOD made to resemble him please continue to give us the warm we need.”

“I dedicate this work of fiction to our beloved creator master of all that is seen and unseen the one that is watching over us from the past and continues even today. The creator of our free will. The true master, GOD. May the light of knowledge and love befall on us living. May we be blessed in participating in Your holy work and may my small and insignificant attempt at describing You're glory. May this small fiction world be blessed, from the Heavens and continue under Your divine inspiration. I want to dedicate this work to the Father and Son and to the Holy spirit. I ask you for help and guidance. I also ask You to acknowledge the works of our minds and heart in Your favour.”

“In the times of ancient evil 106 chosen people will save the world”

The Prologue:

The first prime to manifest the universe were the impuls ... which became God. The manifestation of intelligence locked in a single electromagnetic symbol. First were two values + positivity meaning kindness , happiness and positivity. And the other one; - Minus ,negativity meant to represent evil ,nothingness, pain, despair and sorrow. The binary code 0 and 1. These two simple values became our universe's basic foundation. The language that started everything billions of years ago, the first elemental values , good and evil were thus created equal and yet un equal. The world was created out of this opposition. Kindness was always meant to oppose evil....

But, was that true?

These two opposing force's were created alongside each other. They were meant to create something by opposing each other just as neutrons create a single atom in space. But this opposition can take many forms different structures can therefore be created. Different atoms, in turn create different types of matter, right? We, therefore have a language created out of opposition. Its like in these ancient scriptures where "WORD BECAME MATTER."

So if our world is something similiar to a book or maybe even to a computer program, where are it's designers? Can we assume it's designer is the intelligent energy that begun experimenting with our basic values? Is that GOD? Could this even be called a God?

So let's begin once more. Who or what is God ?

Originally in ancient societies, God was portrayed as a ancient patriarchal figure in the same manner as leaders are presented. God was actually considered to be a very powerfull leader. A leader in every aspect. A religious leader like a high priest and at the same time as a king. The term of God is in fact similiar in meaning to both these figures, because God is considered to be both a high priest and a very benevolent king.

But is this potrait of God true?

Yes and no ,because it was what we could call popular demand this kind of God figure was created to keep up with the illusion, or background of a dream-like gameworld we all live in, and then again the true God, is nothing like we expect him to be. It is the creator of all forms despite not having a form for itself not requiring any to exist. But the ancient minds of people needed clear forms that they could understand and categorize this Mighty Creator deserved to be celebrated, worshiped praised and used for gains of these that didn't posses such might, therefore religion was created mixing knowledge based on observation with lies and doctrinology ,creating first societies that were based on beliefs that its leaders were the sons of gods destined to govern humanity, which eventually introduces another item of worship.

It has the symbol of greed and selfishness: MONEY.

Divisions were created by the possession of this item and society was lead into its illusions and away from the real God. Eventually all of these things became more mixed and twisted and were lead to our current state of affair.

Despite these lies and deceptions, the truth has not completely dissapeared. These are locked in ancient scriptures ready to enlighten all those who dare to seek it. The old ancient prophets directed

by the light helped to create the foundation of our divine world despite the darkness and ignorance appearing to control everything it has on it's hands. The light taught us to love, and inspired to seek out the truth about our world. The same light that didn't disappear at all. Just hiding between the darkness that spread and engulfed by our highly advanced world. This knowledge is presented to you as a tiny fragment, but it has it's own unique role to play in the events that were yet to come.

Our story begun in the dark chaple placed inside some structure ,the chaple itself was full of dark aura and violet energy mist was flowing in the air creating a buzzing energy sound that fulled the area,it was very dark and gloomy a truely mysterious and perhaps terryfying place without no life the first thing that really would catch anyones attention would be grey ancient collumns that went upwards these colums were inscripted in ancient hieroglyphic language , spells that were cast upon this temple to make it unnoticable to the dark gods ,God and any other beeings that could detect any paranormal activity ,the enviroment was stable not a single wind blow in the darkness near the collumns green sacrificial fires were burning producing the violet smokes,these fires stood on strange pot like constructions locked in by energy barriers that hold the fire and its contents while releasing a violet smoke which was a key component in the magical barriers that were used to hide this magical shrine the collumns were lightened up as different hieroglyphs were lighten in different color ,an magical interface that told its users that their secret was beeing safe. The Floor of this chaple was dark marble and the collumns grey , sacrificial fire places were set in the asymetrical manner while in the middle a red road was created as the floor was lighten up by a powerful red light that acted like a red carpet the shrine had an interesting oddity to it as in the skies you could see entire galaxies ,red ,blue yellow and in different other colors. The Shrine was located in the first dimension that is called by me Echelion this mysterious dimension was both a border between dimensions and a dumpyard of creation it was also used to house the most dangerous demonic criminals which couldn't be resocialized and were dangerous to the outside. This dimension was Gods safety measure to keep all dangerous idea's out of the material world to store energy and to give birth to different dimensions created by single idea's . It is funny how people belittle their imagination not beeing able to understand how a single thought might influence entire galaxies ,the dimension which most visit only in their dream state to throw away all their thoughts which they produce during their normal activity like a field that was always fulled with seeds that were human and demonic thoughts the power of their minds, this place could materialize every thought and therefore every even unrealistic structure could materialize and thats how this dark chapel was created , the chapel where the entire story begun, a continuation of a battle I fought 75 years ago.The story which I thought was already over, was now to continue the carpet was shining red as a young boy was walking in it walking to his destination.The young boy stood on the gigantic rim that bordered the glass windows, their size as if crafted from clear consideration for Gods. As the silhouette turned and walked alongside them, its shadow paced the brilliant red carpet. He stopped and crouched down, his shadow a prying creature now, The boy's eyes locked to the ground. His Blond hair shrieking out from under the thin clothe for his hood, "Those who have viewed from the top will never forget the view" He echoed. though it was a whisper but it succeeded in haunting every brick of the chapel. His eyes sparkled, Dietrich was getting restless. The dark shadow birds passed him as he made his way to what obviously appeared to be a throne room the entire place

was fulled with a violet smoke that carried red energy lightings which in some weird manner greeted with Dietrich as he walked to his destination mumbling something to him self he was

awaited and his restlessness came from the fact he was hurrying . The Dark Shadow birds looked at the boy with their red shiny eyes growling terrifyingly this was a very ominous place.'omnious' the thought only made him chuckle. from somewhere inside him a hollow voice was screaming unfathomable things to him, "More. I want More" He narrowed his eyes absent-mindedly, and a black raven croaked out in alert. he sighed, he felt his strength increasing with time and he liked it. He looked at the blue stone on his ring, No, he loved it. after being sick for such a long time who knew this would be it. "what a foolish world" he told merrily to the perplexing bird, then he made his way. In front of him golden stairs going above to a dark marble throne and this figure sitting on it looking like a handsome dark haired man. Sitting in the same manner as if he was the messiah fabled saviour of ancient worlds however this holy appearance was deceitful as the nature of this being that sat on the throne this man that looked into the distance dressed in black robes with belts crafted out of energy who gazed upon the boy walking over on the golden stairs smiling gently as his favourite puppet made his way towards him.

„You finally came my disciple” He decided to speak with a calm dark toned voice deceptively making the boy feel comfortable while in reality he held nothing but mere contempt to the creatures of the lower worlds but this puppet could be useful and probably it was the main reason he bore its presence the boy knew nothing about evil ambitions of the dark God before him. The Dark God was the master of destruction a crown dark angel whose influence reached the far reaches of known universe, feared by many his dreadful ambitions scared all creation the entire chapel sung its strange song glorifying the evil master and this spiritual song was heard everywhere in every brick and in every part of the matter adding to the metaphysical experience of this destructive place, the shrine which was engulfed in darkness Galamouth's prison and main base of operation he's only known home was this darkness that was created from depths of his own hearth. The Chapel itself was like a dark prayer for destruction, like a desperate plea to end all creation, why would one want to be destroyed? If one believes everything around him is a lie, and cannot bring himself to find goodness in others he will not see any of it in himself, pushing further towards eternal darkness and nothingness this is the power of darkness that scientifically could be described as depression this too is a sign of corruption and darkness that wants to shatter souls and destroy hearths how many wars were fought because of this? How many wars were to begun because of this?

Dietrich felt his own version of serenity as he approached the majestic dark figure. His pace had increased once he left the golden stairs, let's get this over with. He was fed up with this old fashioned aura he met with.

A smile played at his lips as he felt the unknown force push him down, crushing him to a bow. Ah, clever! very clever. he loved the way Galamouth played God. Once he had fancied the idea himself, of Galamouth as his own personal God. but he had outgrown such foolish child's play. "My my. Now what have you to hide from me, my lord?" The next instant his cocky smile was replaced by a groan, his grey eyes to a fiery color. His heart bore malicious lust and his mind was in nightmarish pursuits, as Dietrich clenched his teeth, his face hidden by the blonde curtain his hair made. Galamouth, indeed very clever. Dietrich hoped he was hearing his thoughts because he had nothing to hide. He couldn't care less if Galamouth smashed his muscles and splintered his bones. Dietrich would meet Galamouth's eyes, even if he was greeted by void. He leaned on the pressure biting his lip and tasting his own blood. What have you to hide?. was I not made to be perfect? Dietrich screamed in his head. He was shaking all over. "Greet my gaze master. Grant me that one wish" quit the show and let me be.

Galamouth looked at his puppet sliding his fingers on the brown wooden ornaments of his throne his eyes greeted with Dietrich eyes as the boy stood on the dark marble floor on top of the golden stairs and in front of the red throne Galamouth was sitting on a small smirk came on Galamouth's face while he was amused by the boy's thoughts.

„There isn't a single thing worth of being perfect in my eyes as everything is a deceitful illusion, nothing more than lies created to torment the weak minded fools, this world is full of

disquisting decay which must be cleanshed” Said Galamouth as his dreadfull hollow gaze meet with Dietrich eyes insisting fear in the boys mind as he was looking at the beeing that dared to show itself in front of him „you are to perform few simple tasks before you're usefulness comes to an end” proclaimed Galamouth making his desires known to the boy he percieved as a mere tool to grant his ambitions ,he looked at the boys reaction feeling a bit fearfull and detestfull just as if he was reliving something painfull. Tarnished by violent emotions created by the darkness inside him ,he hold himself in one place not allowing his anger to dragg him into lower pits of true hell he unknowingly created for himself,green energy lightened the marbles the boy was standing on making magicall symbols show themselves these symbols told a dreadfull ancient story of an old sorcerer that found out the most mysterious knowledge of the universe and because he knew the truth this made him detest these that didn't know it making his pride hate all of existence.

Dietrich started chuckling, his eyes were drooping. he might as well be intoxicated by the situation. Finally, the coward is out of his shell his thoughts were fairly frank. His body shook with laughter and he managed to speak between convulsions, " too bad you are in my head eh.....but you already knew that...." and then on a louder note ".....you know everything!!!" he fell on his knees, still in a fit of mad laughter. "too....tt.o..ttoo bad. " he stammered.

Galamouth looked at the boy being intoxicated with Dietrich's fear and feeling more amused by the darkness that befallen this once cheerfull child ,Galamouth once again lifted his gaze towards the boy.

„I know of you're failures, do not fail me again ...gather the choosen children its time to grant their destiny than you are to make contact with Dark Master inform him the time has come to ennact the procedure” Galamouth raised his hand calling the red energy toward him making it gather towards the stairs and engulph them forcing him to push it back as it formed whirlpools which than materialised into some glass eclipse containers.

„observe ...these are the holly spiritual containers for the darkness you create with these fulled we will start the anti God spell which will nullify all of creation do well my disciple and you're nightmares will dissapair” Galamouth proclaimed showing him parts of his plan making sure he will describe everything to Dark Master and follow throught with Galamouths ambitions.

Dietrich nodded, with a detestable grin. "Your wish is my command, master." He closed his eyes and willingly bowed his head to the ground. his forehead wet from perspiration. when he looked up, the glass containers were still there, ".... and the nightmare goes on I see." with a whip of his hand he had them all under his cloak. Then he turned his back to the throne ready to leave. he savored atleast this power, for many of Galamouths slaves weren't even allowed that.

He lightly assailed towards the golden stairs. "what a boring day..." he thought to himself, before disappearing completely.

Galamouth got annoyed by his servants behaviour growling angrilly and than calming down looking at the blue glass containers that were floating above the stairs ,moving his hand golden energy flown circling in turrents creating a huge golden cloud ,as red energy lightings started creating schocks and magical dissulotions that slowly shaped a clear image which shown deep space and the futuristic metropoly we all knew as Megacivilisation ,Galamouth observed a certain tube like futuristic massive sky scraper which was build out of silver metal and it itself looked very modern ,red lights sparkled on the top of its roof top as many spaceships were going towards it and out of it on numerous levels, landing on the roof tops and entering the building gates which were opening for each individual space ship that entered or leaved the comlex. The Dark Lord Galamouth sat on his red throne observing the whole scene in his sanctuary ,beeing visibly disquisted by the scene he watched

„These artificial walls created by these that posses!! against these that do not posses! make these that have everything! ...unable to understand the pain of these that had everything taken away from them !!!..... fuiling hatret between both groups,we will make them slaves to our desires”

Galamouth commented to himself smiling visibly admiring his visions and crazy dark dreams feeling as if in this moment he somehow got the power to conquer entire worlds he was right

thought but clouded in his darkness saw only death as means of resolving this matter feeling sorrowful and yet trying to fight off his heart wanting only to carry out the nightmare he had planned for the world.

The darkness created unbearable pressure inside his head as if it wanted to crush him at the core, shattering the soul with pain that overflowed him infiltrating every possible essence in his entire existence, he no longer could go back being merely an empty shell for the dark energy a slave of destruction.

His mind filled with negative destruction thoughts slowly disintegrated his presence he wanted to scream from the agony but was unable as his pride wouldn't let him feeling weak and alone caring only for his own desires the plan that couldn't ever bring happiness. Only destruction being aware of this and yet being engulfed in the darkness he constructed over millennia's, his eyes were calm angry and scared at the same moment in few seconds experiencing different states ranging from true happiness to painful sorrow falling between and going up in a split of a second that was the unbearable pain Galamouth felt as he looked at the darkness of his shrine gazing slowly into the distance trying to understand the meaning of his existence wondering whether it had any at all, the beautiful and grotesque young man that became the Dark God master of all darkness and ruled over by it, closing his eyes he returned to the times where even he felt some serenity on a very distant planet covered in beautiful green fields the smell of the sweet air made the dark lord smile as blue petals were falling on this serene environment and suddenly filled with blood stains and explosions another image's that made him scream in agony.

His terrified scream filled the entire chapel making everything go in disarray with his falling heart this world was crumbling apart as giant dark snakes awaken from their slumber and arose towards his throne majestic shadow creatures with red eyes were towering above the fallen God a man lost in his despair and coughing up blood such intense was his pain and hatred for all existence that he couldn't even bear the thought of existing himself the shadow creatures surprised because of the state of their beloved master not being able to feel the darkness inside him not feeling any empathy they just continued silently to observe their master in his despair the whole temple full of the dark winds created by this dark despair and above eyes opening to look and observe to understand this amount of unbearable suffering a soul covered in darkness might have. A beautiful girl walked towards the throne greeted by the dark shadow birds which looked at her with red eyes informing that their lord was suffering they flown above her as she walked below them. She stops walking. In front of the golden stairs and slowly gazed upward seeing her master screaming in agony and trying to calm himself. She try to run away. But the dark shadow birds not let her go, Galamouth looked at the scene breaving calmly while the girl kneeled down afraid, moving his hand he made the dark birds fly away from the girl.

„come closer child” He proclaimed breaving calmly slowly gazing below the golden stairs looking at the girl dressed in blue dress with white buts she slowly walked up to the throne.

Galamouth said to her "will u be baptiz for me?" Looking at her with his dark eyes as the snakes arose surprised near the girl looking at her from below with their red eyes the girl walked back "baptiz?" she asked surprised wondering what the Dark Lord meant by this phrase faithfully looking into his eyes meeting only darkness inside him as he stood up and slowly walked down to the girl "u can have a power to change the world" he quickly added as he was coming to her and gently kneeled down looking at her surprised smiling pretending he cared about her trying to make himself look warmer, trustable.

".....change...the world?" The girl spoke looking into his eyes feeling a bit confused shocked by his sudden proposition as the snakes around them looked with disbelief wondering why would the Dark Lord propose such a thing to something so inferior as a little 15 year old girl with blond hair. "yeah...the power to stop tragedies, to save life” Said Galamouth touching her cheeks and looking at the girl smiling making sure she was calm and ready to obey every single word he told her. Nearing very closely and standing up waving his hand creating whirlpools of golden energy as powerful dark winds started to blow again, the Shrine's pillars and columns were filled with green heroglyphic signs warning about the dark spell that was about to be created dark red pentagrams

appeared as the girl stood up looking around scared

...power?" she asked hesitantly a bit shocked because of the dark manifestations that took place scaring the girl a bit but she was calmed by Galamouth who gently patted her on the arm relieving all stress from her body as it flown away as dark smoke calming her instantly and making the dark Birds that sat on the collums and observed the whole ritual fly into the air eating the dark smoke as it was grain and flying in circles squeching hoping the Dark Lord would kill the girl for them to eat her but he had other plans as he looked directly into her eyes.

"u can kill the one who killed your sister. Will u accept this power?" He proclaimed and kneeled down slowly looking unto her head as if he would be planning to propose to her ,this was however a sarcastic move one she wouldn't ever understand instead looking at him faithfully. Not suspecting what would happen next.

"....can I" she asked feeling relieved someone understood her pain she beared since so many years ago from that time when it happen a very sad and dark memory her eyes were fullled with tears even more when he suddenly stabbed her with his sword looking schocked at the whole scene as blood was spilling out her cheast she fallen on the red shining floor fulling it with her blood as the birds tried to attack her falling towards her ,Galamouth suddenly made a protective circle telling them to back away. She died crying he than kneeled down touched her neck creating symbols on it as it was covered in darkness she even more schocked opened her eyes breathing her first breath schoked she was alive

„You have been reborn as a completelly different greater beeing ,no more shall you be ...just a weak shell...go forward my beutifull daughter lets commence the plan to create a perfect ideal world” Galamouth smirked as he told these words not believing in them himself as the girl suprisd standed up.

"what*s ur name?" The Dark God asked as he helped the girl to stand up looking into her eyes ,reading thoughts that came out of her head looking in it omnimously the girl didn't know what to answer she was a bit dizzy her head full of emotions ranging from anger to happiness she breathed calmly and looked at the Dark Good smiling happilly and helplessly, as he closed his eyes and stood up.

"then i*ll name youyou're name will be arua ...Arua Gemind" He proclaimed and walked past her waving his hand as dark powers fullled the temple creating a purple cloud the Dark God looked into the center of this purple mist, the girl schocked walked to the Dark God looking throught his back at the marvels the Dark Lord was creating she innocently looked at him

"arua?"she asked suprisd not really understanding the situation it was hard for her to comprehend this situation or the mad ambitions the Dark God had ,he gazed on her seeing the girl very cheerfull.

„Yes this will donow I will reveal the secret you were longing for... Blaze Master ...this is the identity of the one who murdered you're beloved sister!” Galamouth looked at her calmly as if he was hurted by revealing her the thruths that were his lies created to fulfill his mad ambitions.

"then can I kill him?" She asked tilting her head to the side looking at the Dark God who aproached the energy turrends making an oltar out of it a golden oltar fullled with ancient inscripture which he studied very closelly reading very slowly as it glowned infront of him the dark birds looked at Galamouth very curiously

"no. U can*t" he finally answered the girl looking at her analising ,waving his hand making blue smoke cover her as she looked at it very schocked and suprisd. "why?" Arua continued to inquire this question looking hopefully in the eyes of the dark God.

"you haven't been perfected yet my child" Galamouth expressed as he studied the girls body beeing very analitically his gaze made the girl blush embarrassed by the sudden interest the Dark God Galamouth had for her, believing it was something good. „you're energy channels must be perfected force ability improved if you were to confront the one known as Blaze Master ,he is a skilled foe unlike anything you ever meet” Said Galamouth looking at the girl smirking acting like a sage for the child ,planning to invoke the forbidden arts of dark craft and harmfull magic he slowly tempted her towards a very dangerous fate. He wasn't however bothered by this fact his concious was dead for a very long time only his ambition to once again envoke the Anti God's spell which in his mind

would end the entire existence a bit foolish desire impossible because of the hate that filled every core of this dark dream no one wanted to die even he himself betrayed that evil plan and yet it was the only way he saw to follow thought not realising that even he himself didn't want to perish from such a sorrowful and tearful world. Darkness that engulfed his mind was now spreading in the entire shrine, filling and furthermore filling every corner only adding more darkness into the shrine this holy temple of darkness, from which all calamity was to spread unto our futuristic utopia, this darkness that created illusions lies and deceptions that flown outside to the external world as a girl stood in front of the Dark God.

Arua looked sad into the distance seeing only how the darkness filled the temple she was a bit frightened and tensed, looking into the distance she merely looked for answers to questions that clouded into her mind, she was now filled with doubts asking herself was it the right way to go? Somewhere in her heart she knew what was the real purpose the Dark God had, she knew it was something very evil and terrible just like Dietrich before she too detested such visions, but she also felt an unbearable pain of losing someone that she loved, this nightmare was terrible and he the one that stood in front of her bore the prospect of ending this terrible pain. But she tried to hide her feeling in front of Galamouth. Thought the Angel of Darkness knew them, he could read them and planned to use them to his advantage after all darkness was a useful fuel, to make everyone hate each other and the world they live in that was his goal after all.

„Sadness makes you have an unbearable expression” he finally commented smirking and looking into Arua's eyes, savouring the darkness and thorns in her soul, they really were delicious to him as if it were somekinda delicacies, the Dark God planned to consume he walked over to the girl kneeling down looking straightly face to face making Arua surprised.

“...sorry” she said very sadly lowering her head in obedience, understanding that he was her master and she was merely his servant, roles that shouldn't be questioned, her purpose was simple to obey every command the Dark God would have. Nothing else no discussion quite simple if you waste some time to think about it.

“that's ok my child. Now go to bed” he said breaking the chain of command as he slowly petted her hair, just as if he was her father not master, but it wasn't due to love that he calmed her emotions it was just to seduce her to make her follow his mad ambition slowly standing he turned back and stepped on the golden steps.

„NO!”. “no. I don't want to. So. So!!” She screamed running after him stepping on the golden steps hesitantly and with a dizzy head. Galamouth was annoyed by her tenacity turning towards her and looking on the girl with a mad face.

“I order u arua to listen to me!!” He yelled at her restoring his chain of command standing and looking angrily but also a bit intrigued at the girl. It was the first time he saw something of this nature this power, he again started to fear his servant seeing something he couldn't understand. Galamouth feared things he couldn't understand.

„No !!” She screamed as she was feeling dizzy and weakening in his eyes, this in turn calmed him making him understand as the girl collapsed he rushed to save her, not fully understanding why he did that? was it compassion? No he detested all things yet he held her firmly and gently looked unto her.

„What a foolish slave” he mumbled to himself.

The hypocrisy of the world which Galamouth hated was created by simple ignorance by definitions that labelled one societal groups above the other, rich against poor who were criminalized because they dared to live against the will of these that seen them only as useless trash. After all for these masters of the world any opposition was an act of crime that should be punished by death for them people and demons were merely slaves to be used to earn money which would be gathered for their ambitions because the rich should have money and a lot of it, all of money from all the reserves possible that was the goal of the greedy whores of the system. Of course if they were the only ones wanting money they could be ridiculed, have doubts. That's why they needed others to desire the same, creating a world culture, whole entire structures based on greed and envy. Helping

to create the establishment and the System, well greed was just one thing that helps the system to hold authority over individuals just one of these lies, that money could bring happiness. Envy and greed, lust or even obsession with everything the material world had to offer and being restrained for that in the name of morality customs or even laws that had nothing to do with Justice. Poor however described as outcasts by them have always been restrained or even tied up unable to do anything because no one really wanted to help them, they became a bother to these rich majorities who created the oppressive regimes, which rallied billions in the name of hate making soldiers not care whom they kill as long as they're paid, after all there's nothing wrong in killing terrorists or criminals they want to destroy „our sacred way of living” our world built from illusions and hate. People and demons treat each other as enemies even if they're from the same social group, still forced to compete for money destroying each other in the name of illusions created by the rich. The way of living a better start have become an excuse for mass genocides in the name of law created by states or in our times even by single corporations that become states, full worlds maximising their revenue and tying up their workers with prospects of coupons, that's what became of money and gold they were replaced with coupons after all Megacivilisation didn't need a single currency because people and demons were required to live only within corporations as eternal work force these living beyond were enemies that's all, unless appropriate diplomatic deals were made by rich CEO's. Every single aspect of life could become a subject of these deals it was the CEO's that decided what their workers eaten, what brands were they using as food, clothes, drugs etc. It was all decided during business meetings of corporation leaders where concern about the well being of the workers wasn't ever an issue during these disputes, contrary to the popular belief of course. What was there fore discussed? Who and how can get more money, the rich divided the society as if it was somekinda cake. Deciding who should be accepted, who should be ignored and who should be eliminated. That was the main purpose of their existence.

The corporations feed on the naivete of its workers creating deals that allow them to abuse the weak that is the law of Megacivilisation, that is the law that rules over the corporate buildings and billions of people and demons that are nothing but slaves only in more modern, utopian settings lied by everyone and everything. In schools taught propaganda they follow blindly orders of their corporate leaders, who have real political power view themselves as God's despite being only man, or servants of the real Gods themselves, yet as long as it's on the grounds of their corporations they can make even deities out of themselves, in the corporate walls there is no higher powers above the CEO this is the true power of market unrestrained without any institutional governance, here in space Corporations which create platforms become their government it is a fair deal and makes the development and restructuring of the void space more easier without any institutionalized pressured or long bureaucratic procedures, simple conquering, taking possession or buying undeveloped space and then building a habitat that usually takes the form of a large universal metropolis combining different entities that guard the structural integrity together. Incredible logistics used to sustain this future environment and allowing free interactions, for what humanity and other forms of life achieved they were worthy of the title of Gods and perhaps that's why the real God allowed for this slowly, making sure knowledge flows freely God too enjoyed this spectacle but detested, hate, greed and ignorance, which was fuelled by the leaders of corporations who went to far.

The technocrats that wished to rule entire societies gathered inside the tub like sky scraper Lord Galamouth was observing, lights were turned on in the silver room as drinks and snacks were putted on the huge golden conference table in which built in square display devices projected three dimensional holographs showing the identity and a 3 dimensional model of the leaders assigned to their places. In this temple of commerce everyone had an arranged and assigned seat which he or she will occupy these seats, were the seats of power and authority, for these seats human and demonic lives were often sacrificed.

Robots and flying mini spaceships were serving the guests that looked mostly as elderly humans dressed in official suits helping them to sit, they looked dignifying. Clean, well mannered everything in their designs was fashionable and well planned as women were sitting near the man symbolising the importance of both sexes in the commerce sphere. They slowly occupied the

golden futuristic seats full of different kinda gadgets and buttons that served to increase the comfort of these that thought of themselves of being stronger than Gods.

A crowd of people filled the huge room gathering and sitting in front of the table below in class like futuristic benches that were full of mini build in computers these enormous crowd of woman and man was the representation of the universe's media corporations because every major TV or Radio station or even blogs and other forms of propaganda send in their news caster who wore colorful futuristic costumes making them more interesting than the clean business man and woman that wore only arranged fashion. The journalists' clothes were indeed more interesting, their colorful costumes like the colors of rainbow with abstract 3 dimensional logos of media corporations made it a real sight for sore eyes. These people looked at the stage on which the huge futuristic golden table was placed, the stage itself was in fact a wall that was used to divide the audience from the main actors, who were chatting smiling and talking about unrelated stuff preparing themselves to give the spectacle that was long awaited. A very gross topic to deal with wealthy about the poor, the leaders were disputing which beautiful words to use for masking their horrible plans. Not knowing their greed would be used by a much more powerful force than themselves. While at the same time in the golden corridors which were well lighted, deflecting the futuristic lights and at the same time showing off its glorious design, futuristic arrangements such as the plasma monitors that hung from the walls showing the corporations' TV programs that were streamed through the corporations' internal net service, a young man was walking he was young enough to see his future but not old enough to meet them. His skills granted him passage through his schooling. Though these skills simplified things, nothing was given to him easily. He fought his own respective battles and won them thusly with courage and valor. While he was still a child, he was sought out by a high ranking member of New Vixaria's royal guard. They saw in him a perfect soldier, one who could be molded in whichever way they desired. During his years at school they had him train when he wasn't participating in academics. Every waking moment was spent either under a teacher's or master's tutelage. At his eighteenth year, he graduated the academy at top of his class.

From that, straight into the pits of hell.

After his youth he was immediately taken into his majesties royal space marines, where he continued honing his skills. He chose as one of his disciplines sword fighting, and became one of the most skilled swordsmen in the galaxy. During his time at the academy he forged his sidearm blade, which he keeps with him at all times. He created it how many would put it, "the old fashioned way". He made it out of material found in a dead star's core. This material dummallium, pronounced doo-mal-ee-um, is also known as dark star fragments and is incredibly hard. He himself forged it, folding it over again and again until he saw it fit to be finally shaped. This material makes the sword unbreakable and able to cut through most anything, he shaped it into a cutlass and laid a dark gloss over the hilt to give it a blackened shimmer. He trained after the late Master Jarate who died while the academy was under attack from the enemy. The incursion was targeted late at night, and killed thirty seven students and twelve teachers. While he led many younger cadets to safety during the attack.

For this heroism he was granted a spot in an upcoming exploration mission, which he was made to lead after the commanding officer resigned. The expedition was a rescue mission to save the people who were the first explorers. When they arrived on the desolate planet, there were no signs of life. It was later discovered that there were creatures living beneath the surface and they kidnapped the explorers with the intent to present them to their "Deity". Captain Howard Levington led a team of twelve into the caverns and returned to the surface with only a few injuries the scars on his eye and hand. He was welcomed home as a war hero, and was presented an award for his bravery.

Captain Howard Levington has been called in for a promotion to commander of his own starship. He is now on his way to the ceremony. There are many high ranking officers in attendance, including the constable who recommended him to the academy. He walks into the room and no one notices him until he bumps into a person while walking from the back to the front of the room. The

gruff general, a man with a thick moustache and eyebrows but no other hair on his head, turned to yell at the person who bumped him, but realized who it was. "Oh Boy, look who's here!" He exclaimed to the crowd and they all stopped and turned to meet his gaze. All at once the crowd begins cheering and shouting. The captain smiles at the crowd and a booming voice calls out over the loud speaker "Alright, alright. Let's calm down now." The emcee soothes the crowd as the captain heads for the stage. "Good evening. First off, I would like to thank all of you for coming. I know many of you have left your posts early in the morning and will have to return, But in due time. We're here to award this man" He turns to our hero and points "This man, has done things that many of you wouldn't attempt. Has gone places some of you have never imagined. Been heroic at times where heroism would've gotten him killed. This man deserves much more than we can give him, He has earned this." The emcee opens a small box with the captain's new rank. "Come forth. I imbue you with your new stature." *He places the rank on the captain's shoulder. The man that suddenly entered the stage had gathered applause from all that were present, Business people that watched the presentation and the reporters who frantically pressed the buttons on their consoles, sending their broadcasts into the far reaches of the universe. This man despite being young was one of the bravest soldiers in the known universe and still despite that the greedy survents of the system planned to use him as a pawn in their games. The old man dressed in a wonderful golden toxido and an old style gentelmans hat, with visible computer attachment as the suit was just merely stylised to look as an old style gentel mans costume yet containing all the latest gadgets these kinda wardrobe posses, stood and enthusiastically clapped. Then coughing up a bit to demand some silence.

„being a hero is a virtue” he started taking his stage and walked to the young man shaking his hand „it is a true honor to meet such a fine youngster like yourself...as I said being a hero is a virtue especially in our dangerous times when many of us face attacks from enemy corporations and social outcasts, universe harbors many criminals and outrageous individuals that spend their times plotting against the established safe zones many of us created by hard labour. That's why it's always important to be vigilant against enemies, outsiders and foreign agents who's main objectives are to rob us from the peace we established ...our corporation is therefore proud to have among their military forces people who are not afraid to fight oppression. Universe is a dark place hostile to man full of demons, aliens and things which we should all pray to never meet. It is in my opinion that universe isn't a place that should be inhabited by man, representing the voice that unfortunately sounds loudly very

late, therefore it is our duty to recreate what we once destroyed. This hard lesson teaches us responsibility for every single being that is in our care.

Yet there are irresponsible groups lead only by financial concerns or evil ideology being intoxicated by powers that are beyond our imagination, fools that created tragedies many of which, present now with us Howard Levington saw for himself it's an awesome honor to guest people that can tell this terrible story to us ...please share it with us” Said the old Man bowing in a respect „please enlighten us about the dangers that surround our walls” ended the man and returned to his designated seat at the golden table, while the whole room was filled with applause as the attention centered at the young man. The captain delves deep into his memories, remembering back to the last few days of his time at the academy. A time before his official service to the corps, he earned experiences there that would save him later in life. Howard begins his tale on a cold and dreary night, everything was calm and quiet. Howard had just turned in for the evening and was climbing into bed. Suddenly, from out of nowhere, there is a loud thud. A few seconds later followed a large explosion. Huge Mortars are into the building. Howard gets up; another explosion nearly knocks him off of his feet. He makes his way to the hallway to see what was going on, Academy teachers and professors are in the corridors, running into every room trying to wake the students. He meets one of the teachers “Sir, What's going on?” The professor replies “The school is under attack, evacuate immediately!”. Howard makes his way downstairs, looking up he notices that the staircases above him are engulfed in flames. He continues on through another hall, then through a door he can hear screaming. “Help! The door is stuck, we're trapped!” Howard tries the

door, It won't budge. He thinks quickly and notices a fire extinguisher on the wall, he breaks the glass and grabs it. Howard uses it to bash the handle off the door before finally knocking the door off of its hinges. "Follow me" He says to the frightened students. Howard escorts them from the building and back to the teachers. Back to the present golden rays of light fallen down on the captain who wore a blue or grey star fleet uniform. As he was telling his story to the world slowly describing the incident concerned with momentary details. Being camered by dark spheres that floated near him, these robots, of corporate origin were controlled from the desks in front of the place Mr Howard was standing delivering his speech, spheres circled the captain as if they were his satellites. People controlling them, were the service staff of some universal media corporation a young dark haired boy and a fat man of 30 years subordinates both dressed in white shirts carrying the company rectangular logo, looking at the woman dressed all red. The woman in red shiny clothings, with light red hair, slim figure. She reminded an amazon or a goddess with her unnatural beauty simply putting everything was perfect in her, attractive tiny black skirt that revealed her light brown skin and beautiful white heels. She knew how to walk seductively, knew how to correct her leather red jacket to look tempting and seductive. It was part of this blue eyed 29, probably 29 year old woman's trade. She was a huntress that hunted for every information, being able to sacrifice everything her body had to offer in order to extract this vital piece that would make the next news...on the news coverage of her universal media company, she too was a soldier that was able to go very far. Gently sitting on the stage edge she looked back at the stage and at the man who was telling his story analysing him a bit, preparing herself to ask the question. She knew that the people were looking at her. But she also knew that the dark haired boy and the fat man next to him weren't at her level. The dark haired boy input some commands into his computer device, turning his attention towards the fat guy waving his hands on the man, who was controlling a huge camera crane that lowered itself closer, camering the woman. She angrily turned her head on the other side. She wanted to get her job done. Sometimes she just hated her job. Sometimes she just got bored of all of this. But it was her job after all. And she loved it...most of the time. The young man waved „you're going in few minutes" he said. While the fat guy was synchronising the volume, with the audio image that was recorded by his futuristic equipment. Lowering the camera crane, to get a full image of the woman as she began her broadcast. She stood up and prepared herself to ask the questions, but she couldn't say a word. That was strange for her. She wasn't afraid but yet she wasn't as brave as she was before, above on the stage a heated debate was taking place, the elites were arguing about the most effective way to justify their greed, the young reporter only now started to realize how huge and powerful this event was. How small and shallow were the minds of these that were supposed to rule entire galaxies, these man and woman of wealth were acting like children, now she was supposed to ask the question, but only the questions that were scripted for her to be asked, no questions that would be important, she had a script and a role to play and this was what frightened her. She began to bite her lips wondering what to do now. She had no idea. So many thoughts were running through her mind and she was scared and confused. If she ask the wrong question, she will be fired for sure. But what was the right question? „what the fuck you're doing get out there !" The Dark haired man yelled at the woman, seeing her troubled almost praying she would already start the broadcast as precious time was moving forward, yes ! in this temple of greed even time had a price and the woman was supposed to act in the right way in this time, for which she would be paid by the media company. „it's your first day on the job don't screw it" he whispered silently too her hoping to motivate the woman to do her job. She started looking around her with a scared and puzzled look. "Why I am so nervous? Oh God I don't want to be here? What am I thinking I have to focus! I want to disappear" she thought. The young man walked over to her and patted her back. „what's up ?..you know what to do right ?" The dark haired man asked while giving signs to the fat guy that operated the camera „it's a big deal, we gotta do it or the boss will kill us, it's your chance to shine" the man added looking at her and walking back, to his friend. „are we gonna do it or not ?" The fat guy asked „just give the girl her time" the Young man replied. The man shown her signs and turned on the camera „you're on !" he yelled and expected the girl to perform well. "I...i...can't do it i have no idea what is going on with me i have never felt that way before I'm

so sorry but i nedda moment" she said and ran away crying. The Fat Guy turned off the camera and sighted almost weeping, as the young guy angrily kicked the camera „were so dead !” he looked at his friend, sitting down and taking out a cigarette, walking over to his friend and sharing the cigarette with him, lighting up himself and for his buddy „I could have had my ex into this, fuck !” he screamed. She goes to the other end of the room crying "I'll die I'll surely die" she cried, her fear being incredible, she felt as if she was entering a cave full of terrible monsters and she was right, these weren't humans, or even demons, these greedy humanoidal creatures were worse than anything hell could produce, she breathed hardly, not feeling alright. "I think...I think...I will...." she started crying again. The tears were falling from her face ruining her make up. She slowly pushed her head to the side as she started vomiting from stress, making the medical team come closer to her, a very young golden haired boy dressed in futuristic white cloths accompanied with two girls, one green haired the other pink haired, dressed in quite fashionable, medical uniforms came closer to the young journalist „are you all right miss” the young doctor calmly asked.

"I don't know I have never felt it" she cried. The Young doctor walked closer, kneeling down and attached a white cylindricall mini computer device, that shown strange symbols and played a calm song, he took the device away and read a report that was shown on its screen „it appears to be stress miss” the young doctor calmly replied, smiling to her childishly as he was just 10 years old, only an apprentice under another Doctor, practicing to become the best doctor in the entire corporation, the boy was excited because it was his first serious medical mission. "But I had never been nervous before! What's wrong with me" she cried louder. Tears started to fall down her cheeks again. Her make up was totally ruined. "Oh damn I look terrible" she thought. The boy smiled calmly and slowly stood up „but it's all right..you see most people get nervous when they work too hard and it causes serious medical problems that can be cured after calming down” the boy smiled as his blue eyes shined in excitement, while he himself was being observed by a dark bearded man, who was the doctor that taught this new apprentice. The room was covered in golden lights as other crews were working very tentaculously, covering this event, the girl looked at them crying feeling so humiliated, she was humiliated feeling so weak, not being able to do anything. Unlike the boy, she herself didn't have the courage to face the challenge ahead, she was very terrified of this pressure, now feeling abandoned wondering what she will do if she gets fired. For her it wasn't just a matter of a job, she was raised to become a journalist, being raised by the media company in its facilities, if she couldn't do her job, what other reason would be there for coming back, for living? Why so cruel approach to her, why to pose such questions? What is worth life in the system? It's worth nothing, in societies life of single individuals is often worthless. Demons, Angels and even humans are used as slaves by few well established greedy individuals that in turn are used by their own greed, becoming slaves to it. In this systemized world usefulness meant life, not being of any use meant it was time to die. For why would the System and the Established order care for anyone, that cannot be made profit from, be in debts take loans, buy, spent go to work, earn money and pay that is the role of everyone inside the system, nothing else matters it's a sad reality. Greed and lust ruled everything and took away passion, dreams and even love making it forbidden, not responsible, shameful behaviour, true feelings were made to be disgusted as greed and lust were glorified taking their place.

She was a female journalist, raised in that manner by the almighty Corporation, she didn't have any relatives, any family just her corporation, friends at work in that job, she failed everyone because she started to have feelings and was not comfortable with it, because of the shock, seeing these mighty, she realized how weak she was, how worthless her existence was. The girl wanted to scream in horror but couldn't. Being surrounded by billions of people and demons, billions of ants that served their respective queens, being able to sacrifice their lives just to attain the goals given to them by the corporations. That was the world this girl belonged to. Where the fate of these that worked had no meaning to these for whom they worked, the rich felt that they're almighty god's who cannot be denied anything, corruption flourishes in these conditions, injustice prevails in the worlds ruled by the System. Lies and deceptions were used to bind and oppress souls. Like chains that were merely created for that purpose, and added thorns to tear into their hearts making them bleed. This

created more pain,that slowly gathered as they were un-aware that it happened. That they were consumed from the inside,the things they believed were to nourish them actually slowly and gradually consumed them.

This disastrous force was created by the lower instincts ,fueled by greed and lust.System oppressed everybody in that room,but only that girl,that journalist she alone was starting to understand this,how unpleasant it was,this was good for it marked the beginning of her salvation. These feelings of sorrow and sadness were God's gift to her,to allow her emotions to manifest,to free her from these shackles and allow to escape. She knew it finally,she was to run away try to leave this corporation world leave it all and seek freedom, a world that is better ,true paradise that was hidden deep below ,in the structures were Outcast's live and thrive. To escape to the world she knew nothing about,to a place that at first glance looks like hell,being unfriendly without luxuries,abandoned or dirty,were only criminals and terrorist hide from the reach of law,this was how these that opposed the system and its greed were portrayed by these monsters that thought they rule all,This is how I was viewed because I dared to speak against the wishes of the rich,you either become un-important or a terrorist,that's how this minority pretends to be a majority,in the world that ain't welcoming even for them. This reality that was created because of it,couldn't last forever and yet appeared to be very stable,this too was merely an illusion created in order to enslave living beings as long as it was possible,besides even if it fallen another place like this would only take its place. That's how it was,this was how it would be unless a miracle would happen. But even a miracle doesn't last forever,this ain't places a paradise might be born, one must go into a journey to find it. But every journey,needs courage and has its own dangers,its not safe to travel,that's how it was always. The young journalist knew someone that loved to travel,he was her mentor one of the best journalists of his time,She was thinking about the past years with him. They were the best in her life. She remembered every single time he helped her. "Rest in peace! I will never forget u!" she thought. The girl remembered this special person,he was just an ordinary man,one of these classical professionals, that done this job because of his passion,she remembered the old brown trench coat."I must pick up myself. Im not a cry baby. I loved him but i cant change the fate" she thought,she slowly stood up,cleansing herself up,taking out a golden mirror from the pink arm back,gently correcting her make up ,trying to smile, correcting her lips with her devilishly red lipstick."Now Im ready" she said breathing hardly looking around and observing how other crews handled the job,she saw how the dark haired man was frustrated and she decided to move in order to save her carrier. The people in the room were busy moving from one place to another,as on the stage the main event was being played out,she finally understood, that she needed to go out on that battle field,to fight this media war,for such was her fate,this was the existence she was born into , the girl or more exactly the woman matured in an instant ,but was she up to that challenge ?

Meanwhile another hero of this parade was decorated by the corporate CEO,standing proudly on the stage being welcomed by cheers and flashes,the handsome young dark haired boy dressed in a red space suit with white boots,sparkly eyes,John was a normal teen who join the armie, now once he get out he realize that the world he used to know does not exist anymore. Everyone start to killing each other and war start in space ,John looked at the gathered people and took the medal with somekinda disquise,trying to conceal his feelings. He stood on the golden floor being cheered by the corporation's managers ,that represented the world of greed,the cause of these wars and suffering he came closer to the classicall design microphone and started speaking,but before he could do so a fat chubby ceo standed up and begun his speech „we all have witnessed the hostilities of the outside group” The man has started ,looking at the gathered crowd, and than turning his attention to his comrade ,a young looking woman with golden hair ,dressed in red or pink corporate suit,who only closed her silver eyes ,encouraging the chubby CEO to speak „we all have seen it ! than why are we allowing it !! the outside world endangers our prospects and our future ! these are facts ! reports of sickness and uncontrolled mutations ,gentelman were standing on the brink of our destruction unless we won't erradicate the problem at once ! ,such hives should be exterminated and area incorporated into domestic facilities,its resource should be used for the growth of our corporate empire ! As it was revealed by my rating agency,the outcasts are the cause of our looses,parasiting

on energy and other industries ,they create disturbances in our activities,endangering and causing losses to our commercial reputation. These in turn produce defective results in our morality,enabling defective tendencies to spread.The so called world that borders with our facilities consists of ruined platform projects and criminal facilities,that lost their economic value long ago,therefore it was suggested by the group of commercial analysts to undergo with a revitalisation programme,removing the danger and sustaining growth.Let me make clear, Outcasts are not a nation or even a rebellious fraction as they themselves claim to be,they are a mixture of defective and renegade criminal operations ,that are not controlled by any jurisdiction,we cannot allow this.These tendencies are the causes of wars,than we shall wage a preventive war,we assume that the outcasts will effectively disappear after the conclusion of our military operations in the area,we plan to revitalise the area and to incorporate its structures under our jurisdiction” explained the Chubby CEO getting applause from all fractions and the crowd , of this greedy corporate agglomeration.The corporation planned to take over the platforms to expand,eliminating these that lived there or just happened to travel through them. The Outcasts in this case were everybody who didn't belong to the corporation that was representing the system in our case.But this also categorised these that were exiled,or choosed to leave the corporation,to try and live a better life. Now all these live hoods were targeted because they were poorer than the ones ruling the corporations.

Everything that was different from the main establishment, was now being targeted because of their difference,because of a simple fact of not being categorized, system never wishes to acknowledge things that are too different from their greed based ideology.Pretending the other side does not exist or portraying it in a very negative manner. If it can it tries to exterminate freedom in all forms,because system is in fact a tyranny, a tyranny of rich that abuse the freedoms of the poor,enslaving them and forcing to work without receiving any pay,for these poor are slaves of the rich,there were always two social groups, THE MASTERS + and THE SLAVES - , outcasts were therefore always seen as slaves of these that lived in the system's walls,these that thought of themselves of being masters,but were in fact slaves serving more rich than themselves. That's why the CEO's ,considered it their duty to round up and catch the stray outcasts enslaving them. Using others for their personal gain,these were the kind that lived in the protection of this huge corporations walls.Ignorant individuals seeking attention,this was their true form,they would sell everyone just to become more powerful. To gather all wealth was their only purpose in existence,instead of distributing it among the needy ,they would keep all the resources for themselves until they no longer could be used ,that is the stupidity of these that are manipulated by greed,for when you have too much, this makes you too burdened,if you have too little this too is a burden,but if you have too much yet distribute it among these that don't have anything,than you get rid of the burden and gain able helpers,that will also protect what you have,think of it readers,analyze these words,being like the whores of the system is the stupid and most idiotic thing you can do,don't follow the path of greed it doesn't give any rewards. Did you know that simple grains,mashed up squished create flour ? this in turn mixed with water and baked makes bread. This is how by dividing or even diminishing one may achieve true success,everything that claims to be above is in reality below for the world we see is merely turned upside down.But we know everything from the beginning ,good is the opposite evil ,so everything portrayed as evil by the whores of the system is in fact good remember that !In this story the other enemies were these CEO'S and this too is a portrayal of evil ,that despite appearing to be weaker than Galamouth,might actually be more powerful and sinister,for this evil came from ignorance,from greed.The most dangerous kind of evil powers were gathered here,not in Galamouth's temple in fact ,Galamouth evil could be even considered as mockery,he only made an unrealistic thing happen,that wouldn't obstruct anything,the CEO's however planned to kill and murder all,for the sake of money,who's more evil the corporations leaders ? or Galamouth ? You don't have to answer yet . But can society be more evil than a single individual ? or is the all evil of the world only a work of individuals instead of the faulty ,societary values ?

Chapter 1

„Awakening in the Space Heaven”

Gods are symbolisations of our desires that are given human form by spirit world called Echelion, in order to clearly understand this sentence we must throw away all the rationalisation created by the material world that engulphes us, like water in the ocean, making us fishes that swim beneath it. Not allowing us to see the image above the sea surface. We see the sky or a small fragment of it which we swimming in water cannot understand bound to the world that was covered in the water. This is the image created in our minds, that explains the complexity of the idea. Humans see a fragment of reality to which they're bound to, since that's what's necessary for most of them to exist, in fact showing them more than necessary might be destructive for them, and therefore there's a need for the barrier created by the surface of the water to divide both worlds and for us, it's Echelion the spirit world that connects our minds during sleep. This dimension is connected to us acting as a network combining all living beings into one and adding God to the equation. Of course this dimension connects more than just our mind, but being engulfed in this particular reality we cannot see the planes in which God's can be created. Because God's are symbolisations of our desires that are given human form by the Echelion to produce more desires or offer an explanation to the situation at hand, a form of communication that can be understandable for us and which enables our interaction with a reality different from our own. The diverse nature made the creation of spiritual tools a necessity, despite God being linked to everyone not everyone possessed the right qualities to understand him, another Gods and Goddesses were therefore created ones to represent Goodness others to represent Evil, and the world's ancient bipolarity was created as a means to communicate, testing and refining our spiritual potential and enabling us to grow in both worlds and understand what paths to take. On the true cross roads of life, that is our decisions and ideas everything we create into being, both the material and spiritual, even the spiritual collapse is in fact only another opening on life. We are constantly influenced by forces not many of us understand or even believe exist. I once written in the past that some might be terrified by the truth, by the way the world really looks, but they shouldn't be, do not be frightened by things you cannot understand in this world, cause it's just a matter of time and you will join life on that other plane, yes! There too exists life more real than you would ever believe, Echelion the ancient dimension that links to our dreams is in deed a very real place that existed and helped to shape the known Universe, in the ways not comprehensible to many scientists. Echelion predates even me it was created by God, it was his first creation that helps him to create new things and grants us the same power, Echelion is in fact the first spiritual tool ever created.

Now what if I told you, that you never ever existed in the material world?

What if I told you that your true existence is somewhere else, in Echelion.

Not possible? Are you really sure? You all experienced DEJAVU? if even for once in your life, you must have been stunned or even bewildered by this strange experience of a certain thing rewinding itself like as if it was a movie, or a game world? How many of you saw ghost figures for example? Still thinking it's a lie? well you never know it's too late to tell the truth from fiction, but you know.

The world presents itself in a certain manner and Echelion is a spiritual tool used to control

everything, the birthplace of all creation ,everything could be said and some things in these descriptions must be repeated ,because saying it once wouldn't make you understand. Not a single thing would make sense if said once,sometimes important things need to be repeated constantly in order to be understood. Echelion is a depository of idea's,dreams and illusions ,consciousness and many more elements that reside between life and death,this is its role to block and suck in creative energies that could distort realities ,but can be used to give birth to other realities or even inventions and Idea's all beeing in the universe are linked into a network of minds ,without even knowing we can communicate or catch a glympse of distant worlds that exist far beyound our normal reach, or even influence events there becoming God's of the Afterlife or influence other dimension's civilisations into development. Therefore Humans too can become God's and are whorshipped by civilisations that do not know the truth. Imagine the whole picture,see beyound you're limitations !! Humans and God's are a like , they are created from the same matter and become different and yet the same during their evolutions. To understand this !! To grasp the whole Idea, humanity too in a far advanced future will become God's in fact my tale of Megacivilisation is a vision from a very distant future, one possible path , Earth's and other intel stellars super powers development might take Billion of Eons of years in the future from the year you read or listen to my tale. This story can become the truth as time goes on and billion of eons years pass such is the power of a creative mind enchanced by the visions influenced by God and Echelion, that time itself does not exist ,once a beeing is swallowed by the Abyss of Echelion time travel and multi dimensional ventures are in deed a real possibility. In this far advanced future I openned my eyes having slept for 456 Earths hours, seeing the greyish darkness of an futuristic degraded apartment ,my eye sight became clear after just few minutes and I saw the green mold occupying the sealing for thousand or more years this place was desolated, empty and a bit dirty as I slowly got off from a futuristic bed and looked around. It was very quiet the rectangular room was abandoned full of graffiti's that were painted during different time periods ,there were mostly red ,or multi colored signs that occupied the white gloomy walls of the never finished futuristic complex that was supposed to become a multi trade corporation,but bancrupted because of the intergalactic stock exchange and became abandoned a safe Heaven for us outcasts that are rejected everywhere by the corporative,industrial societies, Outcasts mostly consist of poor workers that lost their jobs when suddenly big universal corporative complexess go bankrupt,but also consist of refugese that escape dominated planets or criminals described as Space Pirates who also recruit from our people it also includes me as this is my society, I too am an Outcast. Some graffiti's however can become inspirational as the same white walls shown an incredible painting that if it was made in the closed rich societies would be considered an piece of art but instead was to be labelled as mere vandalism ,it showed a man walking a yellow desert in the darkness above him a white pigeon was flying symbolising freedom to these that are now opressed an incredible and outstanding way to give hope to these that are said to lost all hope, I was marvelled by this sudden discovery, as I streached my arms and looked at my grey outfit yawning a bit I openned my black arm bag and took out a mini digital device photographing the painting and than by pressing on the screen sending it instantly to billions of my comrades that added me as a friend in one of the Universe's Social network, smiling and answering the comments of different people, demons and angels from all over the universe !! I didn't know all of them but they too were my friends. I talked to them on the social site answering their concerns ,while watching some television and checking the download progress on that one space fight movie I so wanted to see but never had the chance or the guts to visit the corporative Cinema's , that's why I used the „Illegal” way that was much more closer to my status as an disquisting terrorist and criminal. This only shown to me that despite the walls created by the official Authorities, people ,demons and Angels of different races that existed in the universe wished to communicate and develop relationships with each other ,some of them make it even to the real world and our „official” lifes. All the while closelly monitoring the official media's and their propaganda sometimes laughing hardly from their idiocy, not knowing what dangers would be released because of that, I didn't even suspect my calm moments where gonna to pass and Ill be involved in a fight sooner than expected and on a much more grander scale. After few whiles I hid

the device ,needing to move and to get involved I stood on the floor and moved to the exit entering a very dark and rusted corridor ,walking slowly constantly keeping my eyes open for an enemy that could lurk in the shadows. Life of an Outcast isn't an easy one we live in a world ,left to fend for ourselves and fighting is a skill that can become usefull as we venture the darkness of these space heavens ,where no law and no authorities only the law of the strongest is obeyed in the world lived by poor behind the walls created by rich. I moved slowly in this seemingly un-ending rusted corridor,scanning for any trace of aura that could suggest there are others in the area ,and in deed this place wasn't abandoned there were many life forms present some monsters, other human or demonic , rarely you could meet some Guardians or angels this meeting however mostly involves a battle as they're sent here to fight Demons and I was a demon. The Eternal war is an never ending strife between the forces of good and evil however not always the good occupies the right seat, as in many cases the real Good was seen here and not in the world of the rich who call themselves to be just and good,but are only liars ,cowards and the cause of the most evil that falls on this eternal metropolis.

There was a glim golden light that covered the hallways I was walking on ,signyfing that electricity was still delivered atleast some small amount that was made by the bancrupted corporation electrick generators it was very quiet decievilly making this place feel abandoned.The floor was made of glass like material and covered by a molden syntetic propably red carpet. The place was a bit dirty and rusty as it really was abandoned for thousand or even few thousands years. Some noises were heard carried by the echo going throught the walls metalic sounds ,telling me of an battle that took place on floors above me ,the complex shook a bit as the battle must have been massive, yet it wasn't the one that was to be waged by the rich on us, this one was rather a very simple battle between two space pirate groups that waged theire wars. Sometimes by standers could fall a victim to it and thats why most kept away, anyways it wasn't something that interested me as I entered the stair way and made my way down hoping to find the way out ,hopefully get out the same way I entered few houndred or more hours before. We the outcasts use these abandoned place's to hide from the Corporations that would use us as slaves,some are wanted criminals sometimes because they dared to stand up against the rich and once captured might even face execution, some are very powerfull demons or wanderers ,like me that travel from place to place ignoring the official world that denies our existence, or makes us look as evil ,insane monsters. Our lifes were a bother for these that thought of themselves as masters of this highly advanced world.It was quiet as I made my way slowly stepping down on the dark, marble stairs looking at the red or silver walls that seemed to shine in every possible colors that could be imagined by my mind. Looking at the darkness below, I wondered about my path, will I visit worlds covered in eternal darkness ? Or will I see planets that bath in sun light trying to remember the Gardens of Lilith I saw 75 years ago during Galamouth's awakening. I really didn't suspect that event was only a prelude to something even more eventfull an event that will gather all humanity,eternals and God's into an incredible warfare.For now it was awfully quiet ,calm before the storm. I slowly walked slowly observing the surroundings everything could happen just about now, in this precise moment everything was possible. The sound of pure void interrupted only by some metalic sounds ,gived an incredibly chilling atmosphere to this venture deep down into unknown as I went down floor after floor looking at the rectangular circle's the staircasses made and how well attached they were to the metalic or glass like walls all thanks to the ancient enginiers that made this complex, thousand or more probably few thousands years ago its an incredible thing to venture these modern ruins, rediscovering theire secrets. It was both a very dangerous and yet a very secure place where no authority or rule could distorb the natural decay of this place ,envisioned like other structures to become temples of commerce that would contain entire world instead became , a decaying shelters from all opression. Remnants of worlds and mini structures that were to house billions now were used by these , that had no home and were forced into eternal exile. Here they all could feel safe and secure, atleast till the rich and money hungry whores deside to destroy even these sanctuaries, like in ancient scriptures these that had all in deed had all and these that had none had even less , the universal division that not always would be just but couldn't be changed ,because the only way to

have something is to take it away from someone or to be given that from someone that has more, both ways strictly forbidden by these that were to rule over entire galaxies, yet some having been blessed by God could go above these sick rules and restrictions. Giving out freely without losing anything the universe's best known paradox and yet possible because this world was an illusion just like everything else. I was still going down into the darkness hearing all the metallic noises that came from above, wondering as they become louder a bit, will these noises bring the battle to me, I wanted to avoid unnecessary troubles, but wouldn't avoid it if it came towards me, how many times my adventures would begin just like that?

At this moment of time it was quiet as I looked both ways and then returned slowly going down my way to the exit, to the platforms. To the shining metropolis were all stories would begin or end. To state the truth, I was hoping for some time to rest from both my mental and physical injuries, although I was invincible just a year ago before the events of this story I lost a major battle, with fellow outcasts like myself, we waged ourselves into a battle against the system trying to cause a huge rift in its financial and security industries. The Banking platforms Estelita were our targets, the battle plan was organised 30 years before initial operations began, we had a well organised strategy and a leader full of charisma the legendary Rick Korranis, warlord and criminal that controlled entire finances in the Pax-Suitessa galaxy, probably he too was a part of the system, yet most of us saw in this a way to put a thorn in the society we detested and make some money of course, So we gathered into the army, created an organisation and were given our respective roles, I joined relatively late only 5 years ago and perhaps my true potential wasn't recognized, I was assigned into one of the armies led by our generals in the lower ranks, In that „day” we attacked the left wing of the corporational building X-894-23 Jevetta enterprises, along with groups 1987 and 2003 of the C ranked space fleets, which were to gain control of petroleum and electro fuels necessary for our operations, Yet the corporate Armies combined with the Guardians of Megacivilisation, and security fleets and armies from allied solar systems, quickly gained an advantage in the major corporations and came after our groups. Battle lasted for over 1367 hours and caused irreversible damage to our ranks and morals, we were even labelled as rats by the official media's and the humiliating defeat, combined with the loss of some of my most precious comrades from the organisation, left a very deep wound despite my powers I couldn't interfere with the natural flow of life and death, Alpha and Omega strictly forbidden me explaining that it was a planned failure, that our leader was a traitor hired by my enemy the system, to make fun of us and criminalize all the poor. Alpha and Omega told me that it was a stupid mistake for me to join their ranks, that it was naive to think this could be accomplished. I made a terrible mistake in my judgment being deceived by the system into believing this huge well organised army was an army and not just an institutionalized slaughter house, a way of exterminating these that were unnecessary my Goddess Alpha and Omega assured me that it wouldn't make any difference if I wouldn't get involved, even if I warned them in advance knowing the truth only few could be saved, yet I think I could save my friends at least instead of joining a false and stupid ideologically group, I should have taken them away from this nightmare and not just watch them die, this mistake haunted me from that time it was a terrible thing to bear. These thoughts couldn't just go away, despite the fact I wanted them to leave me alone to just forget about it all I was supposed to be above, why then I felt guilty and concerned about the way this world and every other was developing? Evil was hard to defeat and I wondered whether I too am Evil or Good, I guess I was both Evil and Good depending on the time, after all sometimes I could be very selfish. Despite my pact with God giving me powers that were unbelievable, I too had my limitations and knowing my borders wasn't a nice experience, but could be very helpful in understanding myself and regaining my balance it was yet another lesson given by the master of all knowledge God even thought I would sometimes curse him, this was supposed to be received and learned because it was my fate, despite I created it myself it wasn't always under my control, not all consequences might be foreseen. Not all can be planned sometimes we are surprised pleasantly, sometimes the surprise is negative but it's all caused either by our or someone else's actions. Therefore it's good to know your enemy even better than friends, yet what to do if your enemy is the structure? like Society or the System that controls societies? My adventures

are never simple, I'm always bound with issues that go deep into the surface of this world indeed for me to find a solution, complex situations must be understood only that way I can reach and punish these stories' true enemies, but sometimes they tend to manifest by themselves in front of me. I was reaching the lower parts of this dark staircase monitoring an aura that jumped very fastly towards my current position, something was coming close and will manifest soon, What was it? I wondered trying to guess the nature of this aura it had so much energy like a sparkle and a unique encounter. A girl slowly made her way down the steps, as a soft gust of wind came blowing in. She brushed her pink hair aside letting out a sigh, It was another boring day here. She thought to herself, trying to figure out what she could do. Since all her actions have its restraint under watches of many. She didn't have much freedom, shrugging and picking up her pace. Making her way down to the lower part of the dark staircase. Looking further down, she saw a slightly tall figure there. Tilted her head and start to approach the figure. The figure which was me as I looked behind and noticed the girl, smiling a bit and wondering what could I do with her. The gust of wind mixed with the metallic sounds giving a very chilling atmosphere.

„Who goes there?“ I decided to speak hoping that she will reply, in a known language, looking at the girl and trying to figure out from what race or planet she came from. Smiling and walking a bit forward hoping such a beauty won't become my enemy. She slowly walked down upon hearing me talking, as she brought her hood down and said "Dawn here? And you are?" She tried to look at the figure, which was approaching closer to her. Smiling I came very close, looking at her face. The girl had a dark skin with beautiful long pink hair, dressed in some kinda rebel fashion. I tried to look innocently.

„My name is Blaze Master and I'm a wonderer...what are you doing all alone in a place like this?“ I said laughing a bit trying to make myself trustworthy. We stood looking at each other in this darkness surrounded by the colorful futuristic walls.

In the abandoned complex on this staircase, in the middle of my path to the exit. She stared at me from head to toe, feeling that I was a little trustworthy but still with doubts. She nodded, "Oh, A wonderer. Just trying to get out of some crowds." She said with a slightly hint of sadness. As she glances back at me, wondering if she could kill some time here. I on the other hand was surprised by her sadness, wondering why her voice had a sorrowful tone. Standing confidently although being a bit perplexed still not knowing whether she can be trusted or not. „Wanna come with me?“ I finally asked the question, hoping she would join and form an alliance with me. Of course I had other intentions as well my mind was full of pervy thoughts and the girl herself looked rather attractive.

She tilted her head from side to side, thinking of my offer. She chuckled and said, "If you could ever get me out of this boring place then." She smirked a little, and thinking to herself, Things are going to be more fun like this. But still she had to be careful, not knowing what my real intentions were. I too needed to be cautious, but the girl appeared to be safe, she wouldn't cause problems wasn't even powerful enough to hurt me, it would be better to form a team as we walked down towards Megacivilisation, and perhaps this relationship would even last for a while I thought to myself „Ok let's go... there's a battle upwards and they might come here, we wouldn't want to be caught in their mess now would we?“ I smirked a bit and walked forward letting her follow me, we slowly stepped down on the rusty stairs listening to the metallic sounds coming from above. The sounds told us about the intensity of the Space-Pirate's battle that was in progress, it made me think so I turned my head towards her „so tell me are you a pirate as well? I'm a traveler, a Nomad. There's not much I can really say about myself hehe“ I laughed trying to keep the flow of information to minimum, but expecting her to tell me a bit more about herself to gain an advantage. A battle eh, she thought to herself. "But battles are fun" She said, while easily catching up with me. She skipped her way down as she jumped on the metal staircase, making a loud sound. She smiles, "I ain't really a pirate, just a normal girl." I smiled and laughed a bit hearing the loud noise „yea I can see that haha a pirate would know we need to keep quiet ok“ I explained and grabbed gently her hand as we continued walking down in this darkness. I looked at the girl and was ready to believe her explanation, that's true she could be an ordinary girl that got mixed up in all of this because she

wanted to see the forbidden world. People and demons living inside the established orders walls , knew our world only from myths and legends ,considering this place to be full of different kinda romantic adventures ,they leave their safety behind and embark on the journey becoming outcasts, only after reaching this place they realize the horrible truth and while some are glad to know the truth the others resent it wishing to return back to their comfortable lives not realizing the choices they made are irreversible. For these that dare to defy the system will forever become outcasts and shall be portrayed as criminals. Its the truth these that are locked inside the system are unaware ,believing of themselves to be free while being slaves, and thinking they have become slaves in our world while they attained freedom, they simply do not realize how fabricated knowledge in their world is. Therefore I was ready to believe the girl that walked with me slowly ,that she's just an ordinary girl, correction she was an ordinary girl but no longer is ,because now she will become special only will she realize why she's special ?and what being special really means? „So are you a run away dear ?” I asked the girl smirking „You entered a very dangerous place you know” I continued to tease her, enjoying her childish naivete. She puffed her cheeks as she continues to follow me, "I just prefer to be noisy." As she heard the words Run away, she starts to think about her past. She couldn't remember much of what she really was, or where she came from. Only remembering being here, with a blank mind as many people starts coming in and out of her lives and often unfriendly glares from many. "I don't really remember.. Eh dangerous place?" she said as she followed close to me. This response made me curious making me realize there was another interesting mystery and I so loved them! but I had to cut it short hearing a huge loud noise ,grabbing the girl's hand quickly „Lets Run !!” I yelled as the staircase started to shake we quickly rushed down and made our way into the nearest hall while the staircase itself collapsed filling the hall we were in with black and grey smokes ,the cloud entered it as we fallen on the floor with me quickly covering her back while the smoke rushed over me. It was amazing because the whole event took merely few seconds !! Huge metallic and glass staircase collapsed in merely few seconds ,echoing throughout the whole building making me look at the girl and smile „looks like will have to find another way out” I said to the girl while we lied on the red floor hearing the loud tumbling sound of metallic stairs and broken glass that suddenly collapsed. Obviously it was thanks to some explosion, these things happened regularly in such places, that's why it was both hard to get in and get out. I stood and helped the girl to stand up as we both looked at the place we found ourselves in a rusty corridor gently brightened by red light. Despite seeing me lending a hand to help her stand up, she chuckled and got up on her feet by herself while sticking out her tongue at me. As she looked at the mess being created again, "These things are getting to often already." She said while eyeing around the area, as a red light shone. „ain't all battle fields like that ?” I asked looking at her and then added „but there is something to it, something definitely is up in the air...I can feel it” looking at the rusty corridor which now was covered in a greyish debris, I didn't know what was yet to come, I looked at the girl who was still teasing me scratching my head being a bit confused by her cheerful personality. She nodded, "Yeah, the long battles always are." She looked around as the cloudy air came rolling in, and she looked back at the guy who was staring at her. As a sudden chill of air came rushing in, her smile began to fade while letting a soft growl slip out of her mouth. I smirked and looked at the girl „oh you finally noticed ?” I teased her a bit and then got serious „Hey mister its about time you introduced yourself” demanding in a calm manner looking at the figure. She rolled her eyes and chuckled "Of course i did." While glancing back at the figure, and tilted her head. "I wonder if its gonna be fun." she said. „oh sure you did it uhmm tell me why don't I believe you” I continued to tease her and then walked towards the man „well how long we have to wait ?” asking again trying to analyze the mysterious new comer, being pretty much sure a fight would begun now. The figure slowly walked closer to me and as he ruffled his messy brown hair and glances me from head to toe he then started to move closer, "Hey do you know something?" He said while pulling his collar, " I am actually gay" He stated. Suddenly I moved back realizing the danger I found myself in at the moment „OH FUCK !!! Listen Dawn we gotta run , RUN FAST !!!” I grabbed her hand quickly rushed into the distance running in the mysterious corridor full of different complex paths ,hoping we could lose this homo pervert

somewhere in this mysterious maze of different rusted corridors. while Dawn merely blinked as she ran off with me, looking back and waving to the homo, "It was nice to meet you, I love people like you tooo." Dawn shouted while running off with me. This place was full of doors and different entries. It was supposed to be an office quarters for the luxury service workers and office people, there were even computer devices installed and standing on the futuristic glass desks waiting to be finally used, big servers rusted for over millenia's a true treasure house for us as I smiled once we entered one of these offices and closed the glass doors, I quickly walked over to the office desk and looked into the desks finding some mini computer devices which I hid in my bag, giving a few of them to Dawn. I secured her loyalty.

„we hit the jackpot Dawn, with these we can make money on the black market dear, scatter the office for everything you can find” I explained myself walking over the huge safe trying to break its code. She saluted to me and chuckled, "Okay~ Captain." She then went off with the mini devices and began to place it around anything she saw. While I sit down near the green rusty safe and took out another portable computer, plugging it with a grey cable into the numeric keyboard on the safe and waiting a while while the program send some signals into the safe's security systems. After putting away all the mini devices, She then walk towards me while seeing me doing my job. She bend down near the safe and took out a device as a small but strong sparkle came from the tip of it. She smile and said, "Save the trouble, wanna zap it instead?" making me laugh as she obviously didn't know the infrastructure „No if you do that...all the interface will go hi wire and I want to retrieve the lock as well, do you know how much you can get for these kinda locks? that's a huge amount of points!! I bet the safe stores just you're average gold for some financial transactions, why waste the prize for something trivial as Gold? well its worth much only in either ancient or border worlds but its not easy to get there hehe” I answered laughing waiting for my device to do its stuff. Looking around and getting a glimpse of the office that wasn't ever used, currently the structure was dirty full of rust and dirt but you could see some remnants of its once sterile cleanliness in the way all the office gadgets were placed, a structural order, not even once used. Not a single transaction was calculated by this office's advanced software, its unbelievable that all this hard work went to waste, but it was a good hunt for us who live as scavengers collecting items that were never used, trading them to those that willed to get them, but didn't want to go to the System's dealers. The Office room was huge with about 67 or 45 desks with huge holographic libraries I looked at Dawn and smiled while making myself clear „Look around there's many Items you can use for yourself or sell ...go get as many as you can, you won't get another chance like that, get on a move!!!” I ordered. She heeded my explanation and just simply nodded her head, as she walk around the deserted office, she wander around aimlessly and look around for any stuff that caught her attention. She sighed, as she look into her bag. A bag that was full of equipments and money, she shrugged and look around once again. My device finally beeped and I turned the safe's handle opening and revealing gold bars inside with some black binary equipment, taking it all from the inside and putting it into my bag, analysing the four black mini computer devices that resembled a notepad having a screen interface, I turn one of them to analyze its compability and was overjoyed at the processing speed. „uranium powered commercial tablets with refonia's CPU's, our luck amazes me, Dawn what you got?” I looked at the girl as she was scavenging for some useful utilities. The office was poorly lightened up, the earlier described rust made an awkward combination with green syntetic floor, some units were still working making a buzzing sound. The atmosphere of this place was unique, a chilly combination, the smell of death filled the area. I passed some futuristic desks observing their designs, they were white with nano technology built in, these desks themselves were actually computers units. Impressive technology made by the servants of the system for the servants of the system.

Definitely not something that was to be analyzed by a mere Outcast such myself, the desks were bordered by a golden light, which in fact was its transmitter if the device would work properly it could transmit over gigadoits of information in mere seconds all over the galaxy. The air was dusty a bit as I walked towards a huge window from which the Megacivilisation could be seen, marvelled by its size, all districts looked like tiny dots, white lights, yellow, red, orange all the colors of the

rainbow could be found there. We were so above this eternal utopia that we couldn't even see a single human instead lights ,created by buildings or spaceships ,looking as tiny golden bugs creating a colony. Its suprising how humans and bugs are a like ,both create colonies in which they dwell and if the colony dies not a single one of them might survive. The eternal darkness that engulfed both the inside's of the building in which we were as well as the outside, the eternal remainder of how far we got in our development, that there's no longer any limits for the societies to grow and trive. Even for me the one that supposedly hates all societies this thought gived some mixed feelings, was it good or bad ? that the society developed the way it did ? Was the question that occupied my mind for the most of the time. I turned my attention to my comrade slowly making my way to her, to see what she got. She then held up a couple of coupter chips and all, "And the main one is this!" She said as she held up her hand; a mini robot rat. It begin to move on her hand, as she chuckle. "I made this my own, theres alot of gadgets here." she added.

Looking at her and smiling, I actually wondered what she wanted to do with them. Actually it was just my curiosity,because the girl amazed me,she was always cheerfull and it was quiet ,the entire building was terribly quiet,while only moments later one might hear these metalic sounds. „It got awfully quiet,didn't it ? I wonder whats gonna happen next” I said looking at her gadgets and smiling „nice tropheys” I added teasing her a bit ,looking at the sealing I noticed a blue energy wave that was visible on it, the energy wave was passing it like a blue lighting. It was a very interesting and odd phenomena „wonder what that was?” I asked Dawn showing her the blue lighting , that dissappeared after few seconds.

She puff her cheeks, and show the mini rat closer to me. "So it can bite you~ Besides this chips has alot of unusal metal in it." She said while glazing out upon the blue lightning, "Seems strong.." ...” Unusually strong ,like a magical current weird, why use magic in a commercial complex?” I added ignoring the rat and looking at the rainbow colored walls, seeing how the colors on the walls created a different mosaic responding to different colofull energies that emaneted from both the desks and floors. „this building is build from a very peculiar structure, did you notice that the walls colors change all the time?” I asked again looking at the girl very carefully.She tilt her head and look at me, "Its does sometimes? Depending on how much the energy are." She said while feeling proud. As the rat nibble around her hand and making a semi loud squeal sound. "See even ratty feels that I am smart." She said while patting his back. Making me smile as I continued the conversation „Is that a summoner, or just a normal pet?” asking about the animal,that I didn't notice before.The rat appeared only recently making it our newest team member. While I wonder about Dawn's magical abilities,ussually pirates or people living in industrial complexess are well versed in technology but its rare for them to know advanced magicall arts. Unless someone well versed in them tought it to them.Slow tumbling sounds were heared in the structure, the walls were warm ,making sounds comperable to the flow of boiled waters,perhaps it was this structure's heating systems. Perhaps we dealt with an advanced magicall inginiery.She smiles and said, "It might be but then it might not, So I don't know~" chuckles while a grin creeps on her face.Suddenly the doors are broken makin the glass fall on the floor,as we notice four tall dark armored figures walking into the office throught the glass doors ,while me,the rat and finally Dawn hide under one of the desks.The dark knight walks slowly,theire dark red eyes gazed from beneath their hoods.Theire dark armors were made from some magical metal,crafted to resemble steorytypical human knights armors. They took out their swords and started to destroy the desks,breaking them into pieces. „cleaning squad ?” I asked whispering as we looked at the desks beeing broken with incredible streanght. The rat quickly crawl back into Dawn's jacket due to the loud sound, as she look out, "A rought squad indeed." she said. „get ready Dawn, we must take them down” I confirmed and jumping from under the desk ,tried to attack the one that was closest to me ,who instantly turned towards us blocking my punch with his sword ,making it light itself all green and suddenly a flash thrown me away followed by explosions,that came from under the floor ,making me hit the wall ,as I quickly pushed my hands forward creating a whirlpool out of air,that attacked two knights pushing them down. The other two quickly jumped to me as I barelly in time crawled out of the hole created by me hitting the wall. The colorfull wall was cutted in half and shattered into pieces, as their swords glowed red.She

quickly gets up, in front of me and kicks the two knight away while jumping on one of their shoulder and grabbing hold of its head and ripping it. Stealing away its sword and smashes it into the knight eyes slowly stops glowing so does the sword. while I used this opportunity and crushing another knight's dark armor inserted my hand inside it, gathering my energy, releasing it inside making the knight explode, shattering the knight into pieces. The remaining two jumped far away and stabbed their swords into the floor making it purple as suddenly we felt our energy was being drained. The draining begun to be intense making me quickly jump towards the two knights and slash them with my energy sword I created, breaking them in half and ensuring the drain had stop I looked at Dawn smiling. „its over dear, come out” I walked over towards her and smiled.

She tilt her head as she starts to approach me, while touching her jacket and tickling her rat. „you really like this little one” I expressed smiling seeing how the girl happily played with her pet „don't let your guard thought, the summoner is still here hiding somewhere” I warned Dawn while my self scouting the area, for any trace's of enemy's aura. „who ever behind this is doing a good job” I expressed yet again looking at the devastated office, kneeling near some knight's remains taking into my possession a golden plate with the eye of the beholder erected into it. „someone has a thought out knowledge of the things in this world” I expressed yet again looking at the golden shiny plate, reading the ancient symbols that constituted the spell that was used to construct these knights, they weren't normal summoners, but dimensional spirits given a holy armor a feat of magic only a very skilled dark force user could use. Suddenly a lighting flashed brighting up the office as a girl appeared in front of the window and a dark knight that attacks the girl. She fell to the ground unconscious while me and Dawn tried to kill the knight. When she awoke violently took the knife and kill the knight and then licked the blood from her wounds. I walked towards the new girl looking at her smirking „ok now who the hell are you ?” I asked while trying to make my self look cold and very powerfull, not knowing whether the new comer was our enemy or a new ally. Dawn tilted her head as she glance at the new girl and back to me than simply shrugged her shoulders, "Are you alright?" she asked the girl. I walked to her as well while pushing Dawn out of the way, looking back at her and giving her a sign to fall back „be carefull Dawn, this girl was the one that summoned these knights, but here's a mystery why did the knights attack her?” I wondered and later understood the new girl didn't control her powers yet. „Oh, my head” said the girl as she saw the corpses of the Knights. Then she threw the knife down and frightened away. „M-m-my name is Misa and I losted while looking for land of demon souls, then I saw that the knights attack you and I can help you.” she answered as Dawn puffed her cheeks, "Or maybe she just drop by?" She said, while looking the girl again. Making me laught while kneeling down to this new girl and healing her wounds, closely observing her body I was a bit astonished at my findings and looked back at Dawn „Ey Dawn can I look at your body” I smiled. „Misa did you meet anyone in the land of demons souls ?” I asked Misa while walking closer to Dawn and looking at her body finding the same symbols on the bodies of both girls. „well there's surely a mystery to be unraveled here” I proclaimed sitting on the floors looking at the two girls curiously. Dawn tickled the rat while looking at me, "See I told you so." And quickly turning to Misa as she raise my hand towards her, "Nice to meet ya." she said while smiling. Misa arose from the floor, took the knife again, smiled and said "and to me is nice to meet you" I looked at both sighting „But I was right too, the girls body was forced to summon the knights while she herself was in somekinda trance...did you know you have dark alchemy symbols on your bodies ? you were experimented on, can you recall how did you find yourself here ? both of you ?” I looked at the girls curious about the answers she could give me, while it was awfully quiet the redish smoke was gone now and everything looked very calm. Meanwhile Misa again noticed that a bloodthirsty knight approached, without saying a word she grabbed the knife and cut the knight in two parts. „calm yourselfs and they will stop appearing” I smiled to Misa as the knight slowly evaporated to dust „they're here to protect you Misa ...you're the one creating them” I explained looking at the girl with amusement as she fought off her creations. Dawn glance at us as she settle down on desk, "I am just a normal girl~" She said while sighing. „you might have been a normal girl, but you both were experimented on by powerfull alchemists, look around. This sky scraper is in reality a magical complex structure that was to

emulate a normal industry complex ,someone created this building for a reason and made it abandoned to have it appear as a ruin in which outcasts dwell...now my question is why ? What's going on ? and the only thing I know is that you two somehow hold in yourselves the keys to understanding this mystery" I explained looking at Dawn and then back at Misa. When Misa looked at me and Dawn her vampire's eyes were blood red ,feeling that she hadn't hardly any forces, Misa looked at the ghostly silver moon and she said "i want blood". And then evaporated and went near a haunted castle. Then she entered the palace and the faltering ghost until she saw a vampire who put it about to come to her. She followed him finally could not resist and started to drink blood from him. then appeared the other vampires and attacked Misa. She screamed and tried to kill them, but the vampires were too much however she took a strong knife and killed them in the most cruel way .Then she laughed. We looked curiously as Misa disappeared and I quickly grabbed Dawn's hands „Dawn we need to get out now !! Someone's called her back which means they know we're here and not part of whatever they're doing!!!" I explained quickly to Dawn. As she tugged my hand, "But what about Misa? We got to help her right?" she said quickly. I sighted and looked at her a bit sadly , I was worried about Misa as well but we were also aware of the danger her unstable state caused „I cannot trace her existence anywhere its as if she evaporated or entered back to Echelion, we cannot follow her it would be too dangerous, and if she appears she might be brainwashed" I explained. Dawn pouted, "But she is still apart of us, besides it would be ok." She sniffed the air a little, "She seems near though, lets go." Meanwhile the floor was being encrypted with dangerous explosive spells while hieroglyphic images were visible appearing even in the office we were standing, the magical bombs were armed. „you know where she is ?" I asked her surprised as the situation started to get serious. Hoping that this situation would resolve quickly, our time was running away. On the floors in the corridors outside the office green pentagrams and symbols appeared. The spells interface warned about an impending explosion giving us only 10 minutes of time, the action should be imminent, if there was any action possible. The symbols that appeared in different colors were also visible in the office some of them were : The Eye of Beholder, Dancing tribal man with spheres, Three circles the symbols of olympiade, and symbolisations of drugs and medicine. A probable message from God himself who used this spell's interface to communicate with us ,perhaps give a warning and a thought that hallowed my head as if Alpha were speaking to me. In fact it was her voice which said this inside my head „you're not aware of what your hands can create" I looked at my hands quickly and closed my eyes offering a prayer to God. Intensively concentrating on things that my hands could create, moving them forward golden springs came out of them, went right into the next dimension and entangling Misa ,quickly pulling them back we saw a dark hole opening and Misa fall out of it. „are you all right ?" I asked her. Dawn nodded her head as she threw some light blue powder over the spell, "This ought to stop it awhile." She said while pulling me out of her way. The spells indeed stopped and everything returned to normal for a while, I knelt down towards Misa and took her into my arms ,holding her firmly I waked out the office. „incredible you stopped the spells, lets move fast" We rushed out of the corridors and into the maze hoping to escape. Dawn then followed me, as we quickly entered the maze. "I will lead you." Dawn said as she took the lead and quickly made her way out of the place. Making me run behind her while holding Misa who started to awake „you know this Maze ?" I asked a bit surprised while loud noises were heard behind us and the floor shook, the bombs went off according to plan on the nearby corridors and we barely avoided the flames ourselves, as the maze started to explode ,the walls crumbled making us go right through them as dark myst filled everything. "Maybe, Maybe not." Dawn just simply sighed as she pulled us quickly out managing to get out of this maze while a gust of wind came while the surrounding turned dusty. The wind itself was very black and made an awful roar, pushing all of us into the walls as I while holding Misa followed Dawn slowly, energy waves were released forcing us to duck as the blue waves roamed the area. Misa without saying anything led us through the maze towards safety and soon we got out safely ,with combined efforts of Dawn and Misa we found ourselves entering another staircase and ducking down, as the floor finally exploded enabling us to see the bloody orange flames, and feel the unbearable heat I looked at Dawn smiling exhausted „we barely made it" I admitted petting

Dawn on her head. „lets go” I commandered walking down the silver stairs looking into the darkness and the golden walls that surrounded us. This made me wonder yet again about the place we were in, It was very dark with only stairs and walls shining while we walked awfully slowly carefully observing the enviroment. The sounds of the explosion overwhelmed everything and as we rushed we also allowed ourselves to witness this spectacle created by an enourmous pressure combined with massive acceleration of heat and literal decomposture of the metals used to build the floor ,making the floor collapse as we witnessed the schockwave that went throught the entire building spreading the heat which was sucked in by the walls preventing the collapse of this structure. The metallic glass structure literary decomposed to atoms ,in a way that was simply to hard to describe, nothing like the things anyone of you ever saw.

Meanwhile above our current location in the depths of this mysterious sky scraper something evil was prepared. A tiny figure similiar to a three year old child dressed in dark monk like cloth was standing in front of medicore cauldron, which produced somekinda blue smoke. Enchanting spells he was observed by two priest like figures, two old man dressed in both dark and white priest like clothing holding silver canes. With huge white beards that almost touched the grey floor. The man dressed in dark regal cloths slowly pointed his silver cane forward making the area full itself with blue smoke creating incredible whirlpools, which started to come into the silver hals thrusting and encircling them as the demon that looked like a three year old child danced performing a very serious and powerfull dark spell, creating lightings and tiny self sustained explosions. Suddenly the structure exploded as collums started appearing. Growing out of the silverly grey floor, breaking it destroying the golden wals as the White dressed old man waving his silver cane created a silver barrier protecting the three of them, a huge explosion leveled the floor that was located at the top of this sky scraper making the dark whirlpools clean the debry in few seconds creating place for an ancient temple that was beeing placed, Galamouth's temple that was located in echelion was beeing brought by them into the sky scraper fusing itself with it as red lightings modeled the reality, Galamouth was seen observing his fathfull survens from above on his golden throne. Both the white dressed man and the dark dressed man had golden ornaments on their cloths these were the proof of their alliagiance to the Dark Lord and his evil ambition they slowly walked to the stairs and kneeled down giving his respect to their master who with his faitfhull shadow birds at the head of his throne observed them from above. Dressed in terryfingly dark cloths with golden serpent like ornaments he moved his hands forward and arose from his seat „Let the celebrities of live and Death begun !! My faitfhull survents ,we begin our march towards renewall of this world. Darkness and deception created by the lust has reached its culmination ! requiring our assistance in rectyfyng the sins of these that lived before us !! Human foly has created a place without any proportions, desires of many is mocked by these that deared to take God's place !!!it is time to remind them that no one can escape the terrible powers of death....we shall open the path to self exploration!! destroying the forms that rotted over eons of years ,this is the time !! to take stand against everything that was created by decay. Human and eternal worms must be extinguished in order to prepaire room for the new to riseLET THE DANCE OF THE ETERNALS FINALLY BEGUN !!!” he proclaimed sitting on his golden throne as above him billions of eyes opened in the dark cealing, these eyes looking as if they were watching from another dimension opened to document the tragedy that was to begun. The two man stood up and the white dressed man walked two steps forward bowing down in respect „my master, the rising star of darkness we are ready to perform all the duties requested by you're desire ,this holly structure created for you by our magic will become the instrument of you're divine will...my master we are waiting for you're blessings take charge in shaping this new world” The white dressed man kneeled down on the golden steps „you did a great honor constructing this special instrument of my will, White Master ...Dark Master , Enblemo I give you my blessings to carry out this divine task...Go forward my faithfull man ,Go Forward !! carrying the task that is required by the Universe !! let no one stop you ,let no one become a diversion in these tasks !!only a swift conclusion will make the world tremble !! This is the time my survents move forward with no delay !!” yelled Galamouth giving out his ceremonial blessings to his fathfull survents. Who were observing him standing below the golden stairs as he

stood near his throne while small green hieroglyphs appeared at his feet. Shining very brightly as Galamouth smirked being intoxicated with his mad ambitions, while White Master was feeling dignified because all Galamouth's creations thought of themselves as superior to the beings that roamed the world before them, thinking of themselves as new kings of the world they gratefully followed every command given to them by the Dark Lord. Not knowing Galamouth had no intention of sharing his authority with anyone. Small fountains of green energy were released from the stairs soaring to the ceiling lighting up brightly the area. Creating a spiral and joining together creating a DNA sequence, some joining parts became dark on their eyes making Galamouth smile. „The foundations had been corrupted...the world's established boundaries cannot oppose our will, Universe is whole with body and mind, breaking it up apart is our only option, in order to establish a new structure or to abandon all forms partial shifts in clarity are not enough ... observe the decay of this world our poison is in effect, the sickness creates effects in bodies of all living things this sickness, Greed and Envy, Lust and mistrust will bring up the seeds to fulfill the collapse ...the Downfall is unavoidable and deserved.... for such world really deserves to disappear...there should be no mourning and no cries for the world that gives birth only to pain and suffering, which uses lies to deceive the weak ...This world that dared to take away my hearth !! will burn in ashes in front of my divine power !!! That is the will of the Dark God Galamouth !!” explained his happiness Galamouth looking closely at his servants, who did not dare to interrupt his holy proclamation of hate and anguish the reasons for this trial wouldn't be discovered so easily however. Galamouth had a very dark secret in his cold hearth and it was this secret that created that unbearable pain. Agony led him to lose his mental stability and the knowledge he discovered created a sentiment that led him to go fully insane. While his actions appeared logical to him, in reality they were delusions created by his delusional state...would anyone guess that it was him who needed to be saved from himself just as anyone else? The question is how to save someone that succumbed in true madness? What if madness is just another state of reality for chaos coexists with order, that's how it was and that's how it will be. Even Galamouth with all his hate couldn't change this, the only one thing he was able to create was merely a spectacular event and a great trial for myself, all of us who survived could only become stronger after that...poor Galamouth for its one of these truths he had no idea of. The darkness filled the place as the Young boy known as Dietrich opened huge golden doors that were the entrance to Galamouth's sanctuary. Who decided to test his puppet in a small show game.

"tsk. Typical." sneered a haunting voice from behind the smoke. no shadow or silhouette. but Galamouth knew of him, and the voice of Galamouth. One of the men in suits, fired a shot, without orders from Galamouth. The man taking pride in his unspoken loyalty as he took aim towards the source and apparent direction of the voice.

Clank!!!!

phiseew!!!

The man's massive body fell forward. His face strewn with blood. the bullet had backfired, ripping through his neck.

" And I thought the doorman was intimidating." the voice chuckled.

By now the smoke had cleared and out from the shadows, a beaming face with golden hair laced on top of it peered out as if nodding to a neighbour on a normal Sunday morning. he let himself out of the concealing shadows and looked, if not casual then definitely innocent! His shadows massive as if of an athlete. His chin with a stubble growing. but those eyes were definitely harbouring huge traces of the very divine phenomena: innocence. such was the, the choice of Galamouth. And he took pride in what he thought he had spared a second longer thinking of, his choice, not the person. The young man was someone when you looked at you could feel you could trust. he wasn't a hypocrite, oh no. In fact he had successfully weighed his ratio more towards good deeds so that he may still more points in what the world defined as a 'good person'. He seemed the kind that would

close into himself in an embryo when depressed and make the other person blame him or herself for her apparent wrongdoings. In their eyes this person could do no wrong.

"What up, Yoda." he lingered his gaze towards the monk like midget. "New York working out for you?" He was greeted by a grunt from the small creature. The young man took this as something of concern and said as he moved lithely towards the tall glass that acted as the walls of the room, "hmm I see. Hollywood kicked you out." already bored by his own wit, he moved on. He bent down his face hovering over the dead man's body. Fresh blood still gushed out.

The blonde's mouth as if drawn dazzily toward the action, slacked open and his fingertips swam in the pool of blood. and just when the stained hand drew apart.....

"Dietrich!" boomed Galamouth from beyond the golden staircase.

Dietrich's hand stopped in mid distance, his eyes wide and bloodshot. As Galamouth's voice silenced the atmosphere, even the breaths of mortals in the room, it was broken by drops of blood, dripping to the floor, that were suspended in Dietrich's fingers. Dietrich didn't avert. he was busy. Busy looking longingly at something beyond his hand, something creeping like weeds in his head and claiming his thoughts for their own vineyard.

"Are you aware that you are the only being I have to bother instructing properly?"

"It sounds like a genuine compliment," He hadn't moved an inch

"you aren't that deserving"

"so now the devil's into all that too"

"you know better than to argue with me"

"yes I do.."

"...and yet you dare defy.."

"your excellency. I was created to live and warped to serve, since I can't warp back I have no other option."

Dietrich moved. and in one swift move was bowing. his hand on his chest "...master." A scary glint in his eyes.

Galamouth looking at him enjoying his superiority over the boy, smiling and looking towards his loyal subordinates. „very well” Galamouth started talking yet again preparing himself to make one of his speeches. „I might forgive your sins boy, as long as you continue to loyally follow my orders, speak now and make it known to us...how did the mission in both New York and Hollywood go, was their lust and greed comparable to what I had detailed to you earlier? Did they create the laws, which visions I entrusted you with? SOPA, PIPA, ACTA, TPP and much more simple text that will become an instrument of oppression used by my divine will, the stupidity and arrogance of the rich was always a useful way to put entire universes into flames of war” Galamouth expressed as an incredible grin placed itself in his face, making his madness clearly visible. „Wonderful, this is incredible how much disaster can be caused by few fools that consider themselves to be Gods, this is universal, it was like that in ancient, and is like that in our time the future shall be shaped by these disasters as well, ignorance of the rich and mighty never changes...and although they have been warned of that by the symbol of the Anti-Christ, they're greatest enemy all should fear!! When Man rulers will come to consider themselves to be more powerful than God, this is when they're rule ends and their world burns in flames caused by their arrogance, for none can forgive this sin. Even God cannot use his powers to save humanity from such idiocy, and because there is no more any reasons, nor any higher authority than man to turn to in all scenarios a great war erupts and the world dies. My loyal subordinates, why do you think in all civilisation, culture and religion was so important? Why even dictators and Dark Lords use God to justify their motives?

Have you ever wondered what will happen, once the followers of a religion, understand the truth? what will happen to Nations, planets entire galaxies!!! What will happen once the bounds that are to bind one to another are proven to be superficial and shallow, once the poor understand this horrible truth that the mighty rich see them as merely tools, animals or slaves and that the laws and every customs ever made!!!! exist only to deceive these that work into supporting these that are born into luxurious lively hoods and their carriers, The question I want to ask is a ridiculous for

someone that become the Devil, but what do the rich offer to the poor for all their effort?...yes exactly stick without a carrot only instigates rebellion and is this force of rebellion, from both sides the rich protecting their established order, and the poor that have become worthless trash in it, it is this rebellion that will fuel my master plan....speak Dietrich about the events in Hollywood and New York” Galamouth expressed and looked at the boy who along with others listened to him very closely, everybody understood this truth very well in fact, Galamouth's view wasn't wrong. Dietrich walked forward standing turned his gaze upon his master and as he equally talked to him conveying his message as Galamouth listened to him very closely. "Forgive my sins?" Dietrich smirked, a hint of sarcasm in his words. "uhh, no thanks" he chuckled bravely. He had this internal desire to provoke Galamouth, always. No matter how hard he tried he couldn't let go of that feeling. That superior sense of noticing things and not sucking up to 'Gods' even if his life was on the line. It was one of those feelings that made him grin, spin on his heels, give a thumbs up and scream in their faces "Hell yeah!"

Dietrich playfully clapped a hand over his mouth. "Hollywood's been amazing." he gave a dewy smile "....and I am planning on moving to New York myself "

Gah! His master was a fool. He kept on going for the big fish and Dietrich personally thought was very unstrategic. Galamouth looked at him losing his patience desiring him to tell him what he needed to know „Speak Dietrich we are awaiting your words !!!” Yelled Galamouth demanding the boy to tell him what he did while on earth. Dietrich felt the pressure of a thousand weights over his shoulders. His legs gave way. He fell head first into the ground. He tried to get up, vibrating from the force his teeth clenching. He could only raise his head a few inches. „Speak now boy or I'll squish your body !!!” Galamouth spoken as his eyes became devilishly red, making him grin his teeth and scream in full madness laughing and sitting on his golden throne while petting his shadow birds that squeaked terribly. White Master turned his attention toward Dietrich and walked over the boy „Dietrich !!our master is weak from continued distortion of plane, please tell him what he wishes to hear !! before we lose our patience !!” White Master shouted angrily standing in defence of his beloved Dark Lord. Dietrich knew that unlike the Dark Lord White Master was strong willed and wielded a terrible force, if it wasn't for Galamouth's own orders. White Master would get rid of this inferior creature a long time ago, but Galamouth himself requested that all his servants be treated equally, and since he really respected him he wouldn't touch the boy in the presence of the Dark God. A girl with long black hair startled to see them, walked into the corridor slowly walking over to the cauldron where Enblemo was cooking his magic. Gazing at what Enblemo's cooking, she peeped into the cauldron to see, the yellow fluid change color into orange being amazed at how the monk like baby like grotesque creature, with a single wave of its hand made it change. Staring more closely. suddenly a mouse squeaked silently. The girl screamed when she felt something crawl on her feet. Enblemo looked at her annoyed a bit and held her arm „don't get excited over a simple rodent, did you bring the things I asked Reese?” Enblemo looked at her, letting go. Grimacing, "m-my apology." she lifts up a small bag with somewhat grains inside of it, Enblemo took the bag analysing it methodically checking the size of the grains after untying the bag. „Is this the best quality you could get?...un-believable how am I suppose to work my advanced magic with such low grade of Restoria ?” he looked angrily and annoyed at Reese grabbing her again and looking into her eyes, while scolding”look at me when I'm talking to you, you inferior being and listen closely our master deserves only the best grade for his plan, if you pull this again I personally will pummelize you ..did you get that ? Now go back and don't interfere with the maestro at work !” he ended angrily pushing the girl aside „be quiet and don't say a word, I'll deal with you later !!” He added returning to his performance above the cauldron, creating more colorful smoke. Reese looked around to see the mouse. she was a bit worried. That she might have hurt that mouse. she might have stepped at that mouse horribly. The mouse walked on the floor safely thought, it was a white mouse with blue eyes. Reese stayed a little bit far from the cauldron. far from that Enblemo, she sat outside then saw the mouse. "hey!" she shouted. The mouse sniffs around then it looked at the girl. Dark Master who was standing near was drawn to this unusual commotion, the old man walked over interested in what the girl was doing, although he was part of the

elite in Galamouth's fraction the old man that weared dark clothings, looking like a dark necromantic priest with white beard coming down to the floor, had a very soft hearth „is this you're pet ?” he asked quietly Reese, hoping his twin brother White Master won't hear him, fearing beeing scolded he walked over to them, petting Reese very gently on the head. The girl shook her head as a sign of NO for the old man's question. Then glances at the mouse, takes it to her hand then she rubs the mouse's fur gently.

„oh don't fear me child, Im not like the others come closer little one” Dark Master suggested nearing the girl, he looked at the girl very closely, gently petting her head. Dark Master felt unbelievable pain watching at the girl, he knew why she was here and what she was to his master. Dark Master like Dietrich didn't like his masters plan, but like White Master he wouldn't dare question Galamouth. He was created together with his twin brother from Galamouth's blood, he was his Bloodchild and as such he had to obey his creator, gretefull for giving him his life. Dark Master sighted heavily looking sadly at the child „This is just terrible, that you the young ones are given such task, my poor little child oh how I wish it wouldn't have to come to this, but fate cannot be changed taken out of this misery atleast you were given a new home, no merelly shelter while beeing experimented on. Our master's ambition must be fulfilled, this is the only reason we exist, I cannot defy my masters orders..no I cannot” Dark Master concluded talking to the girl trying to explain his situation, smiling very sadly as he walked closer to her „but you don't need to fear me” Dark Master added. Reese smiled at the old man. " i'm not scared" the girl looks at him innocently, listening to him with respect. she pats the mouse's head gently. Meanwhile a bit annoyed by his masters behaviour Enblemo was still performing his crafts at the cauldron making his fluids boil, turn into red creating a powerfull energy beam, which exploding covering the cauldron in orange flames making Enblemo step back, as the pink beam surfaced to the ceiling fulling the walls, beeing distributed on the entire structure creating a harmless pink schockwave that covered the entire hall. A powerfull explosion engulphed the entire scene not harming anyone inside. Despite the fact the pink flames bursted from all sides encircling them creating a whirlpool of un-imaginable energy, that bursted out of every corner. Which itself were controled by both Masters who quickly assumed their posts, and with their hands gived new life to this force. On the dark floor symbols appeared connecting everyone present to, the very structure itself, establishing another powerfull interfece. The Ancient program was performing its initiation as the howling sound indicated a massive ammount of water beeing pumped into the walls fuiling the structure's magic. Lord of Darkness Galamouth arisen from his throne and slowly went down in the middle of the circle created by the gathered, indicating all that happened was still beeing a part of his evil desire.

„let us commence with the ceremony, dance the flames of eternity, awaken stars that watch above the midnight sky, let us use you're power to deliver salvation, blood of death and blood of alive united in the name of the presence that watchess this spectacle, Let darkness arise from its slumber, go forth destruction ! The Eternal Grin reaper we call on you to give us you're power. The cosmic interface of reality and Illusion, the gathered emotions of all living beeings. The powers of universe, nature and cosmic fluixess. The great Eye in the skie's that watchess over all of its creation, grant us our desire and free us from you're slavery. Grant us tools to achieve full independence, to bring end to this strife we call our life, dissipate all illusion from this world, bring this madness to an end !!” Proclaimed Galamouth speaking his mad prayer as yellow flames engulphed him, making him bright as if he was a sacrificial candle placed on a grave of the universe. A howling sound indicated an un-usual event as everything created so far, exploded into dust. The Hall way was yet again covered in massive explotions coming from all possible places, making the grey smoke cover everything in its path, as all the gathered standed in the center of this event beeing bound together by red strings that glown creating a net of connection, revealing their feelings towards each other, the feelings which Galamouth planned to use to fuel his mad plan. Reese was puzzled. The sound of explosion frightened her. She was docking while her eyes were closed and her hands were covering her ears. Dark Master hugged her gently covering as massive air masses thrust between them and Galamouth's mad laught was heard everywhere „its all right

dear..its all necessary for our master's grand plan” Dark Master explained this to the girl,trying to justify the madness that clouded Galamouth's mind. Not realising the destructive path it would take them.

"what the hell's happening? Now that i'm thinking about it. i don't know anything. Who exactly am i? i can't remember anything that happened from the past".Reese spoke in her thoughts. The ground shoke a bit as massive explotions were heared and seen,the orange flames again engulfed everything Galamouth looked at the scene with clear madness inside him laughing and enjoying the destructive spectacle,which took place in front of his eyes,moving his hand infront of himself pushing the winds away with his aura energy screaming as he did it.The winds which were the effects of this terrible dark magic howled terribly,surrounding all gathered as the dark lord created something using that un-bearable power. Condensing the multi colorfull energies into a twisted rainbow spirals that again created known to us dna chains, just like in our bodies the universe had a DNA of its own,this colorfull spirals were the subject of these tests and powers. „base of the universe its own unique data base,look at it my faithfull survents ! This is our universe's DNA the core of all information,everything about everything encrypted here,for our eyes to see !! This is the true form of book of all life,this is where all destiny and fate is beeing written !! Look at what my power could create !! With these chains all is to be decided by us, my progress and research carried out by milenia's have brought us here !! Into the core of knowledge about the universe,but this is merelly a small fragment of what we aim to achieve,just the first page of this book ,which the content we want to change, in order to plant my ambitions into the program of all existence” Galamouth proclaimed making his presentation,as the winds subsided and everything calmed down revealing these colorfull spirals,that fullled the space ,beeing drawn in the empty space as if it were somekinda holograms,the present coul see these DNA chains as they came from out of nothingness by passing everyone present,but they couldn't touch them or interfere with anything written in them. This was Universe's safety measure Galamouth knew of it,this safety measure prevented accidental rewrites that could be done by anyone present allowing them to move freely without damaging the chains ,that occupied the same space ,because these chains were merelly a projection and something more was needed to influence the content written there.This three dimensional DNA chains along with other , DNA chains summounded earlier that Galamouth created were trying to unite but Galamouth's DNA sequences were thrown out not accepted making the Dark Lord growl in anger,as he looked at the process furiously.Reese couldn't believe in what she saw. She was stunned that she didn't even dare to move. She was totally terrified.Half of her face was being covered by her hands. This terrible spectacle before her eyes were blown out of propotion.Making her think"Is he a bad guy? Someone should've stop him." All she could do was gasp. She didn't knew what to do at that moment.Meanwhile Lord Galamouth walked closer smiling madly and his eyes shined in creepy red,as he revealed he wasn't a human but in fact a very terrible monster,he walked toward the girl ,but not because he wanted to talk to her,he was merelly amazed with his powers and yet felt annoyed growled „one more thing, one more thing still remains to block my path..But soon I shall over come these limitations and than my ambitions will become possible !!” He screamed looking at the girl his gaze meet her eyes.frightened to see Galamouth's eyes, Reese steps backward. She want to escape from those wicked eyes. She's so scared that she stucked up on where she is.”how one best send his wishes to God's ?” He asked Reese looking at her.Reese remained with a frightened look. „Its done so by the holly prayers of a priestess, Where is my beautifull Arua !! ..White Master!!” Screamed Galamouth making ,White Master come to them and kneel down „Yes my Lord ?” He asked gazing on his master „Go and bring her to me” Demanded Galamouth looking down at his survent „it will be done as you desire” White Master replied standing up and dissapearing. Galamouth smiled and looked at Reese „now all remains is to wait” He jously explained.Reese heard their conversation. She don't have any idea what they were planning. Galamouth looked at the girl and than at Enblemo who calmly mixed the ingriedients in his cauldron adding orange powder,beeing amazed at how far he got with his insane visions ,Enblemo quickly patted the girl's back „don't stand there make yourself usefull !! Entertain the lord !” ordered Enblemo looking at the girl annoyed.”B-But how?” Reese asked innocently.”I dunno try

talking” answered annoyed Enblemo as he was stirring his magical potion, that slowly started to change colors, darkening. Reese gulped. She's a bit nervous. she didn't know how to entertain Galamouth. She was just standing and looking at him. Dark Master walked over to her and smiled gently, coming closer to the Dark Lord „everything going according to your plan my master” Dark Master spoke to Galamouth „Indeed my faithful servant, everything is as I have described, my research took us this far, look and witness the glory of the knowledge that I have gathered” Galamouth replied ecstatic being amazed at how far he went. Reese can't relate to what they were talking about. she's confused and yet she's afraid to ask. She thinks that it is nothing to do with her anyway. Lord of Darkness was ecstatic with the things he created laughing madly. Suddenly the mouse squeaks. Reese gets the mouse then rubs its fur. "Thank goodness you're ok. little fellow". „what is that rodent doing here ?” Asked Lord Galamouth looking at the small creature then looking around and wondering being lost in his mad thoughts „where is his owner, where is that girl Dawn ?” Asked Galamouth looking at Dark Master „we have no idea my lord...the girl appears to be lost, but we will soon locate her” Dark Master answered bowing to the Dark Lord „ah never mind she's of no importance....just a weak child a failure in experiment...keep that mouse away from me little girl, I hate rodents” growled Galamouth and walked away towards his golden throne. "Pfft! I didn't know that he hates mouse", Reese whispered to herself. „I wouldn't worry about it...our master hates everything because of his wounded heart” Dark Master whispered to the girl as she was talking to herself. She looked at the Dark Master. "Wounded? did he have a painful past?" ...”Yes our Master had a painful past full of betrayals, would you like to hear this story ?” Asked Dark Master looking at the girl, making her more interested. Reese nodded as the mouse nibbles her finger, She giggled then glances at Dark Master. „very well listen then little girl..I'll tell you the story of our powerful master, a man that is clouded in secrets, the prideful warrior of Darkness, the Eternal watcher of all universes, this is a story of heart that became the star of darkness” Dark Master began his tale, getting even the Dark Lord himself interested as he loved stories about himself. Reese who's quite interested with Galamouth's story, she lent her ears and listened to the Dark master. Reese just looked at the Dark Master. waiting for what will the Dark Master tell next.. „In ancient world, he was a general serving for the motherland that adopted him from the betrayal of his own kind, a skillful warrior of inhuman abilities, he was well honored among the ranks of the nobility that lost their country, His new mother land betrayed by the greed of powerful neighbors who like three ravens divided the land into three, forcing the people of the adopted land to fight to regain their freedom, blood and tears from many battles and unsuccessful attempts at reviving the dead state, politics is a cruel game full of betrayal and the new rulers of the land decided to kill the souls of the nation they occupied, but these people unlike any others were skillful warriors, and wonderful patriots, their romanticism and naivete coupled with skillful use of arms became the nightmare of those that dared to conquer the mother land. In fact these people had passion and a love to drink, a happy a bit loud nation, full of people you wouldn't find anywhere else in the entire universe, it must be seen to believe how simple and yet advanced this nation and its proud people were, naturally our Lord felt at peace there surrounded by love and compassion of his newly found brethren, in this brotherhood he waged battles, surprising the occupiers fighting in forests, these people were not afraid of wilderness as they were said to be wild themselves by the so called civilized nations, these were the dark ages of incredible oppression. In these times incredible heroes were born, but not to attain victory, these heroes were often sacrificed to preserve the memory of the people, that was the brutal scope of the oppression, inhuman sacrifice of entire generations that were expelled for the love given their motherland and their holy queen that looked from the nation from a single painting, that was fated to become the property of these people by God himself. Made by the man that served the prophet himself, it was painted on the table, the holy prophet ate his last bread, and over time given to the people of this nation, for the prophet intended to give them a gift although he himself couldn't visit this strange land, and was long dead before it was painted, one of seventy special paintings but only this one destined to this land as a reward for the faith these people had. This Dark Lady shown in the painting was in no way connected to darkness, she was the mother of light that guided many lands of this ancient world, and the image itself a present from the

people that found their resting place and a safe place to dwell in the motherland that adopted our Lord” Dark Master slowly told the story looking at Reese who smiled to him and looking slowly interested in his Lord's reaction, the Dark Lord was lost in his memories „yes the Black Madonna was a holy symbol to my people, we believed in the power of the holy one, today I find it laughable oh how blinded and ignorant that world was” replied Galamouth smiling and looking towards the ceiling. „our Lord was known under a different name back then, he was Duke Dal-Wing, this name being the only thing he had before being adopted into nobility, raised by flames of wars even after being taken as a child into an aristocratic family, the young boy couldn't quite fit in, and while love and devotion were present in that family, the society didn't allow the youngster to forget whom he was, and that he wasn't one of the high classes, thus the young Dal-Wing as he was known back then liked to spend most of his time in isolation contemplating the hidden mysteries of this world, learning the hidden laws and becoming one with nature, the culture and wonderful poetry only stirred up this passion, the boy and later the young man gathered knowledge and learn about things becoming an engineer, which was a profession of great benefits, and merits, this profession allowed the boy to become more active in the social sphere and later become a wonderful opportunity to build his own personal view point, for a time it seemed the man wouldn't have to be alone, that he found his second half, in a girl that was unlike anyone he ever met, robust beauty and charm coupled with an incredible skill in art of war, she was a true female warrior and an incredible soldier whose skills no one could challenge, her knowledge came from extensive travels and her social charm was a rarity among such young maidens that lived in that era, the chatty maiden and her robust attitude succeeded in catching the attention of our Lord, captivating him and enslaving the girl's wits allowed her to gain the heart of our master, yet fate can be cruel it was a time of strife and the maiden had duties more important than trivial love in fact she was one of these heroes that were needed to be sacrificed, her death impacted our Lord so profanely that it changed the core of his very being and it's this moment from which the one known as Galamouth was born” Dark Master ended his speech while Galamouth smiled and clapped his hands in amazement, standing up and walking down „But in this day, which we awaited for so long this pain will end, with completion of my desires there finally will be no boundaries, and we shall become the foundations of an entire new reality” Galamouth proclaimed sitting down on his throne and draw symbols in the air, as if playing like a little child. These symbols started glowing in red, making the mad Lord laugh happily „wonderful this new power is, it all so grand and superior... I'm merely like a child that plays in the dark” Galamouth proclaimed laughing madly, while Reese looked at Galamouth. She felt sad because of things she heard from the dark Master, as he looked into the far distant, while others were trying to understand the situation. The white DNA chains flown in the air, as holographic images, appearing from time to time, white chains turning around this was the manifestation of the language, that like in a computer game created the reality all were witnessing, some strains were clouded in dark or grey smoke, these were dimensions or worlds that suffered from darkness, others shined in white indicating that in these worlds, light's power was freely received. The truth was very different. Unlike how the system tried to portray the world, it was its dominance that was limited to small ghetto like structure and true paradises surrounded them. That's why these that were enslaved needed only to leave the cage, to not be afraid and make the first step. The mad Lord Galamouth didn't understand that, despite having the truth under his nose, he couldn't see this simple reality. Being squished by the burdening pressure he himself created, that sucked him from inside, Galamouth felt that there was a dark hole in place of his soul, and that his emotions and passions were slowly drained from his very being, this was a terrible sickness that made that happen to the one that became the Dark Lord Galamouth. Creating a hollow existence he already had nothing, so he felt attached to his burden and all of his sorrow, instead of letting it go to the place it belong, Galamouth held to it afraid of losing it. He made himself believe that if it goes away, he would be left with nothing, not realising that it was that, which stopped him from gaining something new. This was a mental state he was trapped in since the early nineteen century on an ancient planet known as earth. Galamouth couldn't understand why his lover needed to die, in this war in that country that later became so arrogant. Billions of eons passed and he developed his own truths, and

dark facts becoming obsessed in what he deemed, the only rightfull course of all events. The only true course for someone as great as him to follow, he wanted to make destruction into a greatest spectacle ever seen, this was his true ambition to which he turned all of his devotion, even though his hearth hurt a bit, and he couldn't realize this pain in his chest. This only created more nerve in his mind as chaotic thoughts gathered inside him, scaring everyone. Terrifying even him, for he to wasn't able to believe how evil he became, and yet he both loved and hated his new mind set, and the life he chosen, in eternal seclusion, the bringer of doom to all existence, a dream that couldn't ever be realized, because in this world death was yet another illusion, a painful lesson and a wake up call to these that lived in eternal slumber, to awaken to true life, to the world that exist in reality and not a vague nightmare created by the system. Money and the system are a part of illusion that creates nightmares, all along it was its purpose its up to everyone to realize this and choose a mean of salvation, Galamouth didn't understand that as well. For what he thought of himself he didn't understand „ a great deal of many things” as a certain character from a science fiction war opera series, which I love to watch even now, would say. He too was a corrupt leader that sold himself to darkness, just like Galamouth now. But perhaps the fictional was more sinister than the real one, that's what the main difference between fantasy and real life is, how epic a fight might get in real life it always has, how we could put it a down to earth cause. Sometimes its greed for power thought, like in the movies but the reasons for it also might be complex, some choose darkness thinking they could save everyone by becoming a necessary evil element in place, having all control, I wonder was the Evil emperro from that movie series trying to save something, or was he doing it just for money, and what other motivations pushed him, maybe Ill question him someday, just as I will Galamouth, but for now I wasn't there. So I can only tell, what I was told before. The Darkness that corrupted Galamouth's soul already hold tightly to his frozen hearth. This hearth was walled by ice created by his cold emotions, this barrier was un-breakable but even though, this too would be crushed by fate. For there would be made means to do that this was necessary to continue with the change in Galamouth's soul, that must finally take its place, even the Dark Lord couldn't escape this, his plan and ambition were therefore allowed to continue by the universe, being merely a pretext to change and reshape his very being, after all these billions of eons years, his soul would be killed only to reborn again. Galamouth himself was un-aware of this, despite the fact it already begun. This was slowly taking its course, becoming visible, yet still not noticable to these around him, making Galamouth tremble not knowing making him believe it was merely extasy. The feeling slowly passed away, retuning in circular fashion always hunting at the most in appropriate moment, Galamouth already learned to tolerate this new feeling, not showing it to the outside. For now the most important thing for him was to go along with his desires, there was no force that could turn him away from this path, and indeed no one was to turn him away from it, Galamouth's path was necessary, this event should take its place. It was necessary. The change was necessary, we all know that but we rarely expect it to happen, despite the fact we ourselves desire it. We simply don't expect that kinda change, life can be twisted and although we will always receive what we require, at given moment of time it may not be fully what we desire. That's why often we will not understand the change in progress, being afraid when we realize it is happening. The floors glown in both red and blue, pulsing giving out a metallic sound, making the Dark Lord observe this strange scenery more, creating music that couldn't be described, as hot steam sounds mixed with unknown metallic ones. A huge un-seen machinery was heard working, giving an un-explainable feel. The atmosphere was that of waiting, as something or someone were awaited at this moment, that neared closer. Time was a fleeting illusion, this place was beyond even time itself, change's that appeared here affected all worlds even the one you live in, and although you do not see anything, something is happening near you. Open your eyes ! It is happening now ! Do you feel the pain squishing your chest, these are the signs of our time, the proof its happening !! You are bound to us as we are bound to you, you can feel that ? Our dear reader ? You understand the importance of these events ? Can you even comprehend ! the heavy weight, Galamouth's mind was under, this pressure that was un-describable. His mind like a solid stone as that heavy and as that hard to shape, only a truly powerful force could reshape this being. Imagen the strenght needed to do that ! Is there a force

or a single being capable of doing something of that grand magnitude? White Master appeared, the old man was accompanied by beautiful yellow haired girls, dressed in beautiful futuristic cloths and wearing blue robes, fit for a goddess. The little girls that looked like a 14 year olds, one of them kneeled down giving her respects to the Dark Lord, before walking cheerfully to meet with him, in her own unique way, the other was running all over the place, quickly noticing Reese and greeting with cheerfully. The timid and more calmer one was dressed in pink futuristic cloths, while the loud girl wore orange ones, both were of a special kind, and had an important role to play in the Dark Lord's ambition. In order to pursue this story to this point, where yet another known already character was to make an entrance. We need to go back into a distant past, eons of billions years. This past from the timeline of a girl, Arua's own memories. Green forest and a blue dark skies full of white stars, a long time of waiting the spirit came back without Aya, Arua's younger sister. Aya gone after she came to Ravandred forest, which used to be near the Baravan Castle. Arua comes out, while it was raining taking out the umbrella, running quickly and entering the dark forest, shocked and not being able to think she rushed quickly to save her sister, this could only end in falling unto a tree. Rain was slowly falling down hitting the ground, as the girl took her head up after falling down to look at the two figures that stood before her, on the nearby hill. The world in which she lived was in the middle of a terrible civil war, therefore she was afraid of the two figures that suddenly appeared in the forest. Both Arua and Aya were noted spirit users, therefore there would be many that would hunt them down. The girl looked into their faces seeing no reactions as the two were talking to each other, ignoring her presence. Arua was afraid her sister didn't return from her last assignment, she rightfully feared the world. This made her almost cry. One of the figures who was in fact the Lord of Darkness Galamouth himself took notice of this behaviour smirking he asked the question „are you all right little girl” he spoke the words to the girl. Surprising Dietrich a bit, as he was the second figure, Galamouth while walking closer looked at this new interesting subject, this girl was dressed in ancient blue robes, a spiritual maiden, a very rare yet important find for the dark lord who was looking for able helpers, she was running out the forest, holding a tiny blue light ball. Being confused and a bit delusional, Galamouth looked at her closely knowing the pain and suffering she was just coming through, paradoxically he understood it because, he himself went through it. The girl was afraid walked a bit back, being surrounded by dark scary tree shapes, in this fantasy world, „sis, just wait I'll kill the one that killed you”, she cried out tears falling down her cheeks and tried to run, even thought she was already tired. She ran quite a distance. Hoping to find her sister out there, but she already knew her little sis's soul was in her hand now. She kept running, didn't notice where she was. She realized that she was lost in the forest. She fell down, tired. She tried walking. Realizing after looking forward that she was being watched here were two guys. Looking at her crying. She didn't know why she was crying. One of the guys came and gave his hand to the girl, „will u follow me, for all the eternity?” He asked looking at her with his redish creepy eyes, and yet sounding very trustworthy. Kneeling down and looking into her almost aquatic blue eyes, seeing that the girl finally noticed his presence. Arua was a bit afraid wanted to escape, but her body was exhausted, she wouldn't escape even if she wanted, this meeting was destined and she would be drawn towards his side. Arua didn't understand why she wanted to follow Galamouth, but she believed that the only reason she lived was to serve the dark lord and protect her sister, from this moment caused by an unknown impulse Arua would always follow Galamouth, wherever he went. Partially she followed him because of a spell he used on her, but in time over eons of years and after he truly resurrected her sister, Arua's feelings turned to devotion and love. Arua followed Galamouth cause she loved in many ways, this wasn't something the Dark Lord himself understood. Back to the present, Lord of Darkness looked at the girl that entered the stage, smiling „You finally came my beautiful priestess” He started talking with Arua as she only nodded, meanwhile Reese couldn't get free from the hug Aya gave her being happy to see, someone she loved to play with, despite the fact that Reese, Arua and Aya were of different status, their relationship was on a fair level, even Dietrich had a more softer and friendlier side, Enblemo and both Masters as well as their lunatic Lord, really did care for them and other stray childrens like them. They found, despite using them for somekinda

research, they also gave them a sort of home, a bizarre place to call home though but one they and others like them could inhabit without boundaries, that's why Galamouth was already used to having someone peek into their secret base. In fact in his case he loved that because that allowed the evil Lord to brag about his evil plans, and of course this made him some sort of interest to the little childrens who didn't fear the mad angel and instead loved to hear scary or strange stories from him, despite it not being his intention he unknowingly gave them some love and compassion, or at least a reason to live, as they could always see the most evil being of the universe, or try to confront him. Which in the case of these little childrens who didn't have a home, a family could constitute for that, for they knew someone as lonely as themselves which drew them near him. Of course the children were safe, or would you really care if they died? These were childrens that were abandoned by the world, sometimes used as slaves look around yourself, see how many abandoned children are living in your area, I know what you're thinking, Galamouth is a lunatic that enslaved these childrens and is using them for his hideous experiments, well that's true some of them died because of that, are you shocked, you live in a world which allows that, you're so called care foundations do nothing! Galamouth at least was willing to take care of them, he wasn't doing it for free or out of compassion but for these that managed to somehow survive a day longer, these that were able to be cured, yes for these childrens this kind of life was a paradise. Galamouth wasn't a role model, but it were the role models that abandoned these childrens, today people often think about battling with evil, but in the process we forget about the victims only concentrating on the main enemy, sometimes enemy needs only to be restrained a bit thought. In battle's we need to understand everything even something trivial as relationships, because it can happen that for the sake of protecting them, the one that we thought is evil might abandon his evil ways and willingly restrain his evil ways, in time producing or concentrating solely on good things, such example on earth was Wojciech Jaruzelski, a military leader that abandoned the evil doctrine and sacrificed himself, to help his country which he was a leader to undergo a necessary change. We need to remember and forgive, not forgetting but restrain punishment and allow such people to fix the damage they created. This is a higher purpose, than it mustn't be interrupted because someone can only change under a guidance of GOD. If that's so and we can confirm the change, then however evil that person was, we must restrain ourselves, because his evil can leave him and enter us, calling on us to become like he was before, in that time perhaps we can even spoil what that person tried to fix, and that's when we become evil and ignorant, it's hard to forgive others. It's hard to live with a shame but if we change, then it's ok to forgive one self and enter paradise, for it's ok to call the one I named here a good politician and leader, for he understood his errors and gave up his position, and that's praise worthy. Because for a politician to loose on purpose or leave post, means almost dying. It was the influence of another great man a pope John Paul II that made it possible, and that's why this miracle happened. Galamouth needed to meet someone like that as well of course it would look very differently from the world I was born into, because it was a very different world. More far advanced than the tiny world I was born into, and so things looked a bit differently, for you reading this, the events I describe are fiction. But for me! the one describing it, it was reality. How can it be so? To understand this let's return to the action the smoke was slowly flowing through the area, not hindering breathing as Enblemo was again slowly stirring the potion from his magical cauldron, Reese was embraced by Aya who laughed happily. She just smiled and embraced Aya back, both of them laughed while being observed by others that also minded their own business, Galamouth smirked his red eyes were seeing visions of his desires, imagining how much suffering his dark powers will cause, he was in some kind of ecstasy and yet didn't know whether this was what he really wanted, he was slowly knocked out in a sense from his thoughts by another pawn one that he made especially dear to his dark, covered in thorns heart. Looking at the face that smiled even to him expecting to begin a dialog with the now present Arua. Galamouth's mind clouded in abstract thoughts, his ideas racing like crazy, his mindset ready. Now something great was to finally be achieved as he lustfully looked in the girls eyes seeing only obedience in them. The pressure created by his madness now covered his mind, like a net of thorns that engulfed themselves into the very core of his being, Galamouth wanted to scream from this inhumane agony.

„Be gone Evil thoughts! leave my troubled soul, grant me eternal salvation my beloved priestess !!”
he proclaimed looking at the girl and petting her yellow hair slowly calming himself down by the
faithfulness the girl shown towards him.

Chapter 2

„The convent of Gods”

The skies were silver full of shining stars and in a center a huge orange planet acted as a moon, silver color pulsed deflecting the light that flashed unto it from an un identified source, the skies looked like water or atleast a liquid of some sort , with the orange planet being engulfed in it ,almost sinking while rotating or being rotated by the silver liquid that engulfed it while the stars were in reality a illusion created by the silver pulsing appearing and disappearing at different places some to traveled making the stars appear to be alive.

This view was distorted and the silver covered the planet taking it inside, just to make it go outside again. Orange lines went through the skies touching the orange planet engulfing it in redish flames while the lines disappeared after few seconds the fire that engulfed the planet subsided also slowly vanishing. Tiny cracks started to appear on the surface of the sky slowly covering it and growing, starting of as tiny dots that send lines or more exactly create circle's in a way that was very similar to how a Spider created its web, these crackling lines slowly sprouted from these tiny circles dividing and creating more tiny lines that slowly covered the surface creating other circles, From which other lines sprouted dividing themselves into different branches and again creating new circles repeating the process to infinity. A loud broken glass sound was heard as the sky was

broken and its shards fallen down while it itself was again covered in orange flames which took over the silver plane and created an orange sky with the orange planet completely dissolving in it. Rays of different colors fallen into the sky mixing with the orange creating a huge whirlpool of shiny colors, the whirlpool started by turning very slowly and accelerated until it reached a speed where the colors couldn't be recognized shooting out red lightings. The whirlpools turned into purple tunnels that sucked in everything, making the white light thrusts inside it and go through it to create a special dimension, this was Echelion at its best creating a special sealed world for Gods to meet and discuss the matters of life, economy, spirits and laws the entire Universe's were subject to. A Golden city appeared taking form in this designated space guarded by high walls and seven golden gates. The city's fundamentals was the shape of star a classical symbol of both hope and magic, as the most powerful beings in the universe were meeting this design was very appropriate, the rays of light crafted golden side walks for the celestial beings to walk upon. With beautiful gardens of unseen and undecidable beauty were being created by a celestial rainbow of lights that bore both life and creation. The Gardens were arranged in ancient classical style and devotion to many elements of nature symbolising the unity of life. Green grass, flowers of different kind and color animals gathered from many dimensions and universes brought together, resurrected after dying in their original worlds in order to entertain the Gods. In the center of this ancient classically designed town a huge temple on huge stairs, carved into a huge mountain was placed reminding the Ancient temple's of Athena. The town most obviously brought back her memories. She herself was standing in the center directing the forces of creation by her will. A maiden of extraordinary elegance, eternal virgin. Brown hair and cheeky sharp blue eyes were her eternal attributes. Dressed in wonderful but revealing white robe made from a silk that only a true goddess could afford. In her hands she held a spear and a wooden shield with Medusa's head on it, two of three items she would carry everywhere.

The third being her great silver helmet. Walking forward on her golden sandals she directed the lights with her spear, while another Goddess was walking towards the stairs Athene was standing on. This one dressed in dark Victorian era dress similar to a wedding dress or funeral one but without the top, her arms naked, neck clearly visible beautiful face with purple eyes and dark as night long hair, with tiny pentagrams earrings. Just like Athena she looked like a young 28 year old maiden, but just as Athena she was billions of Eons years old. White moon appeared and beautiful blue night with bright stars were painted on the orange skies making the scenery look natural as the golden buildings were taking shape and form. The beautiful Goddess of night looked towards Athena walking closer and bowing to show respect. „Well done for a Goddess that's not associated with night and magic” The Dark haired Goddess spoke as the howling of dogs was being heard, while Athena was slowly walking down from the stairs to greet the newly appeared Goddess „Aren't I the Goddess of Wisdom dear Hecate?” She asked smiling walking down with her usually tomboyish attitude while a powerful white lighting hit the center of the golden square behind Hecate and dark dogs walked towards her mistress barking with respect on the shape that formed from the lighting and a harsh tone was heard „You're done with preparations” ... „Not yet my lord” Hecate replied kneeling down to the shape as Athena was walking closer and bowed in respect, the shape turned into a man of forty years who wore a green laurel wreath on his white haired head.

His sight was sharp decisive and although he looked old there was no weakness in his presence no one would dare to attack him or face a duel with this person, while he walked decisively marching towards his daughter and loyal servant. This was the king of the Greek Gods' faction the master of all Zeus, the bearer of lightning the first one to use it as his weapon and one of only two to make it his own trade mark. A white pigeon landed on the golden stairs of the temple Athena was standing before she walked over to Zeus and a fire shape appeared first appearing as a classical shape human and then started to materialize into an old man with a very white beard wearing an old and dusty clothing, however his clothing quickly turned gold and the remaining Gods knelt down in respect towards him. „I welcome these that came to our meeting, I hope many more will honor us with their presence” Said the old man as he walked towards the Gods. „They are slowly gathering Lord

Yahweh, the convent of God's will go as scheduled, all were informed” Zeus answered walking toward Yahweh and kneeling down near his legs while Yahweh himself standing on the stairs putted his hand on Zeus's shoulder. „I know I can count on you when it comes to discipline my friend, stand up” Yahweh proclaimed walking down and nearing to Zeus while slowly God's of entire Universe and all dimensions were appearing in this designated area. „let us wait for them inside the temple lads” Proclaimed Yahweh and made his way slowly walking inside the temple followed by the remaining gods, while different spiritual shapes begun to materialize and walk on the stairs as well, some of them talked with each other. They all looked like man and woman gathered from different time periods raging from distant past to yet un-seen future. All were Gods that ruled both the spirit worlds and entire galaxies. Past, Present and the future were gathered in a place where time itself didn't exist. Golden bricks shined from a distance creating a spectacle of incredible wealth that was to be seen from even the most far away location. Shadowy shapes appeared all over this golden ancient hellenistic like town, materializing into more humane appearances, young and beautiful all from different races walking slowly onto the steps of the main temple. The huge triangle roof of this amazing temple was being held in place by powerful columns and pillars placed all over the temple, which was built in doric style huge than everything that was ever built before, walled from the regular gold town with huge walls and in front of the temple building a huge square and a beautiful round fountain, placed in the middle of the square. From this fountain almost representively blue water was falling out into the fountain's huge round pool. Everything was made to look at its best, because yet another elites were having their meeting. Politicians, elites and Gods were so alike in these meetings they always love to gather in order to hold their disputes and show off their dresses, fashion elements they have acquired with their money. God's created to be the kings of souls should be different but because of the fact they were created from human minds, they were similar to the very same humans that oppress them in the names of their laws, supremacy or wealth. This was too merely a political meeting, held by powerful politicians that ruled time and space together, shaping and controlling the very world we all lived in. It was their powers that created the place this convent was to take place, make no mistake this place was created out of nothingness, entire matter was created from single thoughts that fertilise this dimensions, taking them to the next level allowing to live every single concept on its own unique way. Interesting concept to ponder to understand how exactly this reality works, which despite being so different was also very similar to the material plane we all know and live in. The Idea of Gods was created to first symbolise powerful powers of nature which couldn't be understood by the ancient civilisations, establishing the eons old tradition of personifying everything that cannot be understood by simple human minds. This was then used by Echelion which acting on God's will gave birth to the human shapes giving them power, personalities and souls as imagined by the people creating them to live and help humanity while being above the human race and forming the worlds that formed them. A perfect spiral of creation was thus established, the natural order that always should be obeyed everything that is created, creates its own creator which is created by what it creates. These that are supposed to be kings should serve those that serve them in that way the balance can be accomplished and the power of creation allow to flow without any hindrances enriching all planes. Politicians who hear or read this text written beyond their imagination should then understand and heed this warning very closely, they are but servants of people they govern over, and then they should understand creating laws that will lead to abuse is against this world's very wishes and who ever goes against these wishes will suffer the consequence, for the system isn't the world but merely a tool used by the politicians to rule over the world, the tool therefore cannot be over the world.

The world and its population have right to go against the wishes of this tool, when these wishes may take away the freedom to create. Freedom of spirit shouldn't be constrained by money even though money too has been used to create. Money and system are always to be unequal in this as tools they shouldn't take possession and make obsession over it, the means shouldn't not be obsessed about, that's why Outcasts are necessary helping to put things in its rightful order individuals that walk between light and darkness ensuring both of these powers will be kept in eternal balance and this

convent was a mean to ensure that as well. This balance is a tremendous power that keeps everything in its place being a border, which shouldn't be ever passed. The eternal truth of the symbol Yin and Yang, the darkness and light in a circle each containing in itself a small portion of the other. The Universe's symbol known as Taji used by ancient monks and philosophers to portray these powers that were fundamental to our existence. These are the powers that should always be obeyed and kept in its rightful places. For there is no death without life, and no life without death. After every night a day comes and after every day night comes. This is the balance that controls and shapes all known worlds. This world was ruled by its own bizarre rules that defied logic, everything that was weird elsewhere here could be considered normal. Gods on their own part are rulers of all these secret matters, that remain hidden from ordinary mortals and demons or angels of lower ranks whom are controlled by well prepared belief systems which constitute their own reasons for existence, such is the power of these that ruled all. Doctrines, theology and political systems, the mass produced knowledge. The so called social standards and norms that we all are forced to obey are merely a by product of this. In order for the world to remain in balance it should remain in perpetual conflict, between the sides of Goodness and Evil, that's what become the purpose of the Eternal War, all forces were released to struggle and take possession of these that would follow them, this is the natural state of order everything else is just a lie created to cover this truth. To fight is natural, to possess is natural, as well, to possess too much becomes a burden just like possessing too little creates a burden as well. It were the representations of these ambitions taking human form, a form understandable to us, that gathered inside the luxurious temple, some of them were once human or demonic that merely took the role scripted to them by God, others were personifications of

God's created by human or alien cultures, that become so popular that God decided to form them from these ideas and give them their life. They all now were gathered in this huge Golden temple. Athena created from her memories, talking, chatting, flirting, eating fruits on silver plates and drinking wine from huge golden cups, some were even having sex not being interrupted by others in this chaotic crowd, who didn't even find the behaviour offensive, sitting on the ground near a huge pool where both male and female Gods were bathing not ashamed of their nudity. Again in the representatively clean blue water that occupied this ancient Greek huge bathing pool. Golden Statues depicting nude people, young, old, children according to long forgotten ancient esthetics. Some despite looking as young adults were playing like children, chasing nude behind a Golden ball. Gods didn't find this behaviour weird or childish. They were eternal children after all. Laughter and chotic talks were heard everywhere and at first no body would notice, that exactly in this way the world's most crucial matters were decided not only by these Gods that talked seriously, but also by these that had sex with each other or played with that Golden ball, important matters were mixed in conversation full of jokes, immoral propositions or even betting, casual chatting etc. Laughs and joy were heard everywhere, sometimes it was real joy, but you would be able to notice false joy as well. Elaborate intrigues that were planned and then carried out, just politics done by the most authoritarian beings that ever existed, nothing that would, or should be told about. This was the bare truth of how these important and crucial matters that could decide about our life and death were decided, no one should know about it, and I know that no one will believe my description telling me that I'm making it up, but I'm not writing this to convince anyone remember that. I am just chronicalling some interesting things that happened to me that's all, enjoy it as any other story you would read. Stories, all stories whether true or fictional ones are written to be read, it really doesn't matter whether they portray events honestly or add as someone would call it, more color into the descriptions. In fact it's true that many of these so called true stories are nothing more, but mere bullshit made to confuse us more into obeying the rules of this game we call our life. Every important being has at least once in its own life authorized an official autobiography, also there thousands of such biographies written by its enemies. Even God has his holy books and I myself write my own one's as well these books that portray these events, which you read might as well be considered as official autobiographies, I never seen bad books about myself thought...on the other hand I have been mentioned in some encyclopedia's or other studies as an

example of a disturbing personality dis-orders. But returning to the events that took place in that temple, the Gods were obviously enjoying themselves and their power. The brown haired woman with red seductive eyes dressed in a blue cloth that revealed her nude and seductive body, was watching other Gods drinking red wine, on her lap a dark haired man lied, they were just after sex, and their identity was known she was queen Lilith, while the man was Belzebub's servant and his right hand, the Dark Angel Zavebe. His golden armor which he wore while entering this temple, was lying scattered on the floor as the queen of lust herself took it off from this handsome and powerful dark figure, Zavebe himself as all men quickly fallen into Lilith's temptation, while she gently lured him towards her letting him have his way with her seductive body as his lower instincts were ingeniously awoken. „I'm in the reach of heaven” Zavebe exclaimed in ecstasy while the Dark Queen smirked laughing „far from it..you fallen into the pits of hell” answering and kissing him slowly embracing the dark haired angel of death. „Be careful with my property!” Belzebub who was sitting on one of the golden cushions adorned with beautiful women swarming to his old looking naked body. The girls were the servants of Lilith brought to this temple to entertain the Gods willing to use these godly courtesans. They so covered the Dark Lord he wasn't clearly visible. Despite what many would consider shocking, these low instincts were an equalising force to the high qualities of the world they were doing this in. In order for balance to be maintained all creatures are both capable to good and evil, to do and enjoy high things as well as indulge in the lowly pleasures of the body. The Gods were required to be possessed by the very same powers and instincts that controlled us, in order to understand man kind, the demons and angels as well as their masters the Gods were made corrupt just as we are. You can't reach Heavens before you understand Hell, now that's a shocking conclusion isn't it. On the other side of the temple Yahweh was standing drawing a circle with a diamond, Cain. Being surrounded by other Gods that took part in his lectures. He slowly created glowing orange symbols, while his diamond Cain, glowed in bright red lighting up the area as the golden walls and floor deflected the red light. The crowd was amazed watching the spectacle and all clapped hands, while closely watching the old philosopher perform his demonstration, he drew a huge circle and its centre a red triangle with an eye inside appeared. Yahweh dropped the Cain, making it hit the floor creating a sound wave that made his symbols glow in orange flames, creating an orange whirlpool. Yahweh waved his hands slowly as if he was trying to throw something away. The whirlpool squeaked as the yellow flames gathered into a sphere, he walked towards it slowly petting the sphere not feeling the incredible heat that emanated from it, like a great sculptor forcing the unfriendly ball of fire to form into a fire bird. Creating a phoenix that flown out of the sphere breaking, or more exactly hatching out of it, making the crowd scream impressed. The fire bird flew across the temple making all present laugh and clap hands. Yahweh's speciality was fire magic, and he was the most prominent fire user among Gods, it was this proficiency that gave him the title of the High priest among them. This power and incredible wisdom made him respected and feared by many. It was Yahweh who created philosophical fundamentals for the new society, that was created after humans and other mortal species learned how to become Immortal joining the afterlife with the material plain. Learning about it and the creatures that were born or created there, It was Yahweh who first made contact with the dead and could scientifically prove it, this happened after many changes were made to the world when science became so powerful that people were able to understand it. This was why he played such an important role, in both the Echelon which was the After Life and Megacivilisation which was the future of the material worlds, this also allowed people to understand why ancient's claimed the world came out from an egg, as the Echelon could be considered a farm of these eggs. Yahweh continued his magic making the fire bird divide into two and then dividing the two into four, making each of them change colors from yellow to blue, from blue to green, pink and silver and dark, white as well among others. Next the birds flew into each other hitting themselves and creating a golden star, making it shine brightly and disappear slowly into the darkness. „Just like fame my creations shined with incredible light, amazing everyone with its brilliance, however this kind of influence doesn't last and disappears quickly only to be forever forgotten, true influence is built step by step, slowly in painstaking details, true artists build their works while being laughed

by the industry,because true art isn't something that is locked by fame and prestige a true artist shouldn't care about it,people,angels or demons if they wish to create culture they shouldn't go after money or fame,because building a true culture and obtaining true wisdom isn't about being spotted with the right people but instead requires one to become very humble, to understand that he or she's merely a small part of the whole creative process that takes its place far beyond the human shell.We as merely receivers need to know that we were used only to channel the whole complex process,being a part of this life creating influence. We add our energy to the created complex, but we were not its creators. This is my dear's an important truth that needs to be written into your religions and distributed among your followers,because their energy added to this creative whirlpool,which give birth to new spiritual beings,worlds and universes. It's the powers that created us and them. We the God's created religions as a means to sustain and enlarge this process after learning how to harness this energy we should use it to benefit all life,remember that we were mere servants of the mortals not their masters,we serve ,guide,we're loving parents and friends we even become lovers. We give them all we have and they give us all what they have,this is the power of bond that unites us to mortal man, and there is no sin in this. Don't be shy about using your material shells to further these goals,humans expect temptresses along good angels, humans deserve to experience both sides of the world.For they work to sustain it and build our future.These angels that give their bodies to them do not sin,but also these angels that don't want to fall and instead choose higher pleasures above the body should feel themselves honored,however pride and humility must walk in pair ,or it's very easy to lose your way in both things we see as good and things we see as evil.Were not bound by laws,we are the ones that create them,however this means we took on our backs a responsibility to help these we made subject to these laws." Yahweh made his speech and after it was done he left the „stage" and entered the crowd sitting on the golden cushion, watching as someone else filled his place. Taking a yellow fruit and picking up a knife peeling it slowly,turning it around.Revealing it white inside which he then cut into few pieces, distributing the pieces of the fruit,among the Gods who sat next to him eating one piece himself. Near him a couple was dancing, performing an ancient play. Man and a woman dressed in ancient white silk robes ,wearing white masks were dancing performing what appeared to be the story of Adam and Eve, as the woman was tempting the man with an apple like fruit. The man was acting as he was tempted going forward following the woman,grabbing her hand and dancing tango together,which made everyone laugh.Clapping their hands in amusement caused by the awkwardness of the scene, the God's enjoyed themselves,while getting ready to decide about important issues.Painful issues that were discussed causing discomfort among the ones that discussed them.These issues caused frustration and some of them were quick to take offence.Others wanted to show off their power ,only adding to this chaos in which everything was already confused.Darkness mingled with the light as all sides of this eternal conflict were gathered here, this was one of these unusual events that almost welcomed everything that's extraordinary.This was the Eternal Convent Of Gods known as ECOG,a special political meeting of these that ruled everything. Floors were lit up with sparkles of energy,glowing in different colors.Multi-colored sparkles changed into diamonds ,falling on the floor creating a loud noise.The bright colored diamonds crashed into floor dividing creating blue flames.which themselves created blue snakes ,coming alive in a blue aura squeaking terribly turning everybody's attention to this weird spectacle.Terrifying some Gods while others were merely interested in this strange and un-controlled event.Huge dark redish whirlpools blew through the temple,massive dark currents containing darkness instead of energy,united with blue serpents covering them and helping to materialize,as they continued to growl.Becoming more bigger as the nearby crowd slowly dispersed making way for them.Growling very terribly. The two serpents watched from above on the crowd closely monitoring every action made by Gods,taking them as hostages.Surprising and shocking the God's who didn't expect anyone bold enough to make that attempt, this was truly insane to take God's as hostages they thought to themselves, while witnessing this strange event.The God's of course didn't want that to happen, and quickly repelled using all of their power,creating fire attacks and yellow shock waves that were eaten by the blue serpents,attacking the God's themselves but going

back without biting ,showing that they should stay in their place until the one that summoned them would appear. The crowd of course was terrified as they couldn't understand what was happening, this was something weird. The events unfolded themselves like in a well written book ,step by step. A red sphere appeared in the center of the temple slowly growing and becoming entangled in the dark whirlpools, entangling the blue serpents and sucking them slowly into itself as eyes appeared opening.

Into the dark sphere creating a grotesque creature that flew up. Opening its jaws growling. Smiling and showing its white teeth it finally spoke „welcome God's of the Afterlife, the rulers of spiritual domains and so called masters of the Universe, long have I awaited to finally be able to speak with you...oh how many eons of years have passed since that disgusting betrayal !” it spoke its words creating another dark surge of winds that entangled dark energy into itself making the creature transform again. Blast of dark energy ,exploding and covering every plane possible. Like a dark liquid spilled, covering the golden floor, creating a huge dark energy lake. From which a strange creature started to form. With its grotesque shape similar to nothing ever seen ,it slowly started to form into something more familiar, a dark humanoid shape with bizarre red eyes. Which looked at the gathered carefully analysing all present, making sure no one escaped. The creature slowly started to shape into something more humane a man's face formed, it was Galamouth who was manifesting in front of the God's slowly gathering, sucking his own dark energy ,he used to burst into this perfect world. Sucking the dark liquid into himself gaining a more realistic shape, making his clothes form themselves and his own body materialize, while making a crazy grin.

Laughing madly as he walked forward towards the God's.

„L-L-L-Lord Galamouth, what are you doing here ?” Startled Yahweh asked standing from the golden cushion slowly walking forward to greet him. ”we welcome you, but your presence in this ain't necessary my master, please return to your resting place” Yahweh gently demanded while standing in front of him ,hitting his walking stick into the floor making it form a light wave that erased the darkness that Galamouth created freeing the God's that were tied up by it „My resting place ? or did you mean my grave, you ungrateful fools ! weak hypocrites, you dare to betray me !!” Galamouth yelled while maniacally pointing his hands towards Yahweh „you dared to commit an incredible sin, which won't be ever forgiven ,you betrayed me and my ambitions ,did you forget why you have been given this power ? it was to carry out my plan” Galamouth proclaimed walking slowly to Yahweh as he stood calmly while being circled by the Dark Lord „your plan would create misery and injustice, furthermore your plan wouldn't ever succeed..please understand to destroy everything is impossible you cannot demand anything that's against other beings, you cannot take things that truly belong to them ,you cannot forbid anyone to live their life or even offer salvation if that's against their wish, that's why your plans will always fail” Yahweh explained looking straightly into the Dark Lord's eyes „your plans will always fail because of selfish motivations that pushed you into creating them, despite all justifications you use to delude yourself” Yahweh ended looking boldly into the eyes of darkness as Galamouth smirked and laughed being amused by his logic „so you claim it's my selfish desire to get rid of this whole suffering ? True it's much more easier to just leave this world to rot by itself pretending we God's don't see the corruption created by greed, blood and suffering we will just allow misery to take its place, if you love pain and sorrow than you shall love my next installment, I shall create a lot more sadness and sorrow destabilising this world's fundamentals only to finally prove how sick this place really is” Galamouth again proclaimed his mad plan smiling with enjoyment as he spoken these words to the God's that were truly terrified of him, purple lightnings covered the floor coming through hitting the nearby pillars.

Making it shine in green light producing a colorful rainbow powder. Which was carried by the wind, creating a colorful smoke. Symbols appeared in the blue water ,symbols of an old priest like figure from ancient times, dressed in ancient ceremonial outfit he was probably Zechariah a renowned prophet of the ancient world, his image was used in this symbol to carry a certain message. The arcane program of this magical structure, and the interface or more exactly the hidden language the true God master of all creation used to communicate with his believers, subjects and

living beings. Could be described as a language of symbols drawings that might be understandable to all that exist, for God instead of using abstract words we use to communicate with one another, shows merely things as they are and this is how he delivers his message. In order to understand this symbol we need to understand who was the person that was embedded in it. Who was Zechariah. Because he's the key element in solving this divine puzzle. Zechariah was a certain priest of the course of Abia who was the administrator of one of the temple's in Judah, on Earth. Who was serving at the altar of incense, when an angel Gabriel appeared bearing a message for him. The Angel revealed that his wife would give birth to a son, whom he should name John and that this John would become another influential prophet, who shall play an important role in yet another important prophet's life. Zechariah asked the angel for proof, making the angel identify herself and state that because of his disbelief he would be „struck dumb” and „not be able to speak” as the holy books put it. Which eventually happened. This knowledge makes it easy to understand the symbol now ...doesn't it? Zechariah appearing in the water might mean this „Do not lose your faith” or „Do not be afraid” for the ones who believe in God are always protected by his presence. Also the message might mean „Have strong faith” or you can translate it as a test of faith. God's symbols might be translated in different ways yet the meaning still remains the same. The water glowed being lightened up from below by an un-identifiable source of light. That changed its color from yellow to orange and then through orange to red, later to green as well finally returning to yellow. While metallic sounds of music were being heard signifying this world was governed by backward laws. Suddenly the room was cleared from all God's making them disappear taking them away from this dangerous situation, leaving only Yahweh and Galamoth behind.” now there won't be any unnecessary interference” Said Yahweh while making a circle with his walking stick making it glow and create a whirlpool of light that engulfed Lord of the Darkness Galamoth „long have I awaited this” Galamoth smirked making his eyes turn red, as dark hands sprouted from the floor breaking the light, becoming dark tentacles that tied up a defensive barrier around the Dark Lord. While red energy beams erupted from the floor making Yahweh run away jumping, avoiding being hit. Galamoth touched his barrier in a mad dance manner, making it shine red as from behind Yahweh huge dark snakes jumped out from his shadows trying to eat the Lord of Light forcing him to turn around and move his hands forward while jumping away attacking with a fire spell and burning the hellish serpents, making them squeal in agony as they evaporated into dust. Orange flames spread unto the entire golden floor, encircling the complex structure Galamoth created for his own defense. Water evaporated from the heat creating white steam, that filled the temple obscuring the vision. Yahweh stood straightly, having fallen when evading the serpents, kneeling to control his own defence's. Now he was walking straightly towards the water, touching its surface with his walking stick. Making the water boil slowly, creating strange sounds. While Galamoth's tentacles disappeared. Huge orange dragon heads came out from the water, making Galamoth gasp in amazement as the red dragons blow fire at him, forcing the Lord of Darkness to jump away into the air and move his hands forwards, sprouting new tentacles that tied them self on the dragon's head cutting them very swiftly into pieces as the Dark Lord laughed madly in amazement. Creating dark winds that covered the entire shrine changing its structure, red eyes opened in the ceiling as dark shadows appeared walking as if they were drunk multiplying and diving surrounding Yahweh. Who made a circle in the air surrounding himself with light, to ward off the darkness created by the mad angel of darkness. The light exploded like a shockwave pushing back the shadows that started to scream terribly, each of the shadows were a soul that was thrust into the eternal pits and now were used by the dark lord as a walking weapon, trying to corrupt the soul of the wise philosopher, with its own greed. But Yahweh's heart was strong enough to withstand such temptations. His light being an essence that purified them and allowed to pass into the next dimensions as sparkles of light covered these shadows making them disappear one by one, The light covered the Dark Lord who was flying above the scene tying him up as he screamed gathering a red aura in himself to break, the light's hold on his body crushing it into tiny pieces. Throwing dark spheres billions appearing in the air trying to hit the Lord of Light who swiftly, evaded being hit by them trying to run away into the maze of pillars, being chased by the Dark Lord who flew

above. While the whole temple started to transform into an un-belivable structure, a kind that was only possible in the world where dreams were created, as stairs that lead to nowhere appeared creating a multidimensional complex structure of mazes, where everywhere lead to nowhere. Covered in white smoke that appeared out of nowhere adding more mysticism to the whole scenery. Explosions of fire from an underground volcano passed through, brightening the stairs on which Galamouth was now standing, as the temple changed into a huge stairway, inside of a rectangular tower and in its center fire erupted its flame going upwards creating a wall, that only allowed to use the steps by walking down, forcing Galamouth to run after Yahweh, who was escaping below. Trying to avoid the rage of the mad Dark Lord. „you will not escape !!!” screamed Galamouth in his fury. „come to meet your destiny ... a deserved death from my hands !!” he screamed laughing madly being a bit burned by the fire shaking it off. Explosions shook the tower. Making the madness continue. Making the heat rise and the flames shine in orange color amazing the Dark Lord „Come on wait for me, the time is near” Galamouth proclaimed being lost in his madness, as the forces of destruction were unleashed in this closed dimension, destroying it from the inside „come my greatest weapon... come into existence the flames of Ragnarok !!!” Screamed Galamouth looking at his side „oh where is Dietrich when I need him?” Galamouth asked while creating black blades in his hands touching them with fire making it disperse, as the blades slowly sucked in the flames into itself. Forcing the structure to yet again transform and change its shape, making the mad Lord enjoy it even more, as Yahweh was avoiding being impaled by spears and lightnings that came from above being created by the Dark Lord himself. The platforms in the tower were created from the floors, from which staircases were divided falling off, forcing Yahweh to jump from platform to platform as Galamouth sent a pink power wave unto him forcing Yahweh to erect a silver electromagnetic shield to deflect the attack. Which made Galamouth jump away first above and then below Yahweh. Making Yahweh jump to him and take him on in a magic duel „I will never let you complete that desire !!!” screamed Yahweh pushing Galamouth off the edge with the use of the golden lightnings „You and what army ? !!!” Galamouth replied falling down, on the next floor escaping into the darkness hiding in it. „stop hiding like a coward, face me in a fair fight” Demanded Yahweh „no thank you” replied Galamouth creating dark tornadoes that attacked Yahweh making him jump few floors avoiding, being hit by the dark air currents. While the darkness took the place of the fire, replacing it with a huge dark tornado, that Galamouth created to conceal himself. The winds blew with incredible powers and speed giving out a chilling sound, Galamouth's true terror was unleashed in this moment. While the tower collapsed because it couldn't resist the incredible force being summounded inside it. Rubble fallen down making Yahweh yet again run for his life as energy blasts came out from the dark tornado trying to hit him, as if shot out from a cannon, while Yahweh created multi colored shields to protect himself. Lightnings hit the platforms, making Yahweh jump away even more faster, as a mad powerful laughter was being heard yet again. A powerful explosion of darkness finally destroyed the tower, pushing Yahweh into the darkness, making him fall, as the dark whirlpools of air followed him, Yahweh created a sphere of light inside being safe from the darkness that quickly surrounded, the white glowing sphere, as both Darkness and Light were gathering, Darkness gathered along the light created by Yahweh to protect himself, while the Light went upwards forcing Galamouth to create a sphere of Darkness and sealing himself inside, both being surrounded by the opposite a very dangerous situation. Where both of them were pushed into opposing the environment, being an equalising force, as the dimension became a symbol of equality. Seen from a certain perspective it, indeed created it and everyone who would be present would notice it. That was the power of the Universe, and the Power of God who created this universe, that is why all should praise his name, for he alone can topple the might and make them become weak, this is God's true power, be afraid of it, be humble pray and remember these that oppress will become oppressed !! For that is the fate of the strong to become weak, and the fate of weak is to become strong !! and this is a perpetual circle so everything changes constantly, that is the will of the Almighty GOD the true creator of the Universe !

Be mindful of these descriptions for they too serve a certain purpose, that will be revealed to you in

time by our holy patron, the master of all God.

Everything change's and is in constant motion, so was this bizzare situation that imprisoned both of them, as the manifestation slowly dissapeared, allowing them to continue their fight, to decide who would be the victor of this sacred fight.

Yahweh send a huge light energy into the Dark Lord as he merely squeched protecting himself by using a blue barrier this time. Creating a red strong wave that like blood covered slowly the area ,dispersing as if spilled into every atom o this dimension's manifestation. While Yahweh created a orange net,that like spiders web engulfed the entire dimension,trying to sustain it.While Galamouth used it as an oportunity and transformed his red blood,into red spiders that entered the web chasing Yahweh. Who slowly run on the orange strings beeing surrounded by greedy red spiders,While Galamouth himself morphed into a gigantic dark spider that squeched terribly.walking down the web getting closer to a surrounded and a bit desperate Yahweh. Who Standed straightly and engulfed his walking stick into bright light „Lord offer me Salvation !!” Yahweh asked giving out an praying,suddenly beeing engulfed by light beeing morphed into a beautifull Golden butterfly which spread its wings and flew off the web,while Galamouth squeched terribly not beeing able to do anything,morphing into a black moath,he followed the Golden Butterflu spitting at it with acid,trying to hit it ,But Yahweh was able to avoid beeing hitted. Dissapearing into light making Galamouth stop, as he didn't want to be purified he squeched in fear. Engulphing himself in darkness that created a huge wall, fit for defense but not for an attack, as the light from the lord, quite literary ! was gaining more space dividing the darkness. „Curse you be the Powerfull one of the Universe...my time will yet come to stop you're dellusion !!” Screamed Galamouth in agony seeing, how terribly he was loosing this duell,thinking he had an advantage. „The Darkness is on the rise, the sorrow will destbilize you're game, the cruel truth shall be revealed...answer me the one that always watchess and yet remain silent when needed the most,why do you hide and take no form, no shape for yourself, why don't you answer the prayers of these that are praying to you in you're churchess,you think you done enough to be worshipped ? I shall destroy you !! , Destroy you're dreams and this lies , forever this world will return to nothingness from which it was created !!” screamed theatrically Galamouth, not knowing God answered his prayers many time's yet he wasn't able to see them,not thinking of simple kidness that was offered to him many times as important or worth of noticing. Poor Galamouth didn't even understand that, which made him weak more weaker than he would ever admit.

„poor Galamouth , you will never understand the truth about this world,beeing engulfed in you're hatret,you hate all living things...looking for faults you cannot notice the love given even to you by many,these that want to be close with you,these that think of you warmly,they do exist mad lord,they are near and help you work on you're prepostous dreams ! and yet you defy their existence ! deny their goodness, you don't apretiate the help that was given to you” Yahweh answered the angry words, of his former teacher, looking with pity at the hideous black moath that carried Galamouth's wounded soul, he knew the agony his former mentor was going through,but couldn't do anything to heal him,this made Yahweh sad and tremble a bit from both sadness and fear. Remembering the times of ancient past, when he was one of many street children under the care of this strange dark priest, who would tell them stories that appeared as fairy tales to them. This relationship twisted because of eternity into hatret . Why did it happen ? why did it go that way ? Were the questions on Yahweh's mind. The memories of an old ancient town, in a desert,guarded by huge defense's ,Earth's distant past ? or perhaps future ? This was Yahweh's own home the place he longed ,despite living in much better conditions. These were sparkles of memories that clouded his mind for a while. What was the mystery of this universe ? Why is this story beeing forwarded to you of all people ? Haven't you noticed yet ? These that read this story be schocked, you're reading a story that describes the future of you're civilisation, the universe. The mystery of our world is locked inside the very reality that surrounds you the reader look for the answers yourself as they are near you. I told you once , you the readers are taking a part in the events that are described, you think you're not in danger ? don't be to cooky, you must stay and help us win this ETERNAL WAR the battle is real and its about you. Even if you close this now,this won't make you safer for you

have now been made aware of the events that were happening beyond your imagination, this was a trap !! You are now a part of the events that unfold in this world, this is true madness and reality. Your souls and energy take part in it as well, this is why telling you about this story is a great importance for us, for by making you read it or listen to it, we make you participate in this battle. This is the true purpose of culture that itself is a powerful weapon. Was it a surprise for you, do not be afraid, take your chance to be a part of this world and our story, witness the battle of eternity in your own lives ! be amazed ! be enlightened understand yourself and the knowledge you always possessed.

This truth is inside you open your own souls and minds and see clearly what cannot be seen before ! this is the gift we give to humanity and all mankind. Suddenly a ray of yellow light came out of the skies, surprising both Galamouth and Yahweh, the rays joined together creating a star, that shined in a yellow shining brightly as a woman's voice was heard speaking „This is Hecate speaking...Lord of light Yahweh are you still there?...do you hear me ? we are initiating a rescue now ,please fly into the star, we will pull you out of this bubble” Hecate's voice was heard calling from above. Making Yahweh fly towards the star ,entering it. While Galamouth angrily screamed and frantically sent his tentacles trying to capture the star, as it disappeared taking Yahweh out of this dimension ending the battle. „curse you witch !!” Screamed Galamouth as the dimension collapsed and he himself disappeared in darkness. Galamouth was at his height in frustration, cursing everyone and everything in this and any other worlds. His fury was incredible combined with gathered sorrow, these emotions came from incredible wounds his soul gathered. Galamouth's evil came from incredible pain, hatred is born from pain, hurt pride and shattered ego, or more exactly a very hard blow to one's ego combined with the inability to let go of it, or understand why one's ego should be sacrificed, or because of the extent of the sacrifice that is too large. No body likes to give away something he or she believes are vital to his or her existence, and if we got to do it constantly ,giving up on our rewards for all the hard work we do, don't you think we won't get fed up with it, this is one of these vital elements that push people and demons towards darkness. Of course this is just one cause that does take it too far, reverting souls to darkness making them an instrument of destruction, everything changes unless we don't understand the right principles to cultivate the goodness, and in order to do so we need to learn about the balance. Balance means attaining both things for yourself and others not denying any needs. It's important to find the path in the middle ,to remain connected to all things. Ignorance creates most of evil and darkness in this world, also greed that creates ignorance helps demons and people to convert to darkness bringing more pain and sorrow. How to defeat it, you must defeat the cause of this darkness, kill the pain and heal from sorrow.

It's not as easy as it sounds, helping these that don't want any help, being too proud to admit that they too need it ,is often impossible, and since darkness is a sickness one must be struck like a very good doctor in order to cure others from it ,it's very hard to convert others towards light, and you have to be humble in order for yourself to not be taken over by it, also you need to know when to step back and allow someone better to take care of the problems, as there are better than you at this task, do not be proud of yourself and not dare to carry everything on your own shoulders, this too leads to evil, you're working in a team even if you think you're alone there are always others helping you, even if you don't see it, remember one of them is God and others like you are his ministers. For we all are a team. Guided by the light of the Universe, the life creating power, so there is truly nothing to be afraid. Silencing the ego itself isn't that easy actually, many of us feel unprepared that were on the losing side of the world and this view is correct, for the evil always makes us loose, but this loss in itself is an illusion, remember what you see, this what shines and appears to be healthy is really decay, system whores are all full of this decay, masquerading ugliness as beauty trying to make us believe this is glory, we must reject these kind of ideas at all cost, nothing that is guided by greed how noble it appears leads to happiness and good, this is all a trap and we must be aware of these illusions and alert others. Others will not want to believe it, they can't imagine that their world is cruel, they think egoistically believing that if they're not hurt others don't suffer at all, or not even caring that others suffer and this is wrong, as it easily creates divisions that are used by the system to enslave us. System and evil enslave us by creating divisions, killing unity under any

pretext, how noble it appears brings seeds of darkness and weakens us, for we should be organised and united in a true union than system itself would be unnecessary. But this kinda union ain't possible in great places, might be achieved in small thought like in families, if we build them on love instead of law it will reach much better fruits, even though learning to respect law is good, that doesn't mean we need to take law above love this is wrong, this becomes an instrument of evil and that's a mistake. Law is only used for binding that is wrong, law should be a pact between the rulers and their subjects not means of oppression, unfortunately it's the other way around always. The same goes to religions, unless they help to unite and teach about love, they're wrong, religions that promote war are these that serve darkness. Currently all religions I know off mostly serve the dark side. Institutionalizations of religion by building churches is wrong, they should not be institutions but houses for praying, even a simple wooden house would do a better job in being a true church, than an golden temple, for WHERE IS GOLD THERE'S ALWAYS CORRUPTION. Luckily there's a irony in all of this, system always wants to be above everyone, in high luxury its best than to cut its rope that are tied to the ground where we ordinary people and demons live and let it fly into the skies where its destroyed like a hot air balloon. The true paradise can be created below, in the lowest ranks of mortal and man, because that's the only place system won't come looking for it, as it detest everything that is low it closes its eyes for everything that happens there, and remains highly ignorant of moves done there, this is where we can create an union, and then destabilize the system making it fly off with its own lies. Evil itself can be fooled in the same manner let it think it won, and become weaker than penetrate and transform the darkness to light. It cannot be done by swords, but it can be done by a union. This is the power of love despite being paradoxical, works effectively relying on evil itself on the incredible obsession about someone, than that someone should simply give up despite being strong, become one with the evil and take the evil one in possession by wit, slowly using darkness itself to transform it into light. The paradox of Love is indeed possible, if we understand love is the same as deception, but only in certain matters. Do not be afraid to lie, but also at the same time be very honest with your oppressor and victim, be harsh and yet very delicate and subtle, and do it only if you yourself want it, for otherwise this weapon or more exactly special ability won't work, and this miracle cannot be performed. It's a very hard way of doing things reserved only for real pros do not try it at home ! Until you know you're ready. This won't come easy, and its effects cannot be foreseen, this is a gamble with all dangers. REMEMBER THAT, this is a path only those that are truly RESPONSIBLE and strong in spirit can take.

Chapter 3

„The Magical structure”

The depths of the darkness is a state of incredible sorrow, and also a lack of light. Is darkness nothingness than ? What is darkness, with what kinda force we usually associate it with ?

Darkness is a force usually associated with division. So why is division seen in such a negative manner ? Why dividing is seen as something negative, while gathering is seen in a more positive light ?

Are we gathering or dividing ? What is the most important possession that we should gather ? Is it money ? Prestige ? Luxury items ? or maybe something else ? Why is it that people who are shown possessing all are in fact weaker than these ,that are depicted to posses nothing. What is true possession ? Something of true value is hidden from the eyes of masses. Its not that its hidden on purpose,but because of the lack of knowledge the masses posses. They're not taught about true values,because the system needs them to be blind fools,how else would it hold control over so many souls,how else would the system hold its authority ? Ignorance is the best way to control the weak minded. Even though the treasures are putted right in front of their nooses,these fools will see them as mere garbage. The garbage holds true treasures,yet the system depicts it as trash. To understand and see the true treasures we need to pay attention to what lies in our garbage, in both physical and metaphysical sense. So what are the things you're forced to throw away, by the system ? These are your true treasures keep them for yourself and share with others, do not let the system have its own way. Do not let blind desperation take hold of you,even though system will use all means to break your soul, how else would it hold authority ? It first needs to destroy a person soul,break dreams,corrupt the soul,crush their free will and force the person to kill themselves in a spiritual sense,to denounce their own ideals and their dreams as naivete.To mock themselves and humiliate each other just to prove the system's way is the only one. The system doesn't reward these that survive it,merely divide create more divisions that create them again. This is true division,we create division in ourselves weakening our will,and strengthening the system's hold over this world. That's how over millenia's ,people and immortals sustained this wicked beast.To defeat it ,we all need to take possession of the true treasures,that will free us from its reign.But what are these true treasures, you first need to open your eyes. Try looking at the world and its people differently. Than from a fresh perspective ,you'll see the true treasures. You only need to take some for yourself and share them among others,true treasures are meant to be shared. Sharing isn't division,its making possession by a whole group,family or society. Such treasures that are in possession of many will last eternally,and despite it being divided it will multiply to cover the needs of all that posses such treasure.Just like the bread a prophet called Jesus, used to feed the hungry. Instead of disappearing the bread multiplied to cover all that were hungry. Such treasures that cover the need of many,how small and naive it looks are true treasures. That sustain all that posses,despite the fact they constantly share it among others. The ability to share is a strength that can defeat greed. Sharing is an act of obeying God's will therefore it cannot be punished.It should be allowed only the whores of the system, fear sharing, only for them sharing is an illegal act. But such law that prohibits sharing,which is God's will shouldn't be obeyed. For no law is more important than God. God's will is more important than human law,despite the fact the system will use the law to persecute good.Such greed holds no authority and laws made to support system greed. Shouldn't be obeyed. Law that denies God,eve if supported by high priests is an act of war. Therefore a peaceful cultural revolution in defence of God is justified, let the system know that true believers of God,not church devotees will stand by this freedom,defending the true treasures and places where,we all can share them. By creating new media's and more places,by creating true culture ,that will tend to needs of these that are treated as garbage,because they dared to think,and are not blind to the evil of the system whores. Despite the fact they will be persecuted and mocked ,despite the fact the system will use all resources to combat the truth,even sickness might befall on these that dare to speak. This sickness in the service of System whores will be defeated by God,who shall protect his followers from death and guide them in truth. Do not fear of the suffering,for this is a mere curse used by the system,let send the whores of the system a message. We know that you the whores of the system are the cause of our pain,sorrow and sickness. We will not bend to your wickedness. Your authority means nothing nothing in front of the God's divine will,and you shall suffer and lose your support system,and system whores your rule is about to end.The system was a structure ,created by man to distribute God's gifts among themselves, yet because of the

corruption that rooted in their hearths, the whole structure became corrupted as well. Becoming an instrument of evil and incredible oppression, tyranny that wasn't foreseen, or perhaps all of it was planned and calculated into something we know as our existence. This is the truth that is being shown to these who read this scripture or listen to the audio-book, this is how mere words can portray something grand and powerful just as the events we were part of. Walking in this darkness, covered in multicolored dust as we were trying to move forward from this debris. The scene we saw was simply unimaginable. It was hard to describe, darkness and colorful smoke everywhere. As if we entered into a cloud, yet we were inside this building still walking in one of the hallways surrounded by hieroglyphic symbols, this time a man naked was lying after coupling with a beautiful woman, who was revealed to be the devil holding a child, the result of the mating. A man was probably of high prominence, either dying or simply lying on the bed naked while the devil held their child, the child was probably the Anti-Christ, the fabled anti prophet, that was to appear on earth. I still didn't know what it meant, or why these symbols appeared on the walls accompanying us in the journey, I wondered what God wanted to tell us as we made our way through the darkness. We were surrounded by this darkness engulfed in the smoke, being able to breathe. Despite the fact the debris was all around us. Looking into the distance seeing light, a pathway or a door that was open, we slowly made our way there. We found ourselves in something that appeared to be a futuristic lab, computer device implanted in the walls of this huge research center. We didn't know what was this facility used for, but there was no one to guard it. We entered it being shocked by the colossal size of it. The blue and silver equipment was placed in the middle of this huge room, working and calculating equations that were fundamental to the dark spells used to control the whole process. In four corners huge glass pipes with boiling water being pumped upwards. We walked in the middle of this strange lab not being bothered by any security just as if, for some reason we would be granted access into this strange place. In the center of the room glass tubes were placed, a hundred or more in them, people and demons nude. In some form of hibernation, on their bodies I could notice the same strange symbols, both Dawn and Misa had. Above us a huge machine was flying, it being the sole caretaker of this strange lab. Not bothered by our presence it slowly moved on the ceiling observing the whole room. Conducting experiments on the subjects in the tubes, making the tube with the subjects glow in different colors. I looked closely at this whole procedure „Dawn can you tell me where we are now?“ I asked my comrade looking at her reaction, wondering did she know anything about this research center. Dawn looked around, as she shrugged. "I got no idea.." She said feeling a bit awkward. She then began to make her way forward, as she peeked in to see the others. That were locked in these tubes, sleeping in some kind of trance, covered with yellow, orange, red and blue fluids. She touched the surface of the tubes, and looked back at me. Uncertain of whether to continue to move forward. I was looking surprised at the tubes myself, while they were giving out a chilling boiling sound, making me think that the ones inside there were boiled, fortunately they were not. „So Dawn do you remember anything? tell me dear what happened here?“ I asked the girl yet again, hoping for a reply as I gazed on the subject in the tube, a man with brown hair. Similar to the one we met earlier. She closed her eyes as she touched the tubes, but still nothing came to mind. She only opened her eyes and shook her head, in response to my question. As we continued to stare at the tubes. Obviously the subjects in them came from different nations, worlds and times. The brown haired man was an elf, that used to live in a fantasy world, Dawn stared at him with wide eyes. She started slowly remembering something. Slowly in her head images were formed alongside feelings of warmth, heat a lot of grey steam, strange figures and unknown to her research. Then all the sudden the feeling all fell, as she came back to her senses. I looked at her and asked „what's the matter Dawn?“ I looked carefully at the girl as she was suddenly sweating. "I don't feel so good." She replied, while glazing around. „oh ok you wanna rest for a while?“ I said while hugging her gently, first putting Misa on the floor hoping she would finally wake up „ok dear breathe steadily“ I said to her, gently petting her hair slowly cuddling. „it will be fine“ adding. The silver blue walls were in fact elaborate computer devices, everything was so advanced! and very hard to describe, most of the things used in this research lab, were seen by me for the first time. Making me amazed at how advanced

combination magic and technology could create. How well it was provided in this structure that only mimicked a skyscraper bulding!! this was something that was rare to see,even in such advanced futuristic metropoly . I always saw but a mere fraction!!! of the whole truth. The whole truth culdn't be comprehended by my small mind? but step by step I learned more, there was a lot of time and this adventure had only started making me wonder how much supprises this mysterious structure holded.I still continued looking at Dawn who breathed slowly,calmly looking at the tube in which the man was trapped,the glass like tub was standing on somekinda dark box which turned out to be the computer interface that controlled the enviroment inside the tube, our „protector” the giant rectangular machine ,that slided above us on some kinda trail way ,builded into the labs cealing. I would say 45 or 78 meters above our position,came above us and a dark cable sprung out from one of the holes that opened,entering the computer console, making the computer program something as we could notice how the pressure inside the tube was changing,noticing wounds I realized this was somekinda medical facility, in which the subjects were given medical treatment,during check ups and researched on, but would be released later on. Well the idea of them beeing imprisoned in them forever appeared to be absurd,as the subjects would die or have their muscle detoriated. So there had to be a place to let them 'run around' perhaps the sky scraper was devised in such manner to allow their subjects to move freely while keeping them away from the exit. Or perhaps they were specially choosed, because outcasts and these that are betrayed by the system have no home to return to, so they wouldn't have a need to escape from a place that provided care for them, willingly becoming prisoners and subjects to the research done in the darkness of the universe. You gotta love the way I putted it all together for you to read !! But the situation was like that, like a play or a movie ,it was an interesting adventure and I really did enjoy my self a bit despite the dangers it carried. Everyone wants to have one moment like that, scary mysterious were you're thrown into an unussuall event. But what would you do if you're wish suddenly came true ? What would you do if you woken up inside this sky scraper like me here ? Well I walked into it my self, but what about you ? You sleep in you're bed than suddenly you wake up in the one I slept before ,in a foreign unknown teritory wthout anything familiar, or a clear understnable reason for you why you there? believe me this thought is enough for you to tremble ,you would be affraid !! most of us would panic not understanding Im no different,but since I existed for as long as I did , I merelly got adjusted. First I lived my ordinary way as a human than once I died I moved to another level, slowly step by step started achiving great things. Thats why if you want to have adventures , you must understand preperations are necessary ,everything big beguns with small insignificant things. Do not bellittle this story you read or listen too because my way of writing isn't perfect. But its an insignificant start of something that with time will become grand. I suppose all of you think adventures and unnussual things happen just like that,its not true it takes time long preperations,now Ill tell you the truth ! I knew I was walking into a trap. Walking in it to try to make a difference ,I too was warned by Alpha that Galamouth would reappear few days after the first described adventure ended, and under the guidance of Alpha and other God's including Yahweh and Belzebub I started preparing my self ,learning about Galamouth training and becoming ready to make another move ,it took us 75 years but it came. Thats how leanghty booring preperations lead to un-ussual events only than you might face and try yourself remember that !!Great victories begun with small ignored attempt thats the truth ,seed needs to grow in order to become a tree and that needs time, for this the illusion of time was created allowing the seeds to grow and become huge tree's . Dawn was breathing steadilly and now I turned my attention to her.She still continued to glaze around, as she said,"Is its alright for me to burn this place down?"..... „No Dawn we don't want to be noticed,besides why do you want to burn it down ? Tell me Dawn what happened here” I interogated my friend looking at her and smiling. „you can tell me right ?” I asked an looked around wondering will the guards finally show up."I just detest this place so much.." She trail off, looking around. "Someone is coming" She said calmly. „geez you could help me carry her” I replied taking Misa into my arms and looking around „so who is coming here” I asked Dawn wondering whether we will have to hide,fight or will that other person become our ally."Carry misa and go on first, I will catch up later then." She simply shrug and pushed me to move on. „hold on what are you going

to do?" I asked surprised and wondering why she wanted to face, who ever it was alone, looking in her eyes I could see her determination. She really wanted me out of her way, but why was the thing that made me pounder for a while before moving on. She looked back as she saw us walking away. Turning around, to face what was up coming. As a figure started to appear, a guy with long black hair came walking in. He glared at Dawn and chuckled, "What a weak looking girl." he said. Without knowing, what horror he was about to face. She swung her hand, as a big sword appeared. Pointing the tip of the sword to the long hair guy, "You disgust me." She said. While taking a couple of steps forward towards him. The man moved back a bit smirked and his red eyes glowed in a creepy manner, "our master Galamouth calls you" The man replied smirking in a creepy and inhumane manner. She tilted her head, "Who's that?" She said walking even more closer to him. Making the man jump away a bit, "the one who gave you that power!.. Galamouth is the reason all of us are still alive!!" Screamed the man starting to be afraid of Dawn's power seeing the green aura that appeared from her body, we looked at her from a distance, hiding behind one of the tubes. Putting Misa next to a dark computer console its lights glowing in red and pink lights. She simply chuckled and started to laugh, "What makes you think that I am apart of you people?" She questioned, drawing the sword and stabbing it into his neck. Smirking, as she pulls the sword out and grabs his neck. Gripping it tighter, as a wide grin crease over her face.

The man growled in agony, "you gotta be!" Yelled in desperation crying from pain as he started vomiting blood, "you have the symbols its all in the symbols" He cried more and used a shockwave that pushed Dawn away making her hit the wall as the man grabbed his throat, "you'll pay for that wrench!" he screamed "But I am not a wrench." she said while moving forward and grabbing his face, smashing it into the wall. "I just happen to be a really evil demon." she added and smashes his head more. She takes out a dagger, turns him around and cuts his stomach open. Twisting and turning her bare hands inside of his stomach and dragging out his long and slimy intestine. I looked at it a bit amused. "what a dangerous girl" My dark persona replied as her ruthlessness got me on making me want to get her and slowly conquer her. Knowing we had some time I wondered if I could have my way. Leaving Misa alone for a moment I walked over to Dawn. "you're starting to interest me" I smirked evilly, "I want you" I felt something taking hold of my spirit. Dawn tilted her head as she tossed the guy body away, poking my forehead. "Are you alright?" she asked, while drawing back her bloody fingers to lick. "yes I'm fine dear ...tell me how old are you?" I asked and brought my head closer to her forehead, "its such a lonely cold place isn't it?" I asked looking into her eyes closely trying to hypnotise her in order to get a hold of her. My perversion was at its high. "Hmm? I am 16 this year, why?" she replied and smiled without knowing what was happening. I slowly pushed my self on her, my senses going wild. Planning to enjoy my self knowing she wouldn't be able to resist. "how about we play a bit" I kissed cheek gently and lovingly wanting to make her one of my women. I had such plans since the beginning and this was an isolated spot. There was no where to escape, the only ones able to interfere were the machines that minded their own business, tending to their subjects which could be the other ones but were unconscious and of course Misa who also was lying unconscious, unless anyone would appear quickly I could have my way with the girl. I wanted to be gentle and playful not violent, her strength would be a good boost to my power, her and Misa could be useful allies or even become my sexual partners that's why I kept them at my side. Noticing that Dawn didn't understand my intentions it delighted me, because I could have my way without any resistance she would only start fighting after the main event happens. I slowly hugged her touching her breasts under her gray cloth. Only now I realized she was naked under it having no clothes. Unlike Misa who wore a witch attire, both of them making me curious, Misa and Dawn were of peculiar races, Misa a sorceress and Dawn a dark demon, but not the traditional style. She wasn't a subcubus but probably a child of one of these secret societies, that sprung all over the galaxy. Its really interesting to play with these kinda people. The Adventure didn't require me to be serious, although the situation was serious, I learned that everything we see is in reality an illusion, all of what happens is merely a game, so its ok to have fun with it instead of taking it whole seriously and falling into despair. After all how many times I failed and how many times I succeeded. After being through so much different events I learned to accept

both my strenghts and my limitations. If there's something to achieve in this mess than I should look for it is what I thought. Yes after suffering death and realizing it doesn't end my existence, after yng billion times already and yet beeing able to exist on a dfferen't plane. I realized living is like watching television when one movie ends I turn on the next one. Existence of the ones who comprehended the truth is like that as well, one booring life ends we can move on to something more interesting, therefore bounding ourselves to the material plane and the system as the only way of existing is an idiocy, existence was before society and will continue if societies dies ,for existence and lives dosen't limit itself to us and our way of living, there are other beeings and species in the vast universe and dimensions and the too continue to exist. So if we feel uncomfortable with this way, we can try another way. Change the system or build an enclave share the wisdom that resides in our hearth. This is the true purpose of culture and love ,true love can be anything even something hideous as rape can be a sign of love, because of fear humans and even some demons limit themselves by cretinmg oppressive laws. Greed rules because of fear ,sometimes people are afraid of true relationships not everywhere o actually nowhere and in no case law should be biding ,instead falling to ones insticts and natural way should be preffered ,as long as we can understand the dark ways of our soul, and what we are and accept that some part of our existence may appear disgusting ,however its only a label the so called civilised society gives it, sometimes people in their ignorance judge to quickly theres a difference in every situation. Even if it looks similiar it may appear diffent ,to much tragedies are created by rigoristic laws and oppression and this won't change. Adleast its not possible for humans to understand it so quickly but once they die they realize that what they fear is the only reason holding them back. If people you the readers realize that everything you hold value including keeping a face will eventually dissapear as you're mortal and need to die than ask yourself, why keep yourself from having fun, for whom you shall store this money,prestigue. I as a human was a bit like you guys too, but than I realized that its worth nothin, yet as long as I lived as a human was alway trying to get possession of the material world, and despite I cursed God for it he gived me very little of it just to barelly survive. But he granted me knowlede of what I can become and despite me not beeing entirely sure will the these things imagened finally happen. Slowly I made it into reality gaining true treasure and the right to take possession of everything I desire. Not just from the world I was born but from entire existence, even written or created characters could become real and mine. I could posses everyone that died, but too a certain limits also these that lived, one condition was that they must be just like ,outcasted and unnecessary in their worlds, beeings that system thrown away like trash. Than its ok for me to take them and make them mine, also these that created to much sorrow and too much evil could be mine as punishment for their sins. In case of ordinary or the righteous than the condition was their consent but not in all cases if I for examle would hurt a good person by my actions than its best I do nothing. Just as all immortals and demons Im forbidden to interfere with third rated worlds and ancient civilisations too much. Because there people cannot defend themselves against demons thats why we must step in and disciplinate ones breaking the rules. I slowly started touching Dawn's body gently undressing my lower parts to ensure freedom of movement and hugged her slowly. Kissing her neck. Meanwhile Misa slowly wooken up, beeing lured by some visions that were most likelly created by the Dark Lord himself, she looks at the shining moon ...with her snow white face and her bloody red eyes...she came closer to one person...and then she bite him....she smiles evilly and continue looks at the beautiful shine velvet moon. The vision made her lunatical and attack computer table as she slowly bit it, sucking thinking it was a person. The floor switched colors from grey to orange, as I not noticing slowly wanted to make my way with Dawn, Misa was surrounded by a blue aura trapped in an illusion spell. Her eyes red or orange and hair covered in somekinda dark web, something took control over her. Back to me and Dawn, She tilted her head, wondering what was I doing. Confused, she gently lied on the orange floor, the floor was interesting as it started showing symbols, I gently took of her cloths ahed my self on her kissing her breast ,gently inserting my dick inside her pussy making her scream. Enjoying the softness of her dark skin playing with her beautifull pink hair, enjoying true sexuall ambrosia, the forbidden and immortal fruit that wasn't allowed for anyone, true pleasure disqusted by the whores of the system was mine. She startled a little

and try to push me away, but I went deeper doing something that could get me in trouble if I dealt with the ones that belong to the system, but could still be troublesome if the greedy whores decided that, I was mad with my lust and pushed my self hurting the girl a bit as my essence broken inside her barriers making her bleed a bit as I moaned in extasy enjoying the hideous thing I made to her. The egyptian like symbols appeared on the green floor as blue steam filled the lab, grey machines monitored the room, looking like bugs that filled the area, sending out blue rays that were invisible swarming over to Misa which was being taken over by something, I screamed in pleasure as a bit of blood touched the yellow this time floor, perhaps it being a catalyst of certain events that was to take place, as the red blood was sucked into the floor, strange symbols appearing on the floor as the blood was analysed alongside my semen, a really disgusting event. But this was a palace of evil after all. Her eyes widen as I thrust more into her, she bite her lower lips while letting out a slight scream. Tears brimmed at the side of eyes, her vision became blur. I ended it swiftly and hugged her gently after realising a bit how terrible this was to her. Now I was sorry I couldn't understand what took over me to make me so obsessed, this wasn't the first time I was like that, but this time it wasn't coincidence it was the same with Dawn when she killed that man, the machines went back to the one that was above us, the floor became grey. „I'm sorry” I replied. Only Misa remained possessed. Engulfed in green and grey current, her face twisted as we looked at her with horror. Whirlpools of darkness surrounded her pale hands as yellow energy sparkles formed lightings in them. Dawn stared at her and looking back at me, begging that I help her new friend. She felt a tug in her heart as she saw Misa up ahead being held on. Dawn got herself up from the floor and pull on her clothes. She ran towards Misa and tries to help her. Misa was growling not being able to regain who she was. Her eyes glowing in blue eyes screaming terribly as something or someone took hold of her soul. Dawn ran even closer to Misa, while pulling her away from me. She hug on to Misa hoping that she would wake up. Misa was going berserk her mind was crazy, her thoughts rushing towards undescrible centers. Dawn looked at me, not knowing what to do. I slowly dressed my self and smirked „my my this place is full of interesting events isn't it Lord of Darkness Galamouth” I answered to the red eyed Misa making her smirk „I complement your ability to see truth self proclaimed count of Chaos its been a while” Misa possessed answered and bowed down in a mocking manner „please forgive my inability to meet with you in person but as you see I'm busy at the moment, I invite you to join me above” Misa or more exactly Galamouth who controlled her replied. „and what is it that you're so busy with lord ?” I asked the question hoping to get some answers „You see the art of creation and destruction isn't necessary two things, in truth !! if you want to destroy first you must create and if you want to create first you must destroy that is change, to free mankind from itself we must first get rid of the illusion it has created and start from a new fresh perspective” Answered Galamouth using Misa voice walking forward as the floor on which we were standing started glowing red brightly blood red and egyptians symbols appeared, the symbols shown ancient faraons and priests, pyramids and God's eye that watched from above and other dimensions. Dawn simply sat down on the floor as she pops out some popcorn to eat. While she continues to see the 'show' in front of her. Surprising both of us with this act „hey I want some popcorn too !!” I whined a bit hoping to get some from Dawn, she herself was surrounded by the strange symbols while Misa controlled by Galamouth growled a bit and smirked „I would advice not to underestimate the danger of this situation, I'm also thankful for your DNA we gathered just now it will benefit my ambition” Galamouth replied using Misa looking amused thought Misa eyes at the hilarious situation that was created in front of him. Dawn appeared behind me as she shook the popcorn. "You want it? Come and get it firstttt." She trailed off while chuckling. I looked at her and then looked at Misa „hey wait what about Misa and that lunatic !!” I yelled to her as Misa controlled by Galamouth walked behind me „who do you call a lunatic ?” Asked Galamouth thought Misa „Just some guy that controls a weak girl and plans total destruction I wonder do you know him ?” I teased the Mad Lord a little bit making him smile thought Misa „and this comes from a guy that calls himself the count of chaos a little that is rightfully mine and rapes every female he can lay his eyes on ?” Asked Galamouth making me blush „ey that's different ..well atleast I'm not waging a war that will kill billions !” I replied

„Well straightening you're facts Im not doing that also, Im using the weak minded greedy fools of a certain corporation for this task ,but do not worry once they realize my true purpose they will tremble at the high of my betrayal, corruption is a usefull tool money has decieved them and it shall lead them to their death” Galamouth replied using Misa's voice.Dawn tilted her head as she approached Misa and pokes her forehead, "Ne~ Let my friend go." Galamouth looked at her smiling and laughing „let you go, but you all belong to me ! as a part of my ambition tools or pawns that are used to benefit everything I produce ,you're freedom is designed by me ,you can only fill the roles I have foreseen. Originally I wanted to reclaim both of you ,but I realized that letting you do as you please might be more beneficial to the whole plan, do as you wish child you still cannot escape you're fate ! this is you're freedom” Replied Galamouth using Misa voice walking between us and looking at the research ,medical center made for him,he walked over to a huge super computer that was of an size of three huge closets,the computer was in the shape of a huge crystal,which was connected to the floor ,it was this computer that controlled the whole room,being in the near of the tubes in the middle of them connected creating a organic structure. Galamouth who still controlled Misa touched the small silver pipes and cables that discreetly connected the tubes to each other and the crystal like super computer ,petting them and looking at us „only the best achievements of science can benefit my ambition, look at the combination magic and science created its something that was un-imaginable back in Poland” Galamouth replied kissing the silver pipes, making me shocked wondering how he knew about Poland that was a bit un-expected „How do you know about Poland ? Are you Polish” I asked looking at Misa that was controlled by Galamouth,she smiled „Yes were breathe my friend we come from the same people ,I was adopted by you're kind and given shelter in Poland but at that time Poland was no more, it was the time of partitions approximately 200 years before you were born, you're world and mine world might have been different but we share the knowledge ,the knowledge of truth only one that read Polish Literature and is of Polish origin can gather,even among our brethren were two of a kind destined to take hold and shape the future, only by realizing the world of ancients by using the thought way devised by the Poles one can truly comprehend the world, but once you know the truth its no surprise you feel dissapointed and devoted all your existence to raping girls,but why waste it ,if you're lost Blaze you should have joined me and my ambition I shall triumph over God and make him my toy, a fitting fate for something as sick and retarded” Explained Galamouth as I observed him not saying anything,prefering to let him speak first as this enabled me to know more about what was going on here. „you make God a toy ? now thats a retarded plan ,tell me is you're ambition to humiliate God ?is that what you're trying to do ? Well you only succeeded at humiliating yourself, nothing happens without the consent of God ,you got this far by the simple fact he or more exactly it allowed you , its you who are a toy in God's hands you're darkness sorrow and ambitions are all being used draining themselves until they disappear” I explained slowly looking at him as he looked at me a bit sorrowly, his sorrow was visible even in Misa eyes „you're still a fool ,you think this being is almighty observe how I shall make it tremble, its only thanks to my deceptions that I got this far, God is a fool he will notice it when I allow it, IM SUPERIOR TO GOD!!!” screamed Galamouth ending his speech „ you're superior to God in nothing! were its creations its impossible, you shouldn't even desire that power its too much!! be fine with what you have and you will be given more with time !!” I yelled to Galamouth trying to make the mad Lord understand knowing that atleast for now I will be mocked. „Always a servant never a master !this is a key difference , I shan't serve no one, nothing !!!all shall serve my will and be under my domain this is my fate that will be written into existence by my self,unlike you Blaze I shall use my full potential !!!” Replied Galamouth trying to proclaim his mad ambitions once again, as we both looked at Misa wondering how long this circus will last and when will Galamouth leave her body ,to concentrate on his mad plans.Dawn yawned and stared at us. „It looks like little Dawn isn't too interested in you're rant” I replied to Galamouth making him smile and laugh „did you honestly think she would understand our discussion?” He asked laughing and looked at the crystal computer walking towards it,touching and embracing its glass structure „This is true perfection !!!” Galamouth embraced the computer using Misa's tiny body.Dawn approached Galamouth who was possessing Misa body, as she touches the

computer too. "Whats this trash, weird whatever lord thats in Misa body." she said while glaring. „ah my child how to explain true perfection using words fit to you're tiny mind” He answered and looking at the glass structure, making red energy currents push themselves into the glass painting symbols of a cup, two human symbols one lying in something appearing to be a mud and the other standing above him, the two were one and the same. This was suppose to describe Galamouth's triumph but could also tell about his demise as well the crystal howled in a glass sound as it changed colors in the entire room, changing the temperature as it started to get hot a bit. Galamouth using Misa's body turned her head to me „I thought I could warm this place up” smirking and smiling as he imputed commands into the crystal „be carefull Dawn he's up to something possibly” I warned Dawn and carefully observed the environment. She used her fist, as she swung it forward trying to smash the computer, making Galamouth laugh „thats not enough to break it, brute force won't achieve anything, I had it constructed from the most sturdiest crystal ever found, Alaquinium the mineral from the planet Catiopeia in the northern galaxy of seienna near the Asturian star border under the Corneian Empire in the Naka taka hemisphere.” Said Galamouth smirking at Dawn. "I don't give a damn." She replied as she placed her hand on the surface of the computer. As her hand slowly sank in, "Maybe I can pull something inside." she said. Galamouth looked at her smirking „as you try that you'll be slowly pushed inside and probably consumed by the computer” he laughed a bit making me come closer „Dawn everything all right ?” I asked looking concerned „my my what an chevalier” Teased Galamouth enjoying his superiority. She pushed her hand deeper inside the computer, and looked at me " I am perfectly alright and its kinda fun." she said bluntly. „well really ?” I asked a bit worried „ you need not to worry about you're little friend you see her hand is merely analyzed to collect further DNA samples that will be used by me ,she was generous to submit her hand into the analysis herself, this only proves it Blaze ! thats her destiny she is like the others merely kept alive to further my knowledge about things” Said Galamouth boasting „ about what things ?” I asked surprised. „about us and the universe all things small and big in this world everything we seek is inside us, we only need tools to open the locked truth” Galamouth answered my question. "What makes you think that you made me, ah there's something inside." she said while drawing out her hands. As she drew out a uneven gem, while glazing at it. „thats amazing Dawn you retrieved it so swiftly now give it to me the Un-relia gem is a necessary component for the aurelia spell Im working on” Galamouth explained walking towards Dawn „ You see it can only be created from the blood of special race of ancient demons ,their DNA was hard to obtain and from that DNA Dawn was created , my greatest treasure” Exalted Galamouth madly laughing as he tried to persuade Dawn to hand over the gem to him. Dawn smiled, holding the gem up as she crushes it into pieces and it slowly vanished into fine ashes that was blown away. "Dream on something Lord." she said still smiling. Galamouth walked away growling and yelling „What have you done !!! I told you to hand it over !!” He yelled as a huge lightning hit Dawn burning her badly as I looked at it shocked and quickly jumped to heal her. He walked over to the tubes looking at his subjects „oh Dawn don't you understand how badly I need the Un-relia stone to finish the next step of my grand desire, try to do a better job a true stone couldn't be crushed like that ,and if you can't do a proper un-relia stone than you're useless and all useless things must perish, do you understand bring me a proper stone !!!” Yelled Galamouth „she's not doing anything !” I yelled towards Galamouth „you stay out of it Blaze ! there will be time to deal with you later when entertainment will be in order” Galamouth replied. She saw the lightning appear as she held her hand up to block it. Which has burned really badly, she licks it as it starts to heal up quickly. " I am alright Blaze, this is fun~ What a weak lightning something Lord." she chuckled. "Besides, who says thats not the real stone. It could be you know~" she said more seriously. Galamouth growled a bit and smirked „yes I have no doubt it was the stone but its composition was weak ,well you are a weak useless child just like that lightning I used you're aren't capable in making it, what a pathetic being” he growled and looked at his subject trying to get Dawn mad a bit. "Really? Thats sad to hear so, but then again could you leave my friends body. It really looks weird when she talks in such a weird voice." she said while taking out a sweet. He glomped at her and walked over „why don't we make a deal you give me a proper gem and Ill leave

her alone ?" Galamouth replied staring into her eyes. „all you need to do is to put your hand in that computer concentrate create a perfect gem and hand it over to me and I shall disappear from Misa's body" Galamouth added trying to force her to give him what he wanted. "How about try making it yourself then, the so called Great Lordddd." she grinned. „Dawn he said that already only your blood can create it" I replied looking at them. "want me to kill Misa ? Because there's a probability I could recreate it by sacrificing this body and its owner" Galamouth chuckled replying to Dawn. „damn if that was an option I could simply get rid of him, but he has to use someone else's body" I replied annoyed. „compared to my true powers you wouldn't even stand a chance Blaze, oh don't worry we will get to that part soon enough" Galamouth answered. "Tch, your weak " she said, while touching the computer once again as her hand sinks in. „what do you mean weak ?" I asked her looking at the tubes and the room. She used her free hand and points to the Lord. "That weak something lord" she said and drew out her hand from the computer holding on to a brightly coloured gem.

„Wonderful Dawn now give it to me !!" Galamouth yelled in ecstasy „but first test it try to break it let us see if that's truly it" Commanded Galamouth „if she breaks it then what's the point of her making it in the first place" I asked Galamouth. „the true Un-reliable stone is one of the hardest substance's ever made it won't be destroyed" Galamouth replied. She sighed as she held on tightly to the gem, but it still doesn't break. "Here stupid something Lord." She mumbles and tossed the gem to the Lord. Galamouth caught the gem „wonderful !! White Master come to me !!" Galamouth screamed, the room became incredibly bright and the old man dressed in white with a huge beard touching the blue floor walked over to Misa possessed by Galamouth as she gave the gem to White Master „Wonderfully done my master" White Master complimented „Go prepare the stage for my development !" Galamouth replied as White Master slowly disappeared „I'm grateful for your assistance we shall continue this another time I shall be expecting you Blaze come and find me!!" He spoke to us as a dark redish aura left Misa's body like steam, making Misa faint again as I caught her while the room, became darker a bit. Signifying Galamouth's departure we were alone „well well I didn't expect to meet with the guy so soon" I said looking at Dawn. "That dude Lord is stupid" Dawn said and laughs. „Maybe or maybe not, I would call that insanity not stupidity, but he's the one that made you and yet you defy him, I wonder why" I walked up to Dawn looking around. "Marks can be made up, just so you know." Dawn replied while yawning. „well seriously ? Than who are you ? How did you get here ?" I asked looking at her thinking the girl distorted her view of reality a bit which wasn't bad to me. "I could be someone, someone that wasn't suppose to be here, and I am not mental." she replied. I watched her and smiled „so you're telling me you're a spy ? ok whom do you work for?" I teasingly started to interrogate her. "For no one?" she said while glaring. „ok and how you got here ?" I asked smiling. Wondering what the girl's response would be, entertained or at least amused by her behavior. „Still she could have told me the truth. If that's the case" I thought „than what's exactly going on" I continued to wonder. The pressure was monitored by special computer systems located all over the giant lab, rays of multicolored lights were used as inputs of commands instead of traditional touch screens or keyboards, making the whole programming faster as the whole procedure was already preset and replayed all over again, a simple way to avoid programming and monitoring the same values, that never changed. The whole structure was a part of this divine program, a massive combination of different functions that were to distort reality and fulfill Galamouth's ambition. But why did his mad spell require a structure that resembled a huge sky scraper, why did he install this all into a space that was suppose to serve the sphere of commerce ? Perhaps because of the main reason they were created for, the essence of this was felt everywhere. The other reason could be more pragmatic, the sky scraper was abandoned which meant there was no jurisdiction, no one to interfere with his activities, in fact the Systems whores preferred to keep away from the places, people and demons they ruined. It was because of this essence, this greed which allowed Galamouth's darkness to spread from this place so easily. This darkness created by the system which engulfed Galamouth in eternal sorrow and pain, was caused by ignorance and stupidity. Wise could and can clearly see through deceptions created by these ugly pig like whores. For the wise don't pretend to cover the truth in the name of politeness or

morality but instead are open to criticize decay in every form. Not caring whether its happening above or below open to cherish beauty not caring whether it comes from above or below, only system whores thought target above discarding these that are below, which actually serves our purpose as it atleast allows us to be free and enjoy some limited happiness, instead of being subjugated into the so called 'rat race'. Even agony and mortal sickness is more pleasant below than above, because being free we atleast have the right to choose what we do until our time is up. That's why Outcasts don't fear bad fate and chains system whores use to oppress them, they are already used to this danger and treat it as a part of their lives, while the system whores put in the same conditions would plunge into despair. This was true especially with Galamouth's children, they didn't fear Galamouth cause they got used to him, the dangers he created and his mad ambitions. For the children it was normal, he was normal and probably even kind because of this incredible strength. Galamouth wasn't weak and therefore had no reason to fear, the little children or other beings that inhabited or choosed to inhabit this place, using their abilities in the same manner a good farmer uses animals to get food. This Sky scraper was Galamouth's farm, where Children and other beings like animals were used to provide for Galamouth's mad ambitions and all his needs, this structure served only this purpose. With all its precise technology that implemented into its walls, witnessed by me and Dawn while waking through the laboratory, cloefully observing the room, a futuristic cabin with different chemicals in small bottles was located near the hall way on the other side, as we neared to the other exit. Having come from the other side through the entire room, we noticed silver stairs, with shiny green edges leading upwards. The futuristic cabin was a combination of an classical cabin design and silver computer unit. In fact the cabin was a very huge and massive computer unit, that stored different potions, and chemical substances. Which could be obtained only with permission. All arranged in ideal order by silver blue classical design robotic hands, and protected with a strong transparent glass like structure, which even demons couldn't break. Egyptian like symbols appears on the glass making it also have a displayer function, greeting us and awaiting a certain combination that would allow us access to these substances. The code which we of course didn't know. These substances were used for Galamouth's mad ambitions, the violet, blue and rainbow colored substances were either, drugs or magical combinations necessary for certain events to transpire. Artificial food, and blood substances included. A variety of mixtures only Galamouth and designated servants knew of, and knew how to use them. The Golden shelves didn't contain only liquid potions, we could also notice solid substances and materials, like artificial or natural skin that was grown in special boxes, that were themselves special computer units that controlled pressure and growth of the microorganism and cells inside the skin, other rectangular bottles contain brown fats used in cooking and chemistry. Green tea leaves, some grains I couldn't identify. Acids, deadly poisons. Dead animals in bottles kept for the purpose of analysing them through dissection, or perhaps even for the purpose of reviving them. The shelves glown in brightly yellow light. We heard someone coming down the stairs and suddenly a girl entered the room walking down the silver stairs. The girl stopped walking noticing me with Dawn. She had blonde hair and blue eyes. Her eyes hypnotised me quickly. Making Dawn grin "long time no see Arua, you look so beautiful". She smiled. Making Arua slowly and confidently walk over to Dawn's side replying "well you are so kind, Dawn". She looked at me trapped in her eye magic not being able to do anything making her smile naughtily and releasing me "hello mister, who are you? It first time i see you around. Are you her boyfriend?" she continued smiling naughty. Making me look at her a bit bewildered not knowing with whom or what we were dealing "no, I'm not. " I replied a bit casually looking at the strange girl knowing, that whatever is happening will reveal itself soon. "oh,,ok then let me introduce myself. My name is Arua. Nice to meet you, Blaze Master" Arua grinned, making me surprised, " why,,why did u knew my name?". Dawn laughed, "silly Blaze,,you had been hypnotised by Arua eyes. That's how she can look everything from your soul. Oh Arua, you are forgetting telling him that you are spirit holder. ", "well, he knew it a second ago" I looked at her with interest ,,ah so you're a spirit holder ey ? tell me Dawn why ain't I suprised, Galamouth gathers all sorts for his mad ambitions" I merely sighted bowing in respect to Arua ,,ah maybe you could help us with Misa, Galamouth putted some sort of spell on her and we can't wake

her up" I explained showing Misa to Arua hoping she could find a way to wake up our sleeping princess. Arua looked very angry. "what did he want from misa? Or maybe with u Dawn". Arua looked at me with a glance that made me tremble, she was controlling the situation now "can u explain to me?". I just nervously laughed, "you are spirit holder aren't you, why can't you peak in my soul again?". Arua came closer to Misa, kneeling down and touching her chest "well, you lied to me, Blaze! You try to escape from my reach. But, you are so silly, you already trapped with my eyes" she explained while touching Misa. Gently waving her hands and Soon, Misa began to wake up. "hello, misa. How is your day? Feeling bad after Galamouth controlled your body, heh?" Arua asked and answered her question as Misa still felt dizzy and incredibly weak, she was just able to give a faint smile to Arua. "well,, i think you're ok " Dawn and me neared closer looking at our new comer while me observed the room as well "she is not feeling good. Just let her have some rest" Arua advised Dawn. „rest isn't something we can afford" I looked at her closely „you know that weird encounters aren't un-common here right? I've been here for a while" I sighed breathing a bit „so do you mind me asking? Who are you and what is your purpose here?" I looked seriously at Arua knowing she would give me answers, to some questions. "I had told you, that I'm Arua. And the purpose I'm here? I dunno. I just want to come here. " Arua answered. "I just sensed Galamouth here. So I just coming" Making me look at her, under the impression that she didn't know much "but you are a spirit holder. Can't you trap his soul". I teased her making Arua laughing "no. I can't. He always escape from my hypnosis. When I tried to, he already controlled me" Arua answered my question looking sadly at me and a bit worried. I knew the girl was up to something but she didn't appear to be dangerous. This situation as dangerous thought, Galamouth needed to be stopped. But on the other hand I understood his actions were futile, was there anything he could accomplish, life in this realm is more of a game you get stats, new levels. fight evil villains that always have a twisted plan. nothing out of the ordinary a simple boring reality seen from my perspective. should I be afraid now? Why? this was exactly what I wanted. I lived my dream, seriously I should be happy but was I? I learned that life doesn't need adventures and spectacular events to be happy, yet I don't mind them once in a while, but instead should be simple easy and pleasant. Sometimes it's best to stay exactly where you are. Sometimes there's no need to be arrogant and instead requires patience and a more humble approach. If we deserve the reward it will come to us, so of course I resolved myself to following my own path, taking only what I can. Adopting this I suddenly found myself grasping things that I didn't know were possible to grasp. Instead of chasing I merely followed my actions resulted in the things that would normally get away from my reach, coming to me of their own accord. Following a path of a nobody I became everything I wanted as a result of having these things come to me as a result of others actions. Not necessarily directed at my benefit or well being but instead simply resulting in my well being as a result of others actions. Suddenly a red wolf appeared coming from the wall. He came to Arua. Making Arua look so worried "sorry. I must go now. Next time we meet, I'll give u some information about Galamouth" Arua quickly said and was gone with the red wolf, disappearing in mid air, making me wonder why she was so afraid „well she's an odd one isn't she?" I asked Dawn. Dawn shrugged and said, "I am bored." Making me look at her weirdly „huh after all that happened you're bored?" I asked my friend „Seriously look around yourself for once" I added. "Just a lady appear and disappear with a wolf, nothing much." she replied back. „ah really well it appears that lady is your friend, oh never mind it would be natural for you to assume all of it is normal, I guess it depends on the point of view what excites me might be boring for you" I replied thinking about it. „it makes one think about what excitement really is, is it just a emotion we feel? often new things appear exciting at first but when appearing to many times they get boring, why can't we always be positive and excited. To just be content with what we have? Why do we get bored with these things that are in our possession? what is it that pushes us to want more and have dreams? Is it Arrogance?" I asked a serious question not hoping for an answer but curious of what Dawn would say. She glanced at me and look at the walls. "Differ to many." She said „Well atleast there's no banking whores" I replied sighting remembering an unpleasant event. "Banking whores?" she asked. I looked at her smiling „lucky you who have never meet the system whores that rule over people money, these monsters decide about human fate are

worser than Galamouth and his mad scheme, well if Galamouth plan would mean killing them all than Im on his side, who knows how much its all worth I hope he slaughters them all and make them tremble in fear” I replied looking at the stairs and took Misa 's hand helping her to stand up and we slowly moved forward. Dawn just simply nodded her head and follow behind me, smiling and obviously thinking of something, we walked on the silver stairs looking at the purple walls that appeared to be made of some marble like substance the purple was shining like in these classic anime series I used to watch. She yawned while grabbing some sweets from her pocket and quickly pops some into her mouth. While I was watching Misa and wondering whether she felt all right, the walls made a peculiar sound that made me interested. Dawn tilted her head glazing around the enclosure surrounding. This sound could be described as a mixture of metallic sound waves, like from whales that called to one another. The stairway felt alive which made the experience a bit weird, giving out a chilling atmosphere. Stairs shined in different colors obviously being computer units that communicated with each other using color frequencies and light as the conductor, containing a sensor, transmitter and inputter in its atoms a feat of molecular engineering that was hard to describe. Nano technology made it easy to create and combined with dark crafts this structure became an instrument of Galamouth's ambitions connected to him at all time through all senses, we were inside Galamouth's very structure and all represented his mind and heart. Everything constructed here was a mirror of his soul and could become a gateway to his mind, but also everything was made to protect its creator and could be used to harm us, an ideal secluded world that turned around its creator. That's why Galamouth had no need for guards or escape, everyone attacking him would find themselves lured into a deadly trap because here Galamouth was the only one that could decide. My earlier emotions were no coincidence, my rape was well planned and executed, both me and Dawn could lose ourselves in it and that was its real power, making it the most deadliest weapon ever constructed. In wars often the main objective is to confuse your enemy, this structure however allowed Galamouth to control and decide our next steps, it was up to him to decide where and when we die, leave or meet him and only few could oppose this like the girl that was in the other place walking over the edge of a ravine with this red wolf. Someone came out quickly from the shadows behind Arua. "it is you? Dietrich?". The dark shadows formed into a more human appearance of a boy with golden hair wickedly smiling "well, long time no see." Dietrich replied smirking in a very menacing manner as they both stood in another dimension created in this skyscraper, making Arua glare at him "what do you want from me?" she replied a bit worried, while Dietrich laughed in a creepy manner "Galamouth calling you. Our lord wants you to come back, for something. Maybe he knows that you had just met Blaze before you were supposed to meet him." The boy replied in an intimidating manner, Dietrich obviously enjoyed his menacing superiority over the young and inexperienced Arua making the red wolf step in the fit of rage obviously trying to protect Arua from such rude behaviour. "oh, just shut your mouth stupid wolf!" Dietrich screamed a bit worried the wolf didn't back down away from him.. Arua petted red wolf's head. Smiling at Dietrich fear feeling a bit better with her companion at her side "good. You better bite Dietrich !!" Arua advised her red wolf. and continued to explain her situation to Dietrich that looked at her angrily "well I sensed Galamouth there. So I came, but I don't know that Blaze is in there. I'll see Galamouth later. Just give me a minute". she answered making Dietrich turn back to his shadow form, "yeah, whatever" he exorted and shortly after ran away from the red wolf. Arua stayed and breathed out calmly sighting smiling to her red wolf, "hey, red wolf, who can I believe Blaze's soul is so kind. But Galamouth the one who raised me." she asked the question looking sadly. „Dietrich wants a bloody fight more than both Galamouth and Blaze, but Blaze isn't the one that murdered Aya!! Galamouth lied to you when he told you that ” The wolf spoke into Arua's mind. While the girl saddened gently petted the wolf, looking into the distance as the wolf licked her hand „Blaze Master is a kind person tell him what happened to you, maybe he can save you!” The wolf replied and looked at Arua's face. "why don't we check it out?" Arua smiled naughtily. "what do you try, Arua? don't try to betray Galamouth now!!" the red wolf continued to talk in Arua's mind visibly concerned over her actions as she smirked replying telepathically "well, I would like to. let's make some noise." Arua commanded and stood up walking with the red wolf. she found me in the

outside coming out from the shadows appearing above. Misa and Dawn busy with themselves didn't pay much attention to what was going to happen in this stairway corridor "it would be very simple, heh?" Arua smiled as the walls shined brightly yellow and the stairs metamorphed into another dimension shocking me and my comrades as we found ourselves standing in a forest full of huge tall strong trees, the skies were dark full of shines and above three red planets acting as these worlds moons forming a triangle I looked around and noticed Arua behind us standing on the light brown ground. "what are you up to now?" I asked turning my self to Arua. "I'm not one but two". She answered standing not answering my question and making me shocked because it looked like this girl and her red wolf would become my next opponents "then, because you already figure me out, I'll make some noise with you" Arua replied making me even more confused. "what?" I looked at her totally confused „so you really plan to face us don't ya" I quickly added trying to grasp the situation "fire storm!!" Arua screamed as the red wolf rushed raging because he was called in battle to active the power of a spirit „we must call the full name of the spirit"..... "Blaze, let's have a battle. show me your power" Arua grinned while the red wolf came closer to me "the ring!" Arua screamed and thrown a ring and the red wolf raging again thrown out redish flames encircling the area trapping me "let's begin" Arua smirked standing confidently as I quickly appeared behind her and stabbed her with my hands in the back thinking that I killed her ripping out her hearth as Arua's body fallen lifelessly into the ground making me squish the hearth in my bloody hands watching her die „way ahead of you dear, what a pity you could have just stayed alive" I sighted trying to walk away looking at the flames and realising I can't get out, I turned my attention at the wolf „it seems I must kill her pet too, wish the dark lord made it worth while" I sighted again thinking I won. The red wolf walked over to me growling as it slowly metamorphed into a red haired and red eyes man. "she already told you that her not one but two" He replied smirking with an annoying superiority as Arua's body became dust. "what?" I replied looking surprised. "are you thinking that u won?" The red haired wolfman replied as I could hear Arua somewhere behind me there was Arua sound, she was standing all right as if nothing happened while I rushed back trying to hit her making her laugh as she evaporated „damn !" I yelled and rushed to attack the red haired wolfman but he easily and swiftly avoided my speed punches going back few steps making me fall on my face, and very angry as I had to get up. Arua merely mocked me as I looked at them both angry whipping the dust from my cloths looking at her who felt so superior "blaze, u don't get it heh?? u already trapped with our illusion combination" She then replied continuing to mock me as I looked at her suprised "illusion ? is that all you can do what a cowardly technique" I replied but she was merely smiling mockingly "no! I'm not! Its my battle style with fire storm. But you are so silly...my illusion still level why cant you escape from the flame ring? are you weak?"..I walked over smiling as my red eyes glown „weak ? very well I'll show you my true power distortion !!" I screamed as black cracks appeared on the ring making her illusion fade away slowly disintegrating into air as I looked smiling „what now?" I asked hoping the serious battle would begun now, making Arua laugh mockingly again as I realised that this wouldn't be over easily „you are wrong" she replied looking at me with a bit serious expression, while around us the the ring particle become ring again. "let's continue with level 2" she replied as I looked at her annoyed „so are you lanning do something actually ? and what about your promise about giving me information on Galamouth ?" I asked looking at her and preparing myself to battle. "i'll give the information. But u must give me some information" She finally replied suprising me a bit as we looked at each other standing in a standstill „so you're re ready to talk eh" I replied smirking and looked around as the flame ring broke into tiny orange pieces making an interesting short spectacle while the tiny powder morphed and became a rope that suddenly tied me up , making me scream from anguish "give me the thruth then i'll let you go! u cant lie to me. That rope will tell me everything. Then let's see some vision with me" She replied as suddenly everything became dark and we found ourselves in a very ancient surrounding, dark grey walls with huge windows and a green or yellow light created by dyffused sun light, these were castle walls and we suddenly found ourselves inside an ancient castle, standing on the green marble floor inside the Baravan castle , near the walls two girls dressed in a blue and violet attires ,one part dresses made

from a delicate silk like material. One of the girls was definitely Arua but I was surprised to find out that she had a twin. "did you know her?" she finally asked me as I looked around noticing some old paintings but not being able to both enjoy them and collect information as the girl quickly interrupted me in this by her tightening orange flame rope. "No I never meet her its my first time here" I replied looking into her eyes wondering what exactly this was all about "who is she?" I replied a bit shocked. Making her smile a bit warmly as she knew I was honest, the rope compelled me to tell only the truth "who do you think is she?". she asked flirting with me a bit as I looked at the painting and noticed something interesting on it but turned my attention to her once she pulled the rope forcing an answer on me „its your sister?". I asked hesitantly wondering why she asked me about her thought I never saw her before, she intrigued me along with this surrounding which I was trying to decipher and understand both its meaning and where it was located, I knew this vision won't last long so I tried to memorize everything I could see like the old brown chair placed near the wall and the two girls playing in one corner near some entrance. even the fact both were walking without shoes was important to me as Arua replied to me "yes. Did you know her? Had you met her?". She asked as I felt more pain being squished by the rope, trying to figure out how to get free I sent some lightnings at her thought the rope but she made them go back at me. " Its the first time I saw her!!" I replied not enjoying this situation wondering why my powers didn't work on the rope, up to this moment I thought I had an advantage in this battle not suspecting she could change her illusions into something more useful while Arua herself looked at the rope. The rope was no different. "then, did you kill her at the battle?" she asked as I looked at her surprised „No I haven't you're turn tell me about this place, and let me go ! how on earth did you create something as that powerful with your skills ?" I asked wondering could I use my power to rip the rope apart, this was truly a desperate situation. "u cannot escape, blaze. Not now. Later, i promise. About my skill because I given a power from Galamouth long ago, and also because my training in battle. Its a power of soul. People who have a powerful soul can make a brilliant illusion. But people that use so much illusion have a fragile body. I don't know when my time last. About this place, its was my home. I born here. Grow up here and raised by Galamouth here" She explained as I looked at her interested in what will she do no „ what do you plan to do with me than ? tell me what did Galamouth plan to do in this castle ? and one more thing that golden haired lady who is she ?" I asked surprised, mesmerized a bit by a beautiful woman painted on the painting she had golden hair, and golden eyes, wore a beautiful baroque silver green dress, her figure was shown just to her breast that were covered by the dress, she held a cup with skull engraved on it, the green cup contained either wine or blood. The woman looked sad her skin looked a bit pale and the background of the painting was purple. The painting was decorated with golden frames, and it appeared old and a bit dusty as if forgotten. "I just want to talk to you. " she explained looking straight into my eyes, making me smile "well really aren't you the naughty one" I replied smirking wondering what will this strange girl do now. "I must attack you to make u safe from Dietrich. Galamouth plan is...to use the power of soul people to create something, and I afraid of Dietrich" She explained. „Galamouth plans to end all of existence by erasing God, but thats impossible since everything is connected to it. Well why can't you let me go ?" I asked looking into girls eyes as she looked sadly „so where is she, your sister ?" I asked a bit as the girl appeared very sad. While suddenly Dawn popped out with chips out of nowhere and started munching on them, while offering some to Misa. they were both trying to ignore the situation in front of them obviously. "hey you two what took you ? can you help me get free from her !! ?" I asked yelling at Dawn and Misa hoping they would do something to free me. Dawn merely yawned and walked towards Arua offering her chips. "Here, the chips are more worthwhile than Blaze." Dawn said and smiled mockingly as I looked at her angrily „you traitor !" I yelled but was squished by the rope by Arua as she laughed smiling "well, no one can let you free expect me." She explained walking over to Dawn and Misa "can I have some more ?" She asked Dawn politely smiling making me feel a bit ignored „and what about me ? when will I get some !" I yelled angrily. Then suddenly Dawn used her whole energy gathering a pink redish aura and bombed up the whole illusion distorting it as we returned to the staircase. „were back" I looked surprised noticing the silver pink walls and the red

energy currents going upwards like water in creeks „look below you're feet, this energy what is it ? it goes upward ?” I asked suprised noticing that Im still tied up by the orange flame rope „what the hell why am I still tied up” I asked slowly annoyed. This only made Arua laughed she looked at Dawn and Misa standing three steps below us and replied walking one step down "well,it can broke up even though it was bombed. " She looked at Dawn a little bit angry as she continued "ow my,can you not bombed my castle? I'm lucky because its just illusion" she replied yet again as I looked at the silver green stairs and the red energy currents that were going upward, it seemed the structure was sucking it from somewhere. A swarm of red bats flew throught the corridor and between us , these bats were similiar in construction to the shadow birds Galamouth used, and might as well been his summoners. They were carring white spheres that were full of golden light. Seeing them Arua walked back few steps upwards screaming in panic and in the state of schock didn't remember where she was" oh my God!!! No!! Go away!!!" she yelled terribly frightened with tears falling from her cheeks, she forgot about the need to focus her weapon and the flame rope dissintegrated , untying me as I quickly rushed upstairs trying to run away and follow the bats "thanks God!!and also thanks bats!!" I replied jumping throught schocked Arua in my demonic speed , by passing her and leaving both Dawn and Misa behind. I quickly jumped into another floor and into a floor that looked like some kinda huge tea salon place. Running In my demonic speed following the red bats and the mysterious item they were carrying i didn't notice all of the surrounding. Thought I could notice that this place defiled logic and common sense, dolls and old fashion toys lying everywhere in this huge open space I was stopped by some explosions that gathered in a 10 series attack encircled me creating gray dust. I stopped looking around and wondering why this place appeared schizophrenic a bit,without any logical structure.The floors were golden this time without any magical symbols. Toys lying everywhere ,beeing of every size. I watched how a mechanical old fashion soldier walked slowly towards his destination ,out of nowhere an orange ball appeared and hitted me exploding into my face. From somewhere of this strange room a crazy laughter was heard. The room was heated and white steam fullled the room, making the vision a bit blurry this was a trick to make me confused as I soon forgotten from which way I came and tried walking towards the laughter.Beeing able to look at it closer I could realize that this room was huge. Taking an entire full floor in this complex. Now that my vision was blurred I could only see whats directly in front of me, making me think about the importance of seeing things and vision. Most humans rely on vision treating it as a key sensor, forgetting they can use other senses to engulph into reality. In this enviroment every breaze or a change in temperature had its meaning. But a simple minded human that relies on eyes to see wouldn't notice this. Also blind people use other senses to try to adapt to this ever changing reality. The pressure changed constantly in this structure ,and mechanical soldiers and toys, were scatered everywhere confusing me even more as the girls laughter was heard coming from all over the place. Above me far above I could see victorian like huge golden chandeliers.Suddenly I noticed a little girl jumping on them. Not knowing from where exactly she came from. . She had blonde hair and blue eyes similar to Arua. She looked like a fragile doll which made me feel odd as I remembered Arua and her strong posture, in fact I wondered how did she get past me so fast . She appeared more young than Arua,making me realize this was her sister as I yawned a bit annoyed looking at her while she looked at me "you are blaze right?what are you doing to my sister? Galamouth tell me that you do something to my sister!! I'll kill you with my hammer!!" she started calmly but than yelled ending her speech and looked at me with very fiery eyes, jumping down from this huge distance she quickly took out a small mallet which suddenly started to grow bigger. It looked like a yellow toy mallet but had incredible power as she hitted the floor while I avoided swiftly beeing hitted by jumpin aside. The mallet create cracks and a hole in the floor as the girl landed safely on the floor and rushed to me quickly trying to hit me , making me run away from her „great this is all I needed !!” I screamed annoyed trying to escape from this crazy little girl. In all this excitement there was a loud bang noice and a cry making me stop and look behind it was her she slipped while running and cried . of course she screamed because she hitted the floor loudly making me take a breather and sight looking at her lying on the floor,smirking and laughing "ouch!!" she started

whining which made it amusing too look and I seriously enjoyed my self a bit,however after a while I started to feel for her after all she only wanted to help her sister there wasn't nothing else I could do so I decided to walk over her side ,kneel and help her,after all her sister wouldn't come here so fast beeing terrified by the bats Galamouth summouned for something she wasn't able to hear this cry ,also I thought it could cause problems later if I left this girl in her state "sister!!its hurt!! Help me!!"The little girl continued to whine about her noose, it was bleeding so I putted my hand in my bag and took out few hankerchefs ,gently whipping off the blood „you better not move” I hugged her gently, a bit suprising her to make her calm down and than slowly continued to clean her noose, luckilly it wasn't broken, just a bit damaged I only touched it with my hand and healed as green energy flown into her. Than when her noose was cleaned sitted with her and looked into her blue eyes. The girl was doing the same sitting quietly.Smiling to me ,very gently and warmly she appeared less demonic or even human, but like a doll this girl appeare like a fragile doll that could be broken anytime maybe it was this fragility, that constituted the reason for her violent behavior, apparently she did not know how to control her self. Now she calmed down and was laughing hapilly making me have mixed feelings about her.she defnetly didn't plan on harming me anymore, and we even started to play together. Back on the staircase Arua who woken up from the schock thanks to Dawn and Misa sensed Galamouths appearance, and could also sense her sister pain from that accident as only now the girls desperate plea reached her , with eyes opened and in state of fear she swiftly rushed up stairs followed by both Dawn and Misa . Matching my speed they found us quickly, hapilly smiling at each other and playing much to Arua's schock and suprise. Both Dawn and Misa were behind her as Arua walked to us rather fastly making me stand up with the white hankerchief stained in the little girls blood "What are you doing Aya?? And why u with Blaze?" Arua finally asked the question surprised looking at the hankerchef in my hand with Aya's blood on it, Arua who was very protective of her little sister sister shouted to me angry "what r u doing???" looking at me with fierce eyes , while Aya happilly laughted enjoying herself again suprising her sister with hers question " what are you afraid of,,sis??" Aya smiling asked her question lookinmg straihtly into Arua's eyes, as she hugged Aya warmly asking her question " what happen to you??" very gently cuddling into her face as Aya replied with carelessness" dunno,,hehehe" grinning a bit trying to appear very dangerous but in fact was more funny,now that she didn't have her mallet to hit me with I burned the blod stained hankerchef in my hands using my power, it burned in light green flames and turned my back to them walking away leaving both Dawn and Misa together with arguing sisters . "don't grin!! It would make you look stupid!!"Arua replied yelling at Aya, making her reply" oh yeah?? I don't think so"Argued Aya who thought her grin made her very scary. I slowly managed to walk a small distance from them.This commotion made me wonder about famillies, and ties and also about diferent bounds that are created by familly ,I remembered that I too had a familly.Long ago in the past I almost completelly forgotten I also had a family that was composed from a mother,father,my self and my brother ,and althought I no longer can recall how this forgotten life look liked , it too had too have some happy and sad moment. Its an interesting question which we can pounder now. What is a familly ? According to all the encyclopedia's ,the familly is the smalest societary unit,its the familly's role to adapt the younger generation into the world, and acording to definition to ensure moral ,ethicall development. Which in our cassual translation means that family represents the smallest unit of the system ,and extends its hold into personal life of every subject. However its not what familly really should be, the real meaning of familly is different it means people that are bounded to each other and live there everyday with each other. Sharing both love and experience.However this too does not represent the whole image of familly, according to God's understanding of this word we all are one familly consisting of brothers and sisters and it is our parent,the one that gived us life.Thats why in commeration of this we too can become parents and create life ,giving this role to our children when there time comes, and this too is familly creating tree's that are composed of whole generations, in this way both demons and humans bound,creating ties that tie entire generations, throught billion of milenia's , making each new familly member a continuation of the tree. However if we treat these thruths to seriously were used by the system whores and loose ourselves and our famillies making

them subject to the systems control. The oppressive regime created by greed the system, have effectively poisoned family members making them hate each others, resulting in hideous crimes being done in name of money. Can Gold become a God. My answer is never, gold doesn't even describe the full glory of God and its bright color, is only a mockery of the warm we can feel when we grow up in the loving family, so my questions to you my faithful readers is, is it worth to destroy your family for the sake of Gold ? When watching at their golden decorated room I knew and was fully aware that these beautiful toys Aya had would be worthless if Arua died. Only now that her sister was with her she was truly happy, of course her earlier actions and aggression towards me was dictated by the fact she only wanted to protect her loved one, this made me detest Galamouth and his ways for the first time, witnessing first hand how he toyed with emotions of these that lived under him. Galamouth of course considered himself to be a god, above these two, but maybe his ignorance stemmed from the fact that he himself didn't have a family. According to what I knew at the time Galamouth was always alone, perhaps he was an orphan. The tragedy of Galamouth might as well originated from simple desire to be loved and noticed, if so then he wasn't any different from my self. This meant that in some period of my existence I might as well been the same as him, then what changed me and made me different in the end ? maybe the simple fact I never was truly alone, Galamouth might as well rejected others love and that's how he became all alone. Just like Galamouth others that get under system's dominance forget the true meaning of a family, and that's how mothers suddenly kill their childrens. This is how these crimes that revealed shocked us so badly originate. The system first destroys families by implementing sins into them, greed, pride, lust and jealousy can easily destroy a family. Once a family is destroyed the decay is exposed fuelling the hatred which becomes an ideal nourishment to this hideous regime of ignorance and greed. Helping others to succumb to this fate, this is how system established its dominance and control. Our role is to speak about it everywhere its possible to make others aware, but whether they will listen it depends from them, and their families. Families should be created from love, even though we live in the world that is always ruled by the system, we need families that will spread truth and help us build our walls and our society. Freedom starts within the walls of a loving and caring family, oppression starts in the wall of an abusive family ruled by the greed by a 'family' of system whores. Depending on a family one might become a system whore or a free person. That's where it all starts that's why Families are essential, that's why they need to be protected from the systems wrath. I continued walking looking at the massive room, both Arua and Aya lived in. The steam calmed down and it cooled a bit as I walked towards a golden fountain, which had beautiful flowers erected in it. Blue water was sprinkling out of it. I looked into it wondering was it a trap, as I was followed by the small group that could become my family under these circumstances. After all we would share something during this difficult trial that was now beginning. Lost in my thoughts I looked at the azure blue water, taken from an ocean. It looked very beautiful inside this golden fountain. Blue the color of innocence and Gold the color associated with greed, the fake warmth. System always consumed and destroyed these that are innocent driving them into madness, it happened to me once as well. Its easy to feel disgusted to this world, if I wouldn't hate it I wouldn't be walking this path. This path was taken out of revenge, that was the sad truth, that's why I wasn't a hero someone else was the hero of this story, while I could be merely an anti-hero. Too little darkness to be truly evil, too little light to be a good person a hopeless situation. Worthless existence that dwells in twilight of things that was my existence. That's how I was viewed by the world that's why I always walked in shadows. System consumes everyone and everything leaving nothing, that's why I hate it the most, cause I myself was eaten by the whores and forced into decay. This memory of everything I lost pushed me to seek my revenge and become who I am now. In this war the system whores should bleed, be destroyed and disappear. That was my wish, to destroy the greedy whores leaving only innocent alive, but was it possible ? Would innocent become greedy whores if the real whores disappear, the universe always turns towards equality, seed of darkness always appear sooner or later, its inevitable. This situation was comparable to a certain knight from La Mancha, that was born to late to realize his dreams and therefore walked a path only a fool would take, I was no different just a fool. So why did I resign myself to this foolish destiny, that

would be a question I ask myself over and over, but not finding an answer I could only work forward, my curse you might say was to always walk forward without any clear reason. Of course I could stop a while enjoy my self, even forget but it wouldn't last this short blessings always had to end, it appears they served only to keep me going on my hopeless path, I was the immortal Judge that was also a prisoner of his fate. I always wondered whether I really create it my self or was I programmed by God to think that I did, or maybe I was simply thinking too much on issues that are un-important? Both sorrows and happiness were embraced by me constantly but only for short moments of time, as love or hate aren't eternal. This war although constant always changed its leaders, whole generations that walked into the stage, only to disappear short moments later. But I choosed to be constant and therefore I watched and experienced it happening. My choice was my curse and yet thought I knew this, I also desired this fate to continue. Why such conflicting views in my self, from where did they originate. Embracing both darkness and light not willing to let anything go, I myself stranded my self in the twilight zone. Yes it gave me incredible power, yes it caused me incredibly weak. I was both incredibly weak and strong at the same time, my personal paradox, for my strenght came from my weakness, love from hate, courage from cowardice. Incredibly paradoxical situation. That's why the one person I couldn't ever understand, was my self. I couldn't sympathize with my self but also wasn't able to detest my self, instead I pushed my self forward, angry at any obstacle that obstructed my path. My path was covered in darkness but dedicated to protect the light, that's why I always walked it, trying to never regret anything, but despite this I always regretted something anyways. Something was either out of my reach or false. Knowing this I detested my self a bit more. But then again I also loved the things I do. Conflicted within my self always trying to make the impossible happen, I couldn't be satisfied with just defeating Galamouth, he needed to learn his lesson and to attain this victory I was willing to play this game more than required. Of course I knew there was no real risk involved, I was the only one that knew this for certain, which means that I wasn't risking at all, and yet I was afraid of the danger that this situation caused. Not knowing whether I succeeded or made my self a fool again. What if I fail? Then that means I allowed yet another tragedy to happen. Should I follow the will of others or my own, my orders were to stop Galamouth, but they weren't specific. The Gods allowed me to do what I can, obviously believing I was the right one, or perhaps they knew I would fail in this and send me away so I won't interfere with them? Was I really as pathetic. The worst thing was that I didn't know which sentence was the right one. I had no way of ever being sure. But I was certain there was no way to turn back, no I wouldn't escape. I didn't want to escape, escaping from this situation would be a waste, I never escaped from such situations. I was hoping this event would provide an answer to some questions I asked from the start, was I right to demand this power and to take this path? or was it out of my reach? Or maybe I needed to put some more effort into this or to find an alternative way? But was there any alternative way? or was my path the alternative way, what was the value of my path and the destiny I choosed? Who were I? what was the thing that defined myself. Was I right or wrong. That was really un-important looking into the ceiling that was located into the far away distance. Its colors changed constantly and green whirlpoolic energy currents moved on it sinking upwards, going through it, towards an unknown destination. Creating a buzzing sound which echoed into the distance, making a symphony of strange sounds. Suddenly I heard it, the singing of two angels, watching with surprise as the girls started singing making the toys dance. Arua's and Aya's voice like tiny bells radiated this structure, showing the true bond these sisters had. The song sang in their own language, in a dialect that was already forgotten in words used by soul people. A very strange beautiful chorus composed of two people that matched their voices perfectly, accompanied by flute and piano playing in distance. Dancing elegantly and very slowly. A strange and sad song followed after all, a hollow sound accompanied by the sounds created by this strange place. A song of captivity and love to their captor, a song that made me cry. Melodic expression of purest emotion love, directed at hearth that was entrapped in a trap of its own creation, a desperate plea for salvation for the one that denied God. Strong melodic voice, a harsh and yet delicate prayer, made by a person who would not turn back, a girl that was willing to step into the darkness to protect her love one, even though he

was the source of all darkness. one that might be forgiving in the name , a girl that was ready to pay the ultimate price just to see him smile, just to wipe one of his tears. A desperate plea and a beautiful song a melodic and sad act of self sacrifice. A very strange chorus , one that had rhythm taken outside all boundaries a feat of prayer that could never be described. Despite the evil there was still hope and the girl believed in it with all her heart, this act of a prayer , singing in dance and accepting her fate asking nothing for herself. This was her only true wish , a wish that made me realize Arua's true devotion. She started singing more and dancing wildly not being afraid, giving it all to please the God, in order to ask for forgiveness, and for safety of the two people she loved. She believed her song would reach the stars and God himself and that someday her wish will come. A beautiful prayer one that was supposed to break all barriers and reach the spirit world. Her voice was powerful and crazy melodic, powerful her words would pierce anyone's heart , that kind of weapon was truly amazing. Shocked I continued to observe the display of her emotions , the power and energy she invested in her performance. Her song resonated somewhere in my soul, making me wonder what is love. The sudden silence made me a bit awry as everything changed so suddenly. I could lose my mind if not carefully not knowing where this battle ends realizing the true powers of darkness. Only now I started to feel the seriousness of the events that were supposed to take shape so suddenly and drastically before my eyes. The tribal beat continued as the sounds intensified, making me wonder. The unreal feel of this situation intensified a strange waltz was played before my eyes, and blood covered the surface of the floor, just what was sacrificed before my eyes. I slowly moved forward but found nothing to be the same, as the golden floors changed into muddy blood. Pink or purple aura filled the room as the dance macabre was performed before my eyes , making me step back. This was true power of the soul people and incredible strength of this complex. A white ghoul-like figure performed a tango with a skeleton dressed in Victorian era female dress. my eyes widened making me seriously wonder what happened. A ghoul-like aura intensified as growls intensified. Making me prepare myself to battle. A fight was to begin so suddenly I was all alone. I looked above and saw to my surprise stars on purple blue sky, and next to me old ancient graves. I found myself on cementary , as graves were opened from below. A zombie resurrection was taking place on my eyes while I realized that someone trapped me in a very powerful spell. The ghoul-like demons howled and red eyes stared at me from above, this was the depth of darkness. A greenish moldy bodies were coming out from their coffins , and opening their graves, increasing in numbers . Gathering in a huge crowd outnumbering me as I heard a familiar squeech, above me on old trees billions of red eyes were staring, these were Galamouth's shadow birds. It was their trap. The Zombies rushed at me making me jump away and put my hands forward shooting white energy beams, being desperately outnumbered I rushed at them cutting through with my Lasersword. The Zombies were walking slowly methodically one step at a time just like toys in Arua's and Aya's room. I cut them down frantically but they were coming in numbers far beyond my control. Suddenly explosions came out from the ground making me avoid them and cut through the zombies. Green blood splatted on the graves. While the silver moon shined in the skies changing colors , becoming blue then red , golden, silver ,white and yellow. The zombies growled wildly , while I shot them down with my energy beams avoiding the explosions and also trying to fend off the shadow birds that attacked me. Killing few of them and making them more angry as they continued their attack from above. Suddenly the scene changed and something was formed, a shadow was sitting and smiling. A white dressed girl played with a ball her eyes were red wearing a fancy hat she smiled while continuing to look at me. The girl stood up and started dancing as the zombies disappeared as I was watching very shocked at the new figure. The girl looked like someone I knew from the past, formed out of blood, from darkness. She had a strange smell. She continued to look at me with her red eyes, her raven hair made me realize ,that she was the shadow birds. She continued to play with her ball enjoying herself as I wondered how to escape. „finally we meet” She finally spoke singing her own song. I looked at her shocked a bit , feeling her incredible power and walking back „ who are you ?” I asked hesitantly knowing she was truly devilish and could cause serious troubles. „ I am the daughter of Darkness , Princess of illusion Mystica” She replied looking at me as shadow birds sat at her arms. I

realized that it was her controlling the birds while she petted them gently. „you're the one that hurted my pets , I cannot forgive that” she replied looking at me with fierce eyes and continued speaking „these pets are one with me they are a part of my soul, my faithful eyes, they accompany me and help me with my task” She continued looking at me and smiling „thats why I cannot allow you to kill them” she replied looking at me with disquist but also a hint of interest as well „they were the ones that attacked me first” I replied „ Silence !! I did not give you permission to speak” she answered looking at me with superiority and a madly in human way. „Oh seriously and whom the hell you are !” I asked smirking looking for the way to get out. „ I am the eternal guardian who's role is to observe and remain in shadows, a spy in the land of darkness and the one that binds the most twisted soul known in the entire universe, and I know whom you are ! the fool that opened the grave a boy that caused the calamity to repeat itself again, a one that should never come. This war boy it is all you're fault ,have you not meddled in affairs beyound you're control the mad prince would continue his sleep, and I would countinue to guard his grave” Mystica replied annoyed and walked slowly towards me as a strange song was playing from somewhere „ my fault ! it was Dantalion who started it !” I replied angry looking at her „ It was you're fault cause you were the one left standing, have you died at the grave Galamouth would not escape !” Mystica shouted out to me ,making me look with disbelief and schock. I didn't want to belief in her words feeling terrified „ what are you saying its my fault !” I looked at her with anger feeling accused unjustly. while Mystica countinued to walk towards me and pointed her hand at me „Youre existence is to blame, you're the cause of this calamity” She replied without hint of emotions continuing to look at me with her creepy eyes. I wondered how to end this unpleasent confrontation , while the birds continued to squeeched and started to attack me while I jumped away. „ Its usseless to try and run away” Mystica replied as tentacles from blood started tying on my legs.Making me scream and ripp them apart as I jumped away using my force. „so you have some power in you” Mystica replied looking at me smiling „this is perfect I rarely have anyone to play with, you will die in agony” She smiled while talking as dark energy gathered in currents around her legs. „witness the powers of the abyss the streanght of illusion” She continued looking at me a bit sadly. Making me wonder what was exactly she disqusted. „you know theres not many to talk with in these shadows, I existed in this space for so long, looking at the death souls , forgotten in the abyss , protecting the balance ,envious of light that shines for others. I will not forgive anyone that walks in the light , not realising the value of existence. The souls comdemned to damnation haven't got this luxury. just to be able to talk, or smile seems like a fleeing dream. Locked forever between light and darkness my sole reason was to watch and guard, and now I don't even have that anymore,cursed beeing existence that came into forbidden space, what have you done. Darkness that spreads which was locked inside will cause serious injury to the state of world, Do you understand that ? foolish boy a child that walked into the abyss. You should have never come here and than, be gone stop existing leave now die !!!!” Mystica continued to shout angrilly looking at me with these eyes. I looked at her angrilly „ I should stop existing, why I wonder ? when it wasn't my fault I tried to stop this from happening to defeat the darkness...” I replied „ but you failed you shouldn't intervened its not a game ,this is a real threat” she replied looking at me seriously , maing me even more angrier because of her unjustified attacks on me. Despite looking like a 10 year old she could control powerfull magic as dark serpents arouse from the ground their eyes shining brightly. Making me run away ,as the serpents growled attacking trying to eat me alive, while I summouned my light magic , making them dissapear as white aura covered them. „ Is that the best you have, because if thats it than you should give up. I won't die even if you wish for it , Im the one that walks eternally meddling into others affairs whether they like it or nor , Im their eternal judge” I replied shooting a white lighting at the girl as she avoided dancing, as if she was playing a game. While dark birds dived trying to hit me while I avoided beeing hitted making them squeeched angrilly. „ You arrogant fool” She replied looking at me with disbelief. while red energy whirlpools were shooted at me , forcing me to erect a silver barrier breaking the current in half , making it explode in orange flames. Creating dark smoke that covered the entire area. „ I told you already , Im the one that will vanquish this darkness” I replied looking at the girl seriously as she continued to look at me with

disbelief. „that's impossible you cannot do that !” Mystica shouted angrily. „that is why I intervened and will intervene again” I replied again calmly „stop with that arrogance you're the bringer of doom to us all” she replied angrily „ the only thing I bring you is freedom” I looked at her touching her face making her look at me shocked. She then hit me in the face and jumped away quickly looking at me angry, and then calming down she continued to stare at me „that is impossible cause I never was free to begin with” Mystica admitted as the whole scene including her disappeared and I found myself sitting at the fountain in Arua's and Aya's room as they both continued to sing together as if nothing happened. They haven't realized I was battling an unseen enemy. I continued to stare a bit lost in thought wondering about the child lost to darkness. Everything might as well begin with Albert Pike and his mad plan about the world order, he was the man that planned the events that profoundly shaped my world. The last three wars that changed our planet earth and gave birth to the future. Two of the first conflicts indeed went according to his visions, but the third one went out of their control. Due to invention of a very powerful communication tool, the world's first global computer network. Culture started to act independently from their markets, no longer bound by greed, yet still remain a prisoner of money. Albert Pike himself, at least according to the documents I once read, claimed to be the servant of the Lucifer, and this in turn was seen as the servitude towards the Anti-Christ. It remains unknown just how much of it was truth and how much of it became coincidence. But the Antichrist came, when no one believed he will, looking very adorably and ordinary. There was no demonic traits, not even sinister eyes, and yet his ambition was sinister. The man appeared shortly after a major

breakdown in world politics occurred. After the Leaders of Earth's religions were suddenly assassinated, by terrorists of unknown origin, in fact working for the Antichrist. One odd thing or maybe not odd at all, he didn't come from the country that people expected him to come, and at first wasn't even treated seriously. That's because he was very young, to conduct politics. At least the old generation of politicians treated him as a child that itself couldn't bring harm, they were wrong. These fools underestimated the true power of darkness, handing over their countries over to that ruler. Not knowing why or how they just simply gotten rid of themselves by their constant competition. Antichrist didn't do anything for most of the part, he might as well not been a cruel or violent person. But one disillusioned with humanity. As all leaders he could appear to listen and converse politely with the common people, but he couldn't understand them nor he had a will to do so, the Antichrist was a soulless person. A puppet of forces that were beyond him, he was merely a conductor of satanic influences. Everything began with the restoration of the temple of Jerusalem, when it returned to its former place. It sacrificed a past building belonging to the Muslim religion. This was enough, the followers of the second religion were fed up with the treatment they got from these that claimed they followed the first religion. Tensions were large and always growing, major breakdowns in economics didn't help settle differences, in fact the system's whores made things worse each day, in the day peace was announced. Three huge armies attacked the western world. The great Chinese army attacked Russia, the Arabs started an offensive which aimed to destroy the newly restored state of Israel. Germany invaded Poland, but with paranoid Russia and angry United States, with notes from all countries of the world. The German forces were repelled in 6-7 days, and Germany was put under occupational arrest. Their independence wasn't threatened, but the German army was used elsewhere protecting Israel or helping Russia. Poland became a bread basket, and this was the reason the country was not only spared but in fact placed in protection, and its citizens devoted to farming, production, culture. Even if the soldiers of both sides appeared in Poland it was only to gather resources. Polish economy thrived because everyone needed the Polish industry, this is where companies were moved and conducted their productions safe from dangers.

The importance of the Polish state remaining as the library and bread basket of the world. Came from many serious calculations. The war spiraling out of control, no one knew exactly who fought who or where the main theater of war was located. That's why the politicians of all countries including the German chancellor decided to build a model state in one of the countries that wasn't attacked, the Germany wanted to annex Poland and establish a legal and authority system based on

their own, but the leaders of other countries stopped that from fulfilling, reminding that Poland and its people must remain unharmed, in the face of natural catastrophes that plagued the world during this war, the importance of Poland only grew, and it was in Poland where the world continued its existence, paradoxically both the Anti Christ and the remaining Pope had offices there. Although the Antichrist didn't rule the Polish state he adhered to the Polish rule, he was more of a chef of state in exile and was supposed to return to his war ravaged country after the war. The Pope was killed when visiting a devastated Rome, had he stayed in Poland even though the proximity to the Antichrist's mansion was near, he would remain safe, but once he left Poland and arrived at Rome his life was targeted, and he was killed by the Muslim army. He was the first and so far the only black skinned Pope. Interestingly enough. The Polish Pope John Paul II, and the German Pope Benedict XVI were viewed as the same pontificate, hence why in ancient texts there was no mention of the following pope since he indeed continued the work of the sun, and was a sun himself. Both were the labourers of sun. Only two more Pops followed and corruption took hold over the Vatican and other religion centers. These were the thoughts I was lost into looking at the golden ceiling, in Arua's and Aya's room. Believing myself to be far from such troubles, how many millennia's of years have passed? The names of these countries, like names of ancient mythical lands, yes these were already mythical times I thought to myself. Not much I remembered from that time choosing to forget most of it, remembering only selected images and some pain and sorrow. Nothing pleasant, nothing to return to. So why did I think about these ancient lands, their politics. Why now think about the home I so desperately tried to forget? Why did I want it to forget it so badly?

The starting point of our civilisation, it was being made more and more clear that something important was being hidden in the shadows of past, just as I'd made a full circle with my existence and now was going to do it again, I returned to a point I passed once already. That's why answers to this situation were already mine, but buried down deeply in my mind, they weren't simple to retrieve. After analysing some elements from the past, I still understood I knew nothing. I missed out on something key here, very fundamental to this whole mess. Someone else could as well pull the strings behind Galamouth. That at least was a probability. Real and Unreal at the same time, this was the world we lived in, where the most unrealistic things were in fact real. Devoting my existence to unknown, passion and love, eternally pursuing new events. I also gathered knowledge that should be shared, or at least I felt it should be shared. In my opinion making others understand the truth improved their lives, giving meaning, faithfulness and love. But the question remained did I see truth or was it just something I considered a truth. The truth was that what I perceived as truth might be a lie to others, and that was the truth as well. Cause others had truths they chose to believe in just like myself. In other words I wasn't anyone special in fact I did exactly the things others do, chose a part of reality I fancy and live there. I could only accept part of the world which I chose. It was impossible to get it all, even for me. For me the world was different than the one these system whores lived in, although we shared a space and we could talk to each other, they were in their reality and I was in my own, and because of that we were both criminals and heroes in their respective worlds. For them I was a criminal, for me they committed hideous crimes. In truth both stances were correct, cause from their perspective I broke the law, the law that governed their reality. The same I could tell about them they broke the laws I adhered to in my own reality, in the world I belonged. It is important to note that a reality cannot be created by one person, it's not a creation of myself or a single entity in that sphere. Instead a reality consists of interactions from many people and demons. In fact even interactions between both realities constitute another bigger reality. This is how the society works, that's why even though the Outcasts rejected the formal society, they were a part of a bigger society that was composed from both Formal system survivors and the Outcasts interacting. The world became bigger despite the whorish attempts to make it smaller, or maybe it's thanks to them this new outcast world formed in the first place, have they not closed the doors there would be no need to form the new to protect these that couldn't get there, because all would belong, which would create a conformistic society with only one set of corporate values. That's why it's an interesting paradox that it was the rich who created the culture of the poor, giving poor reasons, tools and space to form their new outcasted society, even though

the rich only wanted to throw away the poor like trash. These wastelands became a new thriving land, the sphere of workers developed their own communities and societies despite being slaves, in their own society they weren't slaves but workers that were important to the corporation. These were the world they believed in and that's why they worked hard to protect it. The same is true for us, we also consider ourselves important in our community, not feeling sorry for ourselves and even pitying the rich enslaved corporate world as we see it. Ironically we also respect them, and they show signs of respecting us and even fascination. They need us to create myths they feed to their population, legends, good moral stories, we do the same telling good moral stories just heroes in these stories might become the enemies in other side stories. Which is really as that more funny, when you think about it we both tell the same story in our cultures, but from a different angle. Truth that was seen by my eyes was therefore partial, but it was true even bare to the point of being offending. Of course the whole idea of offence especially the way it was performed was made to hide the truth. The rich always invented elaborate tactics, to hide the injustice they created, which never seemed to work as everybody knew, what was the things they tried to hide so desperately. The amusing question that's on everybody's lips since all time, why the hell they even bothered. Even if a poor person is more wiser than the rich person is, it is the rich person that becomes influential and considered the wisest one. In reality only few times poor people were elevated to high status in the society. In the system Yahweh being one of such examples. Usually the poor die being poor whatever they do, they won't become influential unless they learn to create a place of their own. Outcasts can lead but only in a society composed of outcasts because there is no rich to impose their laws. That's why the system always tightens its reality and makes it closed to new things, because a poor person can become the best author, or the best actor or be famous but only if he learns to use the tools and distribute them in other means than the ones invented to protect the established order. By creating brand new media's making the world grow by sharing information. Creating much more content not for the sake of market or money, but for joy, freedom of knowledge, and to help us form the universal core of knowledge that is used freely by those that live in the system, and outside it. This knowledge is given to all that inhabit the universe, to all those willing to seek it out and able to understand it. They have permission to use this incredible power and transform their lives with knowledge of God and things he created. This is also the knowledge of mankind and our entire world that is presented to you in my text. Not everything can be understood, all need time. Understanding is a long process, learning takes time. Even longer than one single reading. I myself am just a single conductor, not the best one, as everyone I too have limits that don't allow me to send a clear message. Cause I myself might not understand what the reader needs to read, that's why the true truth must be discovered by the reader himself or herself. I can only point you to one direction just to the one I taken. That's my greatest limitation to understanding the true I could only understand the truth from my own perspective and that could cloud my judgment, yet ridding myself of this error would mean stopping to be human, despite the fact I was already a demon. Not wanting to lose my humanity, but also not thinking of myself as mere human, being something between these two races, I considered my present existence an extension of my human life but at the same time I didn't want to have nothing to do with my past, trying to make it go away. The past that contained all my repressed memories, and the core of who I am. The mystical knowledge that led me to become the one I am now. I felt like coming out from a huge dream, as if my entire essence was in sleep for a very long time. Indeed I felt these memories to dwell in within me, but I couldn't not understand. These small images appeared to be foreign, different from the life I had now somehow unrelated to this fight. Somethings I buried deep down in my mind, I wondered why these things would become important now, when they weren't as that important than? Did my human life contain a message I forgotten or was unable to read back then? For many millions of years, for every long time I devoted my entire existence to experiencing, both darkness and light that were familiar to me, I even experienced the corporate worlds and distant dream lands. Reaching towards skies, looking into the distant stars. Sometimes a single glance begun another huge journey that would last for thousands years, bringing more and more information. A passionate dance of life and full embracing of all cultures present in this world,

both in the above and below even there where there was suppose to be nothing. This is the truth culture and experience exists everywhere and everyone carries an incredible power to create, something new and un-expected. Life is interesting only when something un-expected occurs. Such is trivia, which can create important fundamental things. That also can be my message I try to carry on. Life is full of surprises and un-expected things, because life itself is a surprise. Sometimes bad things happens but other times something pleasant does too. My lesson through life was to never give up and to walk forward, not being afraid to confront things head on. Only then it would become interesting. That's why I had mixed feelings because I liked this event that unfolded, knowing that something grand is happening on my eyes. This was important and I was a part of it also. The room was calm I observed the girls playing, happiness and innocence. There seem to be nothing wrong with this picture, except the fact I was casually walking in the enemy base. interacting with enemy without any concern. A spy or a prisoner allowed to walk freely in the middle of the enemy forces organising themselves even for me it was un-usual. But I was given the un-usual ability to do the impossible things to fight without any real power and to defeat darkness without using a sword. To defeat an enemy without any weapon was my mission, one that was truly impossible.

My mad mind was set, I would attempt that knowing I could not win, because winning this battle wasn't important. It was just about revealing the knowledge and using this situation to yet again deliver a message. But in order to succeed first I needed to defeat my self, my own conscious fear. That's why I needed to have no regard for my self. This situation was a test for my self as well. Would I find a way to fight without any weapons, the courage to carry out my purpose. The courage to believe in my self and others that are around me, although we might be weak. Building a union within an enemy base? Was that possible? This was in fact a battle of spirits, a battle where fighting itself had little value, for it was only a manifestation. A show to perform and nothing else. The world would be saved only then when light starts shining. Blood and money couldn't protect this world. Something true was necessary. This is how wars are fought in my world. Importance of military strategies is just for show, like in all movies people like epic battles. So they are granted them and allowed to fight, whether they lose or win. This is just a game they should be happy that they were granted the ability to fight and do something and not fear the end as it always will come eventually. Change happens always despite the lost wars or the ones victorious the winning side also will lose it one day. This is the culture of war, a battle that has no meaning but serves only to create stories. So is this event really meaningful. Is our world in danger? No it's not threaten the battle is here for you to experience meaning of your life. Galamouth will understand his mistake cause the darkness in him will destroy itself in the final battle and he will be reborn into the light, gathering the knowledge he wanted. But by telling you this I might have just deprived you of the whole fun, so therefore forget what you just read. Be afraid and mobilize the world is still in danger help us to win the battle, but fear not we will be victorious. This is a different reality that you're experiencing by reading or listening to this text. it's different from what you're used to. Different from what you know. That is the role of culture to transport people to different distant realities. to give a sense of unknown, and to make familiar that which is not. True creation is a bridge way to things that cannot be understood in the present time. The purpose is for you to take part in this journey and witness this battle as if you were there. Fear not for you are protected from its consequences by this form. The information that will appear in your mind will show you the image of this situation remember to be thankful that you're a part of this incredible reality a simple casual prayer is more than enough. This is the form that was chosen to present these events, whether you accept it or not, is and always will be your own choice. For you can treat this as any other text you came across, the purpose is to teach you through entertaining that is the role of culture, that should be the role of religion too. To teach and inspire others nothing more, helping to take the first step. Protecting the vineyard that should be the role of priests, which they have forgotten. Why the institution created in the name of God, went so far astray from his teachings. Why priests cannot love others? why cannot they teach love? Why love was made into a forbidden sin? Was it truly what God wanted. What is true love? and is pleasure derived from love even though it might not

be proper, always a sin? Can love hurt? What is an act of love? People always like to name people who do bad things, but in this madness we forgot that we were supposed to punish the things and not people themselves. Gossip always forms and everybody loves to read about sex scandals, or other abuses. But what they don't read is the most important thing, why is it bad and so wrong in the first place. People who read about evil people don't understand why their actions are evil, and in time they repeat these actions. Considering that if others don't know of it then the action isn't evil, cause something is evil when others say it's evil. That is how it's all understood. A crime is evil cause the lady from the news said so, or it was written in the news paper that the crime is evil, but when thinking people think like children, well if no one else knows about it then it's fine, I'm not like that guy from TV cause no one else except me knows about it." That's the justification they use to commit crime. This is also the justification for ignorance, the victim is asked to sit quietly because it's evil to talk about it ever, and if the victim is quiet then the action wasn't evil. Nothing happened cause no body is talking about it, therefore nothing bad really happens. What do you think of this explanation? Don't forget how many times you acted like that. Others don't even understand why such actions might be evil, and think doing crime and evil stuff are just a game. Because they understand a part of the truth, and see how evil people talk about evil stuff pretending to be good, while in reality they're even worse than these that are labeled as criminals. The criminals are often judged by even worse criminals that is the reality of the system. This is pure darkness born from ignorance, that made me crazy and to become like I am. But I don't regret going that path, cause I know it's all a lie and it's these that think that are normal, truly insane. Not understanding their enslavement and the way they reek of decay. So the sad truth is, these that think of themselves to be normal will consider my writings as writings of someone with a serious mental disorder. For them what I say here is insane, others will also not understand. So why even bother to write and to send this message into a such world? What is the purpose of me wanting to share these events with people who may not understand the true contexts? What do I want to prove? Do I even have anything to prove? Yes even now there is nothing, no need. No reason I just wanted to and that's all. The reason I'm sharing this important event with you is because of my whim, because I merely wanted to. In fact I might just have done something evil, like a crime and say the same. I did it cause I wanted to. Wouldn't I at least be honest. To the point of arrogance? Because for me it's all that matters. At least I would be honest with my self. This is the truth I was a part of these events because I wanted to. Despite it was dangerous it was just something I wanted to try and there would be nothing to block my path. Even if I fail in this impossible task, it's still something I wanted to do, and I understand it very well I can fail, I'm not an idiot thought some of you would think that, but I'm doing always whatever I want to and I'm making sure others do the same and aren't forced to anything, that is my role as the Judge of eternity. It may sound selfishly, but indeed it's our right, we all are granted free will and are allowed to do whatever we want, if we truly want it. But the question is whether we want it or are deceived by others into wanting it, we make wrong choices cause we won't sit back and think of them for a while. The art of making choices is instrumental in having a good life, whatever we do. But most people, demons and angels forget about it and let others the system decide about the choices we should make. This is wrong, cause we're the ones bearing responsibility for the things we do, therefore we need to decide about them. Even if a soldier kills someone on orders, he is still the one that killed. He will bear responsibility for the killing, that's why the soldier should be allowed to choose whether he wants to kill or not. I also done evil things and faced punishment for them, and will do more evil things and be punished for them as well. That is my responsibility, the same goes with good things for which everybody will be rewarded when the time comes, it all happens when one least expects it. But it does happen. This is what some call Karma. Others refer to it as fate, there is no escaping the choice we already made, but there is no reason to fear them. Cause these choices are the part of whom we are, if we want to there's always a way to change the path we're on. No body can do anything about it, if we change, if we feel we need to we will and no one can force you back, little courage and the scary things always disappear. This was something Mystica should understand, that it's time to change her existence and free her from that prison. This was her reward for being a loyal guardian.

Freedom was her grace, but she was too scared to understand that obviously. There were others just like her imprisoned in their fear, and they should be saved that's why I continued my journey in this base, this was my only priority. For this was one of the small steps I needed to take to build up my strength and face Galamouth, and until then he could watch me observe and intervene. To witness this with his own eyes. How a change can be produced with simple modest means. Pain and suffering always accompanied life. The fundamental questions couldn't ever be answered, without first understanding the significance of pain and suffering in everyone's life, the importance it had in the procedural cleansing of our souls. The darkness caused pain which main role was to suck out the darkness from our own cores, in that way properly used pain could strengthen the life, but pain shouldn't be constant, or self-inflicted. There is time for pleasure and there is time for pain. Over-excessing in either pleasure or pain, will have their consequence. Every structure that inflicts too much pain is therefore wrong, for God created suffering in this world to heal the wounded consciousness and allow true knowledge and spiritual brotherhood to grow. Through hardships bounds are to be created, but the system took pain to a whole new level, creating miserable existence of sorrow and pain, forgetting the true purpose. That's why it's necessary to unbind the limits that bounded too much, to let people loose from too much burden letting them carry only as much they're able to. That's why this event of darkness was allowed to grow, this seed planted in one being. His holy purpose in the unholy work. Galamouth's darkness was planned as an event that will free the world, but not in the way he thought it would. Galamouth was oblivious to the true purpose of his mad scheme, but I knew what had to be done. The reason I was there was simple, to bring love. Freedom and self-awareness, to free the bound souls and that was my task. The calming and soothing sound of water flowing into the golden fountain. Made me feel relaxed, and loose myself in these thoughts as I continued looking at the chaotic room, noticing toy soldiers still walking in their march. This was truly a chaotic place I thought in my head, wanting to express myself freely. Thinking about the importance of self-expression, thought many different things, like art, culture. Even these attacks others use help them express themselves, indeed the art of war can be quite artful. Since ancient times weapons were given cultural significance, often decorated in different sometimes abstract manner. While the ones who used them were often implemented in folk tales, eventually leading towards creation of what we know is culture. Culture was born through war, and these ancient tales of warriors fighting other warriors or even mythical beasts. Great stories of ancient military escapades that we so used to reading now, imagining just how different these old lands were, that the place we live in now. It's not so surprising that if people living in these lands could read stories from our world, they would try to imagine how our world looks like. Even being envious they cannot see it by their own eyes. Let's begin this one more time, the water was filling the fountain, soothing all of my senses, this was a truly magical place. Looking at the golden floors and hearing these sounds that echoed, thought the entire complex structure. Making me understand this place a bit. Chaotic existence, a chaotic structure engulfed in an almost divine melody.

Chapter 4

„The manifestations of GOD”

In a distant enclosed reality distortions appeared, creeks filled up with blood. The red substance like

magma created dark smoke. Which steamed with incredible force and pressure, the temperature reached its incredible climax ,creating a powerfull pressure that fused with incredible masses of air,created a terryfying spectacle. Blue particles of energy appeared in the smoke, small silver blue lightings flashed. brighting up the gray mass. A huge force was beeing set in motion as the pressurre forced whirlpools into creation mixing, both cold and hot winds,creating an explosive tornado's. Making brown rocks fall from the surrounding dark brown cave walls. These rocks mixed into into the tornado, ripping the winds and releasing incredible brightly yellow energy into distance, causing a huge roar to manifest itself. The display was acompanied by powerfull light fulling the area,the cave walls were dry from contant heat that was applied by this phenomena. IN these dangerous surroundings caves were dug up , by an ancient culture and a huge ammount of people was working nearby. All dressed in gray ,destroyed dirty cloths. Digging with simple primitive rock ,utilities into the hot magma. Exhausted from the heat. Their gray faces shown traces of physical trauma, and countless abuses these people suffered.

Exhausted by the heat of the magma,and these explosions that took place above their heads ,blinding them with bright light some of these people would simply fall into the lake, slowly get engulfed in redish flames and die in this agony. For most of them that was the only way to escape this terrible labour,their bones became dark during their lifes making them feel this incredible agony. The fire killed them in few seconds. These that wished to remain alive were gathered in small groups and were forced into eternal labour. putting their rocks into the fire lake , gently touching and as if using a spoon trying to take away its magma, once this hard task was done, the person holding the rock spoon. Which was simply a huge grayish ,spiky rock . Slowly stood up and walked back upwards into the small rising. Where dark knights were standing and a huge dark pot was located in , the middle of each two knights. The person holding the rock spoon, and slice of magma on top of it was to dump the magma into the pot,returning below to the magma lake, the purpose of these people gathered near the fire lake, was to harvest fire from that lake. The Dark Knights looked like stereotypicall representations of demonms, all wearing almost theatricall, metal masks covering their eyes. Looking like statues, in fact beeing statues. That were embedded with dark redish energy, which was used to control them. Symbols appeared on their metaic surface, showing green goblin faces. This was the program that was used to control them. This was a structure of dark caves surrounded by mazes created by the magma lake's and creeks.

Inpenetrable prison and a factory of some sort. All this was observed a by a yellow haired and blue eyed woman , who seemed to be dressed in a brightly gold uniform. Gently correcting her hairs, she continued to gaze upon the captured people. Looking at her silver trumped tied up to her waste, this was her means of calling help. Hearing the growls of the energy winds beeing created, touching her golden armor that covered almost her entire cheast. Breathing a bit harshly in this hot enviroment and trying to control her vision, also beeing exhausted from the pressure. She stood in a safe spot above the whole scene, but was threatened by the constant explosions of energy. Blinded each time it happened,trying to hide in the hole made in the cave wall, she used to observe the situation. From her spot she could see many craters,in every cratter a fire lake created from orange magma, that carried energy particals in it.Around each fire lake a crowd of people digging into the lakes border and taking small , tiny bits of the lakes carrying them,like small ants. The place was similiar to bee hive.People digging at the fire lake, beeing bee's that carry food for the queen.

Billions of craters like billions of honey plasters in a hive. This was a hive of energy that was used for Galamouths evil ambitions , the woman pick up her triumphet and blown into it creating a silver blue energy sphere,that engulfed her slowly and small lightings started to engulf the sphere as it rotated ,very fast,flashing and engulfing the woman who stood up inside it,not beeing terrified. The sphere created a huge flash of light and dissapeared.The spheare appeared in the middle of a silver road in a different dimension, fading away and freeing the woman as she slowly walked forward looking around the place.Observing the chaotic structure, compassoded of bizzare and misplaced surroundings.Walking in the middle of distortions.Above her a dark blue sky was located ,looking as if it was badly drawn and paint was falling down on the silver floor. From these blue creeks eyes could be seen looking at the woman, she slowly walked observing the silver road that started to

divide into numerous smaller paths ,which themselves lead to a huge distorted vortex.Staircases that lead to nowhere ,were located inside the vortex. The road itself shined in a white aura,indicating purity and the vortex started shaping itself slowly,restoring a blurred image from which blue light appeared. The image restored shown a gate and it suddenly very slowly appeared allowing the woman to , enter the gate, she slowly stepped inside the huge golden gate,and was transformed into a beautiful blue sly world. Under her feet green grass, with red flowers, a breeze touched her cheeks gently messing up her hair. Now the woman was walking on a planet. In the middle there was a blue lake located ,covered and encircled by a huge forest, and the field she found herself walking in as she neared some old ruins were others were sitting. A huge crowd was gathered,composed of God's and their servants from all over the universe,talking and debating the current crisis, some of them again like children playing on the beach and in the water, appearing to be oblivious to threat that was created by the current events, others were just talking while sitting, drinking,tea,coffee or wine. Few sat tensely and were worried by the current events, the woman walked over to the huge white rock near some ancient greek columns and knelt down in front of Yahweh who was sitting on the rock.The Old man looked at his servant and smiled , jumping down from the rock and walking over to her. „So how did it go ?” He asked looking at her ,seeing her kneeling down and standing to him, in her golden uniform looking like a royal guard, which she was „It is as you suspected my lord, works have resumed in that place, Galamouth is trying to harvest that power again” She replied looking straightly in Yahweh's face and continued after taking a breath „only this time its happening on a massive scale” She ended looking at him straightly as he made his way pass her,touching her shoulder „I know what's he's up to dear Gabrielle, he's preparing a war, a war on God's and we should make our preparations as well” Yahweh explained and walked down the lake looking at the God's who started to observe him curiously. The Gods and Goddesses looked at Yahweh some with bizarre expression on their face. The sun shined brightly from above and the beautiful blue sky was filled with white clouds that didn't cover it ,creating a peaceful sight.

It was warm , making everyone feel relaxed and calm as they continued to look at Yahweh . Their hearts started beating fast suddenly, while Yahweh continued his speech which was of great importance to the Gods. The sun continued to shine on the gathered, sharing its warmth and love. Love is always described as a warm feeling, and that's how goodness become synonymous with light and darkness become hate. Cause darkness is nothingness and refers to no love. Hate is simply understood as lack of love as it became its opposite. However not feeling love to somebody doesn't necessarily mean we hate them.So what else is necessary to constitute hate ? Not only lack of emotions but also a very negative attitude that represents the opposite of things one does for these that they love.We protect the loved one and endanger these that we hate. Gods and Goddesses who all appeared on this small beach in their human forms all had people and other God's they hated or loved, therefore they too were subject to these emotions that were created by the human race. After all God's and Goddesses were the creations of human minds which were harvested and made into existence by the spiritual world Echelion to harvest energy from human or Demonic thoughts. Echelion created the material world to use it as a source of nourishment. A young Goddess named Lydia with black hair and blue eyes smiled , she was dressed in a long white dress with a big diamond on her chest. her smile was more beautiful than the smiles from the other and she was holding a black cat in her arms ,she stood up and asked „-What does it mean to live in the spiritual world without love? isn't love the one that makes us and the humans happy?” making Yahweh smile as he walked closely to the girl smiling and looking at her ,replying to the question „Love brings both happiness and sorrow ,love means sacrificing yourself. It can bring a lot of happiness when two youngsters engage in passion, but it also brings a lot of pain when a son keeps vigil at his dying mother's bed. Both are signs of love but love , but it's a different love. To live without love can also mean to try to escape from something that is too hard to bear” Yahweh explained looking at the girl slowly „but the question is can we live without love” Yahweh continued asking his questions and she replied „You talk about the love between humans but what about us? Can a goddess like me love someone? and if yes what does it mean to love someone who won't live with you forever?

Won't I feel lonely without that person?" She comes near him and shows him her hand „This hand isn't different from a humans hand but it can kill and give life...why can't I find love then?" Yahweh looked at her „our laws forbid mixing of species to avoid problems like that, this is a reason a young inexperienced Goddesses are forbidden to love mortal man, we placed these rules so you won't get hurt by the sight of you're love one dying. Cause we are destined to exist forever" Yahweh walked away and sitted on the white rock and looked at the inexperienced Goddess „Still you are forbidden to love a mortal man untill you understand what true love is,once you're ready you will no longer experience sadness by loosing someone. We are immortal and these that died become one of us once you finish you're learning you'll know when the man whom you love may come to you're realm or is he even ready to accept a Goddess as his partner" Yahweh replied looking at Lydia who seemed to look at him a bit nervously.Lydia looked away and said " Why can't we fall in love with a God? and why do I have to be a Goddess and not a human? What if I live this life and go to be a human, will I be killed?" She asked looking sadly while Yahweh laughed „oh dear child who said you cannot love a God like yourself, no body forbids us to love each other and humans. You must understand that these regulations are suggestions to keep us safe, not all of them need to be obeyed. Sometimes certain God's or Goddesses go to far with these restrictions from pride, you yourself need to understand which rules should be obeyed and which shouldn't. When learning you need to first ask youre own hearth which restrictions are good and which are bad, we too are a gathering of both God's that surve the light and these that surve darkness. Some rules are meant to enslave even us and it requires wisdom to know for what purpose they were imposed my dear" Yahweh replied again trying to calm down the young Goddes. The Goddess looked at him sadly " Why didn't I feel love for a God from here then? Why am I all alone?" She asked sorrowfully , Yahweh looked at her seriously and walked towards her , patting her arm „are you lonely ? You cannot force love ,its a very unpredictable feeling it appears when you're ready ..that is when you will be in love ,only than you will know why you weren't able to feel it before" Yahweh replied and looked around the gathered.Some water that formed on the grass was falling down slowly hitting the ground.Making a quiet noise, that calmed the atmosphere. The water in the lake was slowly flowing towards the ground as well, touching it delicately while beeing splashed by some Gods who carelessly played in water. The winds blown slowly carrying a strange and magical song, a young Goddes stood in the center of the gathered and acompanied by a chorus ,from few heavingly maidens sung a strange ancient beatifull song. Which was a prayer similliar to the one sung by Arua. Elements of nature were gathered and worshiped as another spell was invoked during the meeting. This happenned during the conversation The Goddess named Lydia had with Yahweh. Zavebe smirked looking at the young Goddess amused, thinking about the words she said, wondering why would one waiste his time on love. Beeing a corrupted dark angel himself, who in the past betrayed and murdered his companions, he couldn't understand the pain the young Goddess felt, instead preffering to correct his golden attire and looking into the Dark God Belzebub he choosed to whorship and follow. Belzebub, Zavebe's master was the God of money, corruption and greed. A God who feared Galamouth's wrath and just punishment for his crimes, but Belzebub was born from greed and avarice the world had and therefore constituted only the incarnation of every single greedy thought rather than beeing the creator of greed,the same was true with other God's which represented emotions and thought energies made by humans. In truth God's are created by humans and they represent their convictions,sometimes even evolving from humans after beeing possessed by these energies themselves. Gods and Goddesses how beautifull they were , were only tools used by Echelion and therefore ,shouldn't be worshipped,yet as every beeings desiring authority they themselves createn their cults. Thus God's and Goddesses were corrupt , spoilt and evil to some extent, yet among these spoiled and corrupt politicians there were few truely devoted to their cause and used their powers to guide the human race, rather than enslaving them. One of these God's was Yahweh who himself was a human. He became the ultimate priest like figure and an powerfull patriach to whom many look up to. Other God's became patriachall figures themselves as well not always mis-using their powers. Because they were God's that surved either the light or the dark side, this gathering was a joint gathering of both the Dark and the Light. For the enemy

threatened entire existence. This was a rare occasion, and a very hard alliance. It wasn't easy for God's to put aside their differences and work together for they too were influenced by human emotions, that give them their birth. But they gathered together to try to defeat, Galamouth. The first one that discovered the hidden truths of the world. Galamouth was the first among the God's to comprehend the mystical knowledge of the universe, the knowledge that was to remain a mystery forever. This is what we call a Mystery, and mysteries are supposed to remain a secret, yet even so many will look for this knowledge thinking it will give them power, only to understand how weak they really are, cause that is the curse of the Mystery. The curse that wasn't brought by any divine power, but by mere actions some take, before realising that everything has a consequence, a spiritual price one needs to pay. We all receive rewards and punishments as parts of this spiritual price, that's why we sometimes suffer for someone else's mistakes, but if it wasn't fair than something positive will come our way. Cause the Universe will maintain its balance.

The material world is precious to spiritual realm, cause it's a place seeds grow, concepts develop and live on. Your world is a factory and a garden that sustain us living in the spiritual realm. The spiritual realm Echelon is like a river that rushes and splashes on the rocks which is your world, but these rocks are important cause mold grows on them, and on this mold traveling fishes feed, that's why rocks in the river aren't a disturbance, these rocks save the fishes from hunger. The Humans are precious to God's cause they're the ones that sustain them, by giving their energy and producing ideas which help the universe and the spiritual realm to grow, without that there wouldn't be anything. God created the material world, so we could live out our dreams and evolve, create and give birth to others, other world dimensions. It all starts from a single impulse created by the human brain. In order to succeed with his mad ambition the Dark God Galamouth needed to cause injury to humans, God's knew that sooner or later Galamouth would try to divide and break the human race, all of the God's were therefore determined to protect the humans. Despite this never spoken, all Gods knew this in their hearts. Because not all communication went in spoken language, there were other ways to communicate with each other that the enemy was unaware, and although it all looked like nothing was discussed. As God's were playing talking and Yahweh was having a conversation with a young Goddess Lydia about love, just as if nothing happened. The true conversation and debate took place spiritually, and emotionally. Instantly everything was analysed, summarized and agreed on, and this all happened even before Yahweh stood up from his place, before talking to Lydia and even before Gabrielle entered the new meeting place. It happened in a instant that was the powerful communication God's were capable of. The simple and universal language of thought of energies, emotions and visions. Without even speaking a single word one could communicate entirely this whole text in a single image, assuming the other could understand the image everything could be said in an instant. That was the form God's could talk of course for them even an image wasn't necessary just a feeling that was recognized, single feeling. That certain one thing described everything in a flash. That was the language God's and spirits used to communicate, but this language was hard to understand for one that wasn't among these God's cause this language also evolved. Of course even for me it's hard to describe what exactly was it, for you who never experienced it's something hard to understand. But an instant is a instant it doesn't take long, instant is a single glance. Yahweh looked at all Gods and all was discussed as he looked on them for an instant. The moment he took notice of God's it was all already discussed and everything was communicated. All received the message and communicated their own, it was over even before it begun. This is the only way I could explain this to you. A silver haired Goddess was sitting in the center of the gathered on an ice throne, a bit above the other God's who were sitting on the yellow sands of the beach, she was sitting above them a young beautiful Goddess, her silver hair was bright as the sun. Through her eyes slightly open you could see how cold she looked at the gods. Her dark blue robe appeared black in sunlight. You could feel around her chills driven through other's auras. She have opened her eyes and looked at Yahweh and said, "If the gods are born from people's wishes, why they need love?". On her left hand is her crescent bracelet. She brought his hand to ear, touched her earring and closed her eyes. She got in harmony with all other gods, and using her telepathic power continues saying "We should love the people, they created us all with

their desires they will destroy us if they will lose their faith in us. Yahweh, you were mortal, at least you, from all the Gods, should understand how much we depend on people ... " Yahweh walked back a bit and looked at her seriously kneeling before her, being something of both a servant and master to these Gods, they all depended on his guidance. „It's because I was once human, I understand the weakness of human soul" He admitted looking away and observing the forest in the distance. „Humans have a unique power that gives birth to many wonderful things, it's called creation. It's a power we too inherited from them, humans have the capacity to experience many things. Both pleasure and pain, but they sometimes lack the will to understand" Yahweh looked up into the cold eyes of the Goddess, one of many that was created from human emotions. Hearing the words that Yahweh said the blue eyes of the Goddess became black, and her crescent shaped necklace began to shine. Each God and Goddess felt a massive energy coming from the Goddess with silver hair. They saw how a colorless sphere appeared close to her necklace and grew as big as the lake. She took the sphere in the left hand and said " Look one more time at what people made from their world, from your world Yahweh, I'd be grateful to disappear instead of seeing how well it will be the end of the world, Lydia, you may have given without to realize the hope and salvation of mortals ". The sphere showed mortal world, in her all colors. After a short time, she rose up, raised her hand and the sphere became smaller and smaller till she got in Goddess hand and vanished. She glared once again at Yahweh with a cold look then sat back on her throne of ice. Yahweh smiled and walked away from the icy throne, creating a small circle, then doing another one in the sand outside the first one, then creating another and repeating this action till he made nine circles, that represented the solar system, he then drew tiny spheres to represent planets. Yahweh then looked at what he drew and smiled. „Humans are capable of evil that's true but, have you ever seen how happy and proud they are when they achieve a goal. Have you ever asked a person named Neil Armstrong, how it felt being overwhelmed by darkness, or Copernicus who was just a bishop, how he figured out this." Yahweh looked showing the Goddess what he drew in the sand, using his cane. „Go and ask your questions to these two, you'll be surprised at their answer, this is humanity" Yahweh replied and looked seriously in the Goddess eyes while continuing „don't judge them by their weaknesses, they're not weak. There is no one without faults, but our fate isn't predetermined by our faults, but rather by our will to overcome them, this is true for humanity as well" Yahweh ended smiling. With a cold look the Goddess rose and headed to Yahweh, behind her the ice throne vanished. She stopped a few steps from Yahweh and said " You are still a mortal, aren't you ? " then smiled evilly, continuing "humans made the taboo, sooner or later they will destroy everything they ever made ! they can't trust themselves, they betray, hurt and kill, they may be creators ... but in my eyes ..." touch her earring "they are the same, they destroy everything ". Belzebub who was sitting a few Gods away from the Goddess, next to his dark haired angel Zavebe smirked, glaring. The vicious old man looked at Yahweh almost laughing „Poor Yahweh, believing in humans do you ?" he continued to mock him and stood up, dressed in dark cloth like robes, with golden serpent ornaments. Belzebub remembered the times when he too was mortal, and ruled over many humans, Belzebub was always a ruler, born from the ruler's race, destined to govern humanity, therefore even when he became a god, he still continued to be a ruler. „Not only do people not trust each other, they're also corrupt...this corruption leads the world to the brink of annihilation each time, even Christ himself was crucified because of the human lust, poor Yahweh do you really believe in their goodness ?" Belzebub asked mockingly, being proud of himself. Yahweh dressed in similar yet grey cloth like robes, that were a bit more dirty, or at least appeared to be more dirty, not made from the same precious material Belzebub wore, sat down on the grey rock and looked at Belzebub smiling „yes my friends I will continue to believe in the goodness inside them" Yahweh replied knowing well he would be ridiculed by the dark Gods, but in reality he held respect, among many of them. Because of both his uncommon faith in goodness and the incredible, even for a God ! will to help everybody. That's why Yahweh was given the position of the High priest among the Gods and Goddesses that were just servants and messengers of the real God. As a dark Goddess, the young Goddess with silver hair, looked at the other dark Gods with her icy

eyes , then once again looked at Yahweh and thought."they are so much alike ... yet he is dead " . She went to Yahweh and turn her back in front of him , looking at the Gods from his place , than said "if this man is enough brave to became a God yet to be a mortal in his heart , then you dear Dark Gods are inferiors to him . " then she turned back , looking at Yahweh face , and slightly caressed his cheek with her left hand , then whisper "if mortals could reincarnate , I wouldn't mind him being you " then she returned to the place where stood the throne and made him reappear . Zavebe smirked and laughed, his eyes looked at the goddess mockingly, and yet somewhere in his hearth he understood why the goddess took Yahweh's side „ is that so ? us inferior to him ? ridicculous ,you all love to waste time” Zavebe smirked while replying angrily looking at the God's „were not inferior to anyone ! so shut up or Ill make you eat these words” Zavebe expressed trying to stand up only to have a golden sword sticken up to his throat by Gabrielle who walked up towards him, standing in front of him and looking straightly into his eyes „I suggest you calm down” Gabrielle replied looking at him seriously „you haven't changed at all...we don't need to fight among ourselves !!” she added looking at the dark Goddess with respect.The dark Goddess looked at Gabrielle and smiled . She raised her hand and in her hand appeared a beautiful necklace with a red powerfully stone , then said to Gabrielle "from people's heart , hopes , anger , love and faith , were born one a pone the time two celestial beings . They were cursed and bonded together to have the same fate. If one of them died the other one would die as well ... " then sadly touched her necklace , and continued "the two celestial beings were one and the same , yet their powers were opposed to each other , they were created by a small but powerful province , who named them Yin & Yang . Their power was absolute . They have always kept the balance ... till a horrible day came ... In the small province came a stranger who named himself as being The God upon the Gods . People believed in him and slowly forgot about their beloved Gods , letting them <<die>> slowly . Yin(evil) & Yang(good) felt how their powers flowed slowly , and right when they way to vanish Yang took his sister hand and give her all the power he had in order for her to survive , and he vanished like he never existed ... weakened she lost her consciousness and when she woke up she was alone in a place with dark material , and she stood there and reborn as a Goddess . A Goddess who is neither good neither dark , who don't have need of people to exist and give her power . A another kind of God . " the Goddess rose and went to Gabrielle and put on her neck the collar with red stone saying " this it was the collar that gave to that man power , this is the collar who destroyed the balance , yet I'm giving this to you because I know that sooner or later you will have need of power and no-one will help you , as I had need and my brother sacrificed himself for me ... Some day , Gods and Goddess you will vanish with you mortal , but I will exist forever neither feeling pain , loneliness or madness , or pleasure . As a curse I cannot die , cannot love , cannot vanish ... " then she returned to her throne of ice , looking at the rest of the Gods and Goddess , then glaring with her scary-devil eyes to Yahweh . Yahweh understood why she glared at him, he knew that God that came and destroyed her beloved brother. It was non other than Galamouth who used his powers to corrupt the people, in order to weaken these God's. Yahweh could only look sadly on the grass observing the beatles as they fought on it. Seeing Yahweh distressed look , the young Goodness with silver hair said " whatever Galamouth wants we are many , combined we can create a huge energy ... yet what kind of God is Galamouth ? What do you know about him Yahweh ? In a war we must know the weakness and the strengths of our enemy . Yahweh , tell us” She asked looking towards Yahweh who looked at her. He than stood up and looked at the gathering starting his ancient tale:

„Lord Galamouth was always a very bizzare God,just as my self he was born a human. He was mine teacher, actually together with the present here Bal we were his aprentice, at that time I was just an orphan. Who was adopted by this strange man, it was back on earth billions of eons,years ago or even further in my past, forgive me but its hard to recall such distant memories, we lived in a country named Zion. A creation established under the great Dutchy of Polandia. Zion was administrated under the five consulates, of which the present here Bal was the closest to my hearth. The desert country ,established after centuries of a civil war, surved as the Polandian's military space base and secret research center. People of different races gathered under a global religion.

Earth anno domini 666666 I can clearly remember the date cause of this unique number. The number that in our culture inspired many fears and curiosity. the first part of the year number 666 is the traditional symbol of Satan which was suppose to be the ultimate Dark God a rival to the God of light we worshiped,Earth religion was based on dualism, which claimed that there are two God's the God Creator , master of light to which we all prayed, beeing his followers and the God Destroyer whom we described as the Satan. We humans couldn't accept the fact that the Good loving God creator and the Evil vengfull God destroyer were in fact the same God and that both Good and Evil existed to maintain a universal balance,and allow us mortals to choose our path,in that time I used to be mesmerized by the tiny stars I saw from the desert outside the building me and Lord Galamouth used to live in. Now what kinda building it was, you should understand my Lord and my teacher had a very peculiar way of choosing the place to live in. The Building itself were ruins of an anciet temple, a very small temple, probably an ancient christian monastery in which he stoored many books, yes I remember these ancient occultic books he gathered. Galamouth was always busy with whatever he was doing, beeing constantly consumed in his research. Our meeting...how did I actually came across the mad lord ? Now I remember it, it was the middle of a very cold night. Beeing hungry I walked the streets of the empty metropol, while other children slept in theire warm beds.I was one of these childrens nobody cared about. Cold nights and hot days were common in this desert country, poverty and hunger was a huge problem. Statistically 45 % of population of Zion was impoverished and many children were in the same situation. It was a very cold night, weak and hungry I made my way throught the alleys, my fate uncertain. The smell of the rotten corps of these that died of hunger or disase before me was fulling the air,the pain that caused me to vomit. Living beyound the human society,beeing thrown outs, without familly or even a place to stay. Ordinary people treated us like garbagge, no one in the right mind would leand a hand to us. He was standing like a shadow in this darkness,the air un-usually dense and the blood smell fulling the air. I wasn't aware whether this was a dream or reality. The Dark Lord Galamouth stood in the middle of a huge street, close to the center his eyes observing the corpses,taking notice of me, just as if he came looking for me. The man dressed in a dark cloath walked closer to me , nearing very quickly. Even than I could realize that this was no human „Is this death ?” I used to wonder as the figure stood infront of me „You'll make a nice specimen boy ..come with me if you wish to survive” He spoke to me and walked away, leaving me startled on the streets,hungry weak and without any hope. I was willing to follow even death itself. I followed the Dark Lord,who soon became my mentor.” Yahweh ended looking into the silver hair Goddess eyes „What was Galamouth like? for a time he was master of live and death in my eyes” said Yahweh answering the Goddess question. „One of his notorious traits I could elaborate about would have to be his dedication to his work, and collecting information. Even than his ambition was his main purpose in life, The Lord would always elaborate on the decaying state of affair and how rotten the souls of humans are, he destested it and dreamed to change it, he always told me that fulfilment of his desire would bring peace and hapiness in the new world, he wished to restart the world according to his own visions...and naturally he wouldn't stand any opposition. No one was to defy his desire, The Lord is very inteligent and skilled in psychologcall manipulation, capable of understanding and even providing the needs of others. He has traces of empathy inside him,but at the same time is convinced that his is the only way to save this world, secretive always saying whats on his mind enjoying long theatricall speeches,enjoying everything thats theatricall. Galamouth is the first man that became a God. He gathered a huge ammount of spiritual energy and in battle is capable of many twisted tactics,no single God could dream of defeating him” Yahweh relplied and looked at the gathered, who stared at him with schock,it was the first time they heard Yahweh's story.Some God's were astonished to find out about Yahweh's childhood,the greatest among light God's was a beggar. This fact schocked many since now Yahweh was the leader of the most powerfull Universe spawning state, the eternal metropol, the Megacivilisation as well as the leader of the God's the tittle he incherited after Galamouth was defeated, the first time he tried to fulfill his mad ambition.The Gods listened carefully, while white clouds were pushed on the blue skies. The almost clear water, gently touched the yellow sands of the beach. The place was peacefull, very natural. The God's escaped the

closed reality , they themselves crafted ,into something natural. An Unknown world full of beauty and nature, subtle presence that allowed the God's to recharge themselves, after that stressful battle. While Yahweh continued explaining, birds were singing their songs. Communicating with each other, variety of small and bigger birds that swam in the lakes, or the ones that occupied the blue skies, there were also few that dug in the yellow sands. Birds were not the only animals, ear dropping on the God's conversation, further away few deers were eating grass or slowly, without a care nuzzled the berries of the bush. Life seemed to go with its own peace, without a single care despite these troubled times. In the waters numerous of gold, blue or silver fishes found shelter, thought some of them became a pray for some birds that knew how to take them out from the water, without drowning themselves. Despite these fishes keeping in tight groups, these groups were easily divided by the birds that captured single fishes, none of the other fishes in the group bothered to rescue the captured ones, to try and jump out from the water ,to scare the birds into dropping the captured ones into the water. The other fishes simply cowardly run away dividing the group, leaving the captured ones, to their doom. This is how all societies work. Like these fishes the group will always abandon the individuals to their doom. These are truths that are taught by nature itself, these that say that societies are constructed for benefit of all, are liars. No one is protected by a group, the group strength is just a strength of cowards , these that can run away will run away leaving the weaker to be killed. This is nature. Just like in the case of these fishes being in a group doesn't make it easier for them to survive, it makes it easier for the predator to spot them and pick the most tasty dish for themselves.

Societies and institutions are slaughter houses, were you gather individuals making them play a farse and let the true predators choose, whom they want to abuse and destroy. That is the role of the society to destroy the individuals, oppress and enslave. Mock abuse, oppress and destroy, humiliate and to create pain to feed the always hungry whores of the system, and the structure they created , the structure that created them. The Structure that binds them to slavery and destroys them as well. The structure that fears them, cause their loyal to it , and therefore punishes its best servants. The System doesn't trust even its subordinates. Cause the system being just a structure , detests all life. The System fears life, cause it has the ability to create. While this structure main purpose is to destroy, until their's nothing to destroy and it itself will be destroyed. That's why anyone helping the system is immediately its enemy, anyone trying to help others is a criminal, under its laws there is no justice just the punishment, which has to be severe and humiliating even for a very slight hint of defiance. Even laughing from the whores of the System is forbidden, cause laughter is pleasant and shows that others aren't afraid of it, that's why these that dare to laugh from the mighty must be killed. These are also the reasons Galamouth wanted war, however little he was aware of it, System is like a virus recreates itself in all conditions. If the individuals themselves are strong , the system is just a mad dog employed to guard them from danger if they're weak, the beast starts consuming them. In my original world the second one was the case. Earth was slowly consumed by the System and would be destroyed. This place was however peaceful and the sun shined warmly on the God's who discussed , Yahweh's relationship with Galamouth.

"where is peace and silence there is also a promise to war " said the Goddess with silver hair .

"will u be able to fight against the one who gave u a chance to live ? He , even thought that may do evil things now , he was the one who laid his hand to u when nobody else did , are u strong enough to be against him ? And looking back in ur story we still didn't learn what made u a god , and what made u to leave Galamouth ... " The Goddess with silver hair looked straightway to Yahweh and then to the other gods and saw that she spoke out everyone's mind . "so , Yahweh , please continue ". The God's observed the situation calmly as Yahweh , took few breaths. The Old man who was turned into a God, was simply too humble to trouble the God's with his own past. He felt like a nuisance at that moment, but slowly gazed upon the gathered God's and continued his story , "That is true Lord Galamouth was the only one who extended his hand towards me....despite the fact he was , what most of you and others would say a monstrosity....Its a very good question actually, how hopeless mine existence was.... Im ashamed of this, but I do admire my lord's determination...his determination to change the world. Correcting all of this evil....but as many of you I cannot agree

with the methods he uses, Lord Galamouth wrongly assesses things...believing that only total destruction could free us from pain, no, salvation as you know lies in creation not destruction....I hope he will understand that our role as God's is to create mixing elemental life forces and universal energies....That is our true purpose this is what our God true master of creation wishes for.... The one who opened my eyes to the truth, and entered me into this path of what you call , Godliness...I never considered myself as a God. I'm just a human who's allowed to exist for eternity, just a keeper of the eternal fire....Calling myself a God would be an arrogance my dear brothers and sisters...while we were called that by our fellow human and other mortal brethren we were not God's , just ones created to follow God's plan... yes the one to direct me into the path was the Mad Lord...because of him I could interact with the spiritual and see things ,that changed my fate forever. My fate as I mentioned was of no concern to the other human...for them, me and many childrens were just trash...a waste product of our war torn reality. My Lord's madness was a creation of war as well...he was shaped by the events called as the partitions of Poland and the country's occupation, by the three Empires....the three dark eagles. My Lord was a person adopted into this reality, from a proud race of people known as the Mongolian Tatars....who used to wage wars against Poland and later become the servants and adopted citizens of the very nation they fought against. Due to the fact that their empire fallen with time.....With time the adopted people too were given privileges and became Poles...as Publically only Citizens of Poland could hold authority in the country...Tatars were recognized as being Polish and thanks to that were allowed to practice their muslim religion,in a country that was ruled by Roman Catholicism. Few generations later my Lord was born into the country, that already lost its independence....and was employed in the service of the adopted homeland...in its strifes for freedom....Helping to maintain integrity in Poland's time of need...Fighting armed battles against oppression and living his normal life that was forever shattered by that tragedy” Yahweh finished silently looking at the young Goddess with silver hair. Smiling and cheerfully asked the Goddess a question that was residing in his mind „Forgive me my sudden question ..but have you told us your name yet?I don't remember hearing it ...I don't want to intrude upon your privacy my lady...cause I could peek in your thoughts and find out” Yahweh teasingly replied , avoiding the topic. But also being curious of the goddess identity. Belzebub smirked „ah Yahweh always changing the subject aren't we..never getting to the important things...forgive him my lady ,but as far as I knew him he was always a scatter head” Belzebub intruded trying to explain Yahweh, also a bit mocking him and trying to remember himself what was it, that made them God's in the first place. „its almost unbelievable that someone like him rules the entire Megacivilisation..just proves what money and a lot of teamwork can do” Belzebub added and looked at Yahweh ,smirking evilly thinking how money was influential. Looking at Yahweh with suspicious eyes , the Goddess with silver hair said : "u may read my thoughts yet u won't find an answer , I have lost my brother and my name as well , from that time on didn't have a name , if you want , you may give me a name " She looked at the sky and breath , then moved her eyes on Yahweh . " Now , continue , we won't let u to finish when u only reached half of ur story . Tell us what u hide , or we will look inside of ur memories by ourselves ... Yahweh ". The Goddess expressed , threatening Yahweh a bit as he looked away and smiled „ you definitely know , how to get what you want...you really don't intend to let me hide it anymore...but that doesn't mean I wanna tell you just now....no, the truth is I dunno how to tell this story....when we discovered the full scale of our Lord's madness, we formed an informal alliance between light and dark God's,creating the 666 organization, naming it after the mythical number of the devil, and after that year in which I met the Mad Lord.The purpose of our meeting is to reactivate this long forgotten alliance,some of the younger God's might never have heard of this long forgotten story,but in the distant past we fought this war already...since most of you were born after these events, its only natural that you don't knowwhom I really am. I am Yahweh Lord's Galamouth disciple and one of his servants,everything you see around you, was both analysed and created by Lord Galamouth, Megacivilisation is a universe spawning, industrial metropolis like ,cosmic base set in the material world , which original purpose was to gather massive spiritual energy, that could be used in developing magical plains.Most of these magical inginiery used by the mad lord, and what's more

shameful even these weapons that were used against you were developed by me. All existence needs two plains of existence, the spiritual and the material, Megacivilisation is an industrial achievement that combines these two, uniting and enhancing everybody's abilities to its full potential in both planes...On the surface Megacivilisation acts as a huge universe fulling metropolis that expands itself covering all known solar systems and entire galaxies, joining all worlds into a federation, ruled by the Governmental body which I lead, it contains, business, economy, cultural centers, religious centers, housing, shopping ...everything necessary for the modern society to work, play and reside in, that's because Megacivilisation is a universe spawning spiritual tool ..made to control entire societies and harvest spiritual energy from them, or to manipulate dimension and even distort it. We made it to mirror a futuristic almost utopian metropolis, allowing us to mix both light and darkness by using humans and enducing them with contradistinct qualities that would be fueled by the enormous shape of the metropolis, its enough to make them see entire galaxies from their windows, the fact it's a world always induced in darkness in the center of the cosmos and the clearly visible manifestation of human technology, which we made sure were seen and accepted by all, these combined contradictions, allow us to gather energy by fuelling humans with emotions ranging from passion to panic, in the world we created we made sure everything is possible to its full extent allowing us to gather the most energy from a single being, now just think what could be done with this energy.... We divide this energy equally using it to fuel these that might feel weak, ensuring the miracles happens in each life, whether their small or enormous things, with spiritual energy we harvest everything is possible..we can even return your world to the way it was before Galamouth interfered with it...we use this energy to create and enhance creation, adding it to the power God already has empowering him with it... However this same energy can be turned into a destructive distortion force ..if not handled properly that's why we ensured that only God himself has full access to it, and he is the one that divides the spoils equally among all...Galamouth aims to take charge of this energy by denying God his rights, and then he will use it to suspend all existence to destroy everything that was created. To return the world into the state of nothingness" Yahweh answered looking into the Silver haired Goddess eyes. „of course we made some defence locks to that power, however knowing our Mad Lord he will find a way to bypass them...God operates on our own will..therefore he was given this authority..however because of this it may Allow Galamouth's plan to come into fruition...so we need to move one step further...we need to change our lord's ambition into something less dangerous, once it's done he will return to our ranks...Luckily if we have a bigger ambition to protect the world and unite ourselves in true manner The God will work on our will instead of his...this is our only hope so we must believe in ourselves.. God has always been full of surprises...there is one in the battlefield who will stand and lead the way even though he too was once a human...the world needs fools...but sometimes it's the fools who are the smartest one, remember that" Yahweh added looking into the sky, smiling because in his eyes it was the most divine sight."So you plan to change Galamouth way of thinking in order to end the war he started ... Are we that weak against him? Being his disciple, don't you know any weakness of his? And I'm aware of the power of fools ...". Zavebe laughed and mockingly looked at Yahweh „Yahweh is the weakest among us, because of his foolish emotions" Zavebe ridiculed Yahweh but was hit in the head, by Belzebub's walking stick as he angrily looked at his disciple „don't you dare insult my friend in front of me ...if we can do that then this will prove our strength...it's the weak who consider this strategy a weakness. Think about it in order to control someone ..you must have more power than he does...besides this isn't a typical war.Haven't you been paying attention my lady...but Yahweh you of all people know how impossible this is? don't be a fool, miracles don't happen by themselves, it's we who create them...we have nothing to offer to him, he's not interested in money, renounced his faith, doesn't belong to any communities, obeys no laws, forsaken the pleasures of the flesh, doesn't follow logic, there is nothing we Gods can offer to restrain his main desire, nothing to use as a tool to divert his interests, the only option...we must reseal him. His only weakness lies within his obsession with his ambition, we must ensure that he won't see our movements, he is blind to our power and that's how we can defeat him" Belzebub expressed and looked at troubled Yahweh. Being teased by Belzebub's words, the young Goddess told him:

"Belzebub , I paid attention , yet it doesn't make a sense to me why Galamouth is so strong ... why he want to destroy mortals ... and what will he do after he destroy everything ... in my eyes he's acting like a spoiled brat who didn't get what he wanted and now is angry . And this so named war , it doesn't seem a war to me . . . " The young Goddess looked to her bracelet sadly and said " my beloved brother used to say <nothing dies , everything's transforming > , don't u think that this is Galamouth intention ... to make this world his empire . As u already said Yahweh, he craves for nothing and desire for nothing ". Yahweh looked at her and answered „yet there was a time he desired a woman...” he stoped and looked back at her."a woman ...Yes , a mortal desire . Then , Yahweh , why don't u try to describe her or at last why was she desired by Galamouth" ..She asked. Yahweh stood up and gently walked to the Ice goddess „they say she looked like a Goddess....her name was Emilia Platter a captain of Polish armed forces, born 1806 Earth's time ,death 1831 Earth time in the place called Justynianka... A Polish countess, Inteligent with powerfull charisma with an truely angelic voice....Galamouth mentioned that it was her singing that he loved the most in her. At that time he was known as Dal-Iwin a baron of Tatar ancestry, employed as the captain inginier in the Polish forces. The both shared a very pationate romance based on Galamouth's own descriptions,I can't say how much of it was truth and how much he idealised it himself. He was introduced to her by her brother,She was drawn to him because of his escentrick behaviour,which made the young Dal-Iwin unique among the rest of the Polish nobility, and these were the times where escentricity and romantism were valuedadleast she obviously valued these traits as she felt that Dal-Iwin was the only one that could understand her passion for the nation, she could also be described as the voice of reason in Galamouth's life.Emilia hold passion for history and Polish culture, which acompanied with Galamouth's love of everything theatricall, and opericall . would give an interesting mixture ,Emilia loved Glamouth's bouldness in preaching his megalomaniacall idea's ,while Galamouth enjoyed her singing and obviously reacted strongly on the positive feelings of belonging somewhere that she gived him, and the ability to control his narcistic behaviours ...which I must admit might as well be a clever invented ruse, as the Mad Lord never shown to be obsessed with power to the point of loosing himself, or this might as well be caused by the ambition he wishe's to acomplish..his megalomania seems to maifest itself in his escentrick behaviour towards people, but not to the point of beeing offensive ...perhaps she understood the reasons of such behaviour as resulting from the fact that Galamouth was born as a member of once proud nation which glory was dimished over the centuries. Hence he felt that he needs to prove to the Poles the pride and glory of the Tatars as reliable and influential allies in the Polish cause...whatever the reason Emilia was an exceptional polish woman, that could accept Galamouth as he was and perhaps they both were destined to live happily ever after if not for her death in 1831... a death that he witnessed , after caring for her well beeing a death he felt he should prevent , but was unable to” Yahweh explained looking at the Goddess.The Goddess showed to Yahweh her cold eyes , and said : " Where is love there is always something to lose , Galamouth knew that , so losing her it may his fault as I understand from ur words . U still haven't give me an answer , was he troubled by her death ? I don't ask because that would help us a lure him , i ask because I want to know if he had humanity in himself ... " She looked at Bezebub and said : " I have no reason to help u to lure him , or to help in battle , my powers are halved when I stay here or on the Earth , u need humans to believe in u , i don't , i'm staying here because i find u all enjoyable to watch . Whatever Galamouth wants , I don't care . " Piece by piece the throne of ice of the young Goddess was melting . Cold and calm the goddess said : " Continue ur story Yahweh , at last finish what u started ". Belzebub smirked and looked at her walking pushing Yahweh out of his way „before my friend can do that...I wish you clarified you're intentions....Matrimona Del System , you're phony apperance dosen't full us...you're also his accomplice” Belzebub clarified observing the young Goddess ,who continued to look at them coldly

."I ? his accomplice ? I think u made a bad joke Belzebub . " said angry the silver haired Goddess . Her cold eyes became evil and the atmosphere around her changed . She looked at the other Gods and said . "U said right only one thing : I am Matrimona Del System . I did not thought that I'll fool u or the other gods , yet I see that they are more than surprised hearing ur words Belzebub . Those

foolish Gods don't know anything . Useless Gods , they will be destroyed first by my anger . I'll get rid of u all , or maybe I should let Yahweh alive , to see how the end of world feels . " The eternal virgin sat on the grass, observing the scene a bit annoyed, at the young silver haired goddess, correcting her hair, and glancing on the Medusa head embedded in her shield. Smiling Athena rose up from the place she sat on, elegantly walking towards, Yahweh and the two other Gods standing behind Yahweh, hugging the old man from behind. „what a foolish desire” she remarked looking at the gathered Gods, smiling as she let Yahweh go standing in front of the Goddess, with her tomboyish and always self confident attitude, looking straightly into Matrimona's eyes. „ We the ancient Gods are shaped by this reality, we won't be able to destroy it ” Athena answered the question that was in everybody's heads. Seeing Athena's confidence , Matrimona felt annoyed and said with a grave tone : "Don't you think before you talk ? You will always need of mortals to believe in you , once they will vanish , u will slowly lose your powers and vanish ". She looked then at Yahweh with her cold eyes and said : " Mortals will always be mortals , and will have carnal desire , even you Yahweh , you toyed by a woman , how foolish . Even the madness is more powerful than love . I pity you , you don't know how true love feels yet you act like you have the greatest knowledge . U'r inferior to Galamouth ". Yahweh looked sadly into the skies, knowing that what the evil Goddess said was true, he never knew passion, or joy, instead being just a bookworm. He didn't know anything about bounds, yet many times was forced to advise others on the meaning of love. He analysed and studied many treaties on love, yet never felt any desire, he wasn't even desired by any woman back in the times of his youth, and now appeared like an old man. Who was seen by others as a more parental, or patriarchal figure than an object of a desire. Athena walked back to Yahweh and hugged him once more, for this reason exactly, she admired this man. „That is true..Lord Galamouth is superior to me in this sense, he felt love. But I always had questions about this, is feeling love good to us, are we Gods even entitled to operate under these influence, feelings often corrupt our judgment, how many wars were fought because of these desires. I always tried to follow the path of knowledge rather than a path of love, for from knowledge comes well being, while love can also bring disaster if not controlled...Passion is the enemy of wisdom” Said Yahweh ending his speech, hoping that this clarified some things „being the arbiter between Gods I have no right to choose favourites, or to fall in love...I have to make the right choices for both of us and humanity even if they're not popular, that is the position I was given in this world” Yahweh explained. Disturbed by Yahweh , Matrimona looked at him with pitiful eyes "mortal people have a phrase <<As long as we live we're learning >> . U , Yahweh, aren't suited to be the arbiter ...". She looked at the crescent from her necklace and said with a sad tone " As a leader you have to feel both joy and disaster , both love and hate , and you must learn from mistakes , there is no God without defects , in other words there is no perfect God . Yahweh , you were chosen to be the ruler of both those worlds yet you don't know anything . Admits you're afraid that you'll do a mistake . " Matrimona looked at Athena , changing her calm eyes with disdainful eyes " Athena you're weak , those who are weak always stand by those who seem to them as being strong . Soon you'll see where your strong and fake slave Yahweh , will lead you and the others . Remember , everything that was once born will once die too , that's the rule of all the world ". Athena smiled and looked at Matrimona with her confidence „We didn't choose Yahweh to be our leader because he was strong, it's because Yahweh is the weakest among us, that he fulfills the role perfectly, don't expect to understand this” Athena admitted and continued to tease her elegantly. „but you underestimate everybody” she replied looking at Matrimona „even Galamouth” she added. "I do what others have done to me , I don't expect you Athena to understand either " replied Matrimona. Making Athena look at her , with pity „my now...this is exactly why I believe Yahweh is best suited to be our leader, we Gods cannot act on such trivial impulses like emotions ” She replied confidently mocking Matrimona. "Oh really ? Earlier some Gods complained that their feeling lonely . Do you think that intelligence can surpass the most primordial feelings ? Don't act like you'd know everything . Listen before you talk , learn before you act , otherwise , you'll turn into dust .. huh I wonder why would I even care . You're all a bunch of idiots . Raised in perfection's illusions , you will never be able to reach the true perfection . Never ! " Angry Matrimona looked at

Yahweh with pitiful eyes , tried to say something , but stopped before any word come out . She didn't want to continue a useless chat , with a useless issue . Her true reasons who made her go all the way till the Eden's corner of Gods weren't with mercy for the others , she wanted to destroy every piece of the world and die after , in the hope that she will come on more time , by her brother, Arthemis.

Athena smiled and looked with superiority, oblivious to the fact that Matrimona could have been right. „thats why I said it's good that Yahweh is our leader” She explained. Athena disliked God's who were corrupted by theire emotions,she took it very personally and tried to prove that wisdom is more important than love

„God's who become corrupted by these emotions,don't deserve to be one of us,were not mortals to be confined in such chains. Think of it for a while ...we decide about many great things, tasked by our creator to gather spiritual energy. We musn't allow ourselves to be influnce by these little and pathetic states of mind. Do you adleast try to understand , how much unnecessary commotion you're actions have caused Matrimona!!! ?” Athena replied looking and shouting angrily at the silver haired Goddess."I lived longer that you did Athena . I used to consider everything's and everyones feelings , but I reached the limit of it . How would you feel if you'd be treated with hate and anger by every being , how would you feel if you would be forced to stay in death's chains in order to avoid a useless conflict . Athena emotions are everything . We were born from emotions , so we must live in and with emotions . I don't expect you to understand . U or any other god . I got tired by ur foolish speech . If you have something worth to say , then say . If you don't shut your mouth forever " . Athena with whole her wisdom looked at the silver haired goddess with pittty,she didn't even try to understand Matrimona, because she was the great Athena,a proud Greek goddess that would follow only her own reason. Actually Athena didn't care about Matrimona's feelings, she just didn't want to listen to the God's who claimed that an inferior feeling , might be more important than billion, eons of years worth of knowledge. „God's should learn to control theire emotions” She hesitantly looked at the God's and returned to her place. Lilith was smiling looking at the God's knowing that Athena, was the last person that would know anything about it. The Dark Queen sitted silently,permitting herself more time to analise the situation, The wife of Adam was older than Athena, who was just a childish goddess. „whatever they say...The gods born from light shouldn't even claim they understand the feelings of us born in darkness...Athena ,you're just a child that was born from you're fathers head, don't be a pain in the neck honey” Lilith replied smirking seductively.Sitting on her ice throne , Matrimona looked at both gods of light and dark . She thought why do this world must be divided and can't be one . Why do have to exist darkness and light , and can't be something that could combine them both . Why do exist evil and good , why can't there be only one thing that could keep a balance forever . troubled she bow a bit her had . She didn't want to look at anything . She wanted everything to be gone , hoping that after everything will disappear a new perfect world will be born . . .The same wishes that Galamouth had, but she couldn't understand, that her dream was impossible to acomplish. Reality as its known could be compared to a shared dream,and because there always could be someone opposing the end of the world. It was impossible to destroy it.Only one beeing could put a thorn in this ambition. Thats why its more effective to just simply accept the things as they are ,and than simply create you're own world, which will grow and become reality. Dimensions are like seeds, which a farmer plants on the field, they require constanst care, sprouting from a single idea,tying itself with other probalities, nourishing itself,slowly growing. Just like water is used to feed and grow the plants, Culture is used to feed and create new worlds, by developing idea's for a book, we unknowingly comcntrate our energy on it, the more we concentrate, the more we create. Matrimona Del System was created in this manner also, she was born from all the corrupted idea's, that came out from that greedy structure, from the system. But unfortunately she started to develope emotions,while still beeing forced to play the role,for which she was born. To be the evil Goddess that punishes people and other mortals in the name of the decayed Structure, since she started to rebell a bit, the system punished her using humans. Thats why she detested them and joined her forces with Galamouth.Zamolxis , a human being who also became a god . Zamolxis behavior was always as a

deity ones . He wanted to drink pure water from the bigger mountain and the most tasty and expensive food . Because he believed that he was made to be a god , yet didn't became one , at the age of 22 made up his death and tricked everyone . After feew days he came "back to life" and the villages around the place thought that is was a miraacle and he really became a real god . Next year a tough drought came and people asked Zamolxis to made a miracle and make rain . Scared of being exposed he locked himself in his room and during the night he parayed about his mistakes . When the sun rised God stretched to him His hand and made Zamolxis a god of hope . The other gods chatted, and laughted not paying attention to the conversation that took place. This debate of ancient gods, didn't resemble any formal meetings. Just as if the Gods were having a picnic on these fields of Eden. Eden was once a beautifull garden, a mini world crafted for the very first mortals. The original God's plan was to construct an enclosed material reality, a literal garden from which spiritual energy could be harvested. However soon it became obvious that material beeings are more complex than envisioned and in order to fulfill theire full potential a more complex reality had to be createn, mortals were tasked with this enormous work, unknowingly theire efforts are to create the perfect reality , so that theire spiritual energy could be harvested and put to use in the great creation scheme. In Zamolxis left , was Amun Ra , a beautiful Goddess , who was shining like the Sun . She was the most important deity for Egypt . There was a time when her name changed for Amun Ra to Aton , yet when the young Tutankamon/Tutankaton came on throne , the cult came back to Amun Ra . Her legendary existence began when a young child named Amun found a weary bird . He took the bird at home and took care of her . One day the child get sick and died . Because no-one could take care of the bird the parents of the child set her free , yet the the bird flew at the place where the child was buried and stood there up until she died . Few days later it was a eclipse and all the lands were surrounded by darkness except the place where the bird was . The villagers gone to the lighted place and saw a miracle , the bird became a beautiful girl , a Goddess , they named her Amun Ra , the one who came from sun's rays. Another interesting God that was sitting in the crowd, was Thor, a warrior god of the vikins, born in the harsh winds of a very cold winter. In the far away scandinavia, born from the heavenly Aesir dynasty. A political and military influential one. Theire home was the mythical Asgard. He was the son of a very cunning God known as Odin, like Zeus Thor was able to control thunder, he was also known because of his trademark weapon known as Mjolner , whih basically was a very giant hammer, he was dressed in red nordic attire that was decorated with golden ornaments, on his face a huge red beard, and on his head a traditional viking helmet. Thor looked carefully at the gathered god's , keeping an eye on his own enemies. Yahweh was standing in front of the silver Goddess, once beeing a man, now a high priest and a leader of Megacivilisation, a God of fire and one of the most enigmaticall figures in the universe, Belzebub was once known as Bal and later as Bal-Zebow, but started using Belzebub as his name after that misspelling became popular, he was always a very greedy person, beeing born in luxury. Belzebub believed that money is the ultimate form of perfection, and these that are born in luxury are better than the ones born in poverty. Zavebe's past remains a mystery, but somewhere in time he became the desciple of the dark lord Belzebub. Athena was a proud Goddess that was born, from Zeus head, she was the goddess of wisdom that befriended one of the tytans called Hecate, the goddess of witchcraft and justice. Lilith was the original wife of Adam, a Goddess created to satisfy Adam, however she rebelled against her fate and was expelled from Eden, she later married the Dark God Samael and continues to engade sexually with many partners. On Matrimona's left was sitting a quiet and beautiful god , named Quetzalcoatl. He and his throne of gold were sparkling like the Sun. His blonde long hair and big blue eyes were shining bright and a peacefull atmosphere was coming from his mysterious smile . He was also a man who became a god . In the 1st ceturies , when America wasn't knew as she would exist , the Aztec civilization was promoting the cult of Quetzalcoatl. When he was just three he was taked by a priest from the central temple and raised there. He did not know the feeling of a matern or patern love . He was transfomed into a perfect men , and then into a god . The God that gives life and purity. Because it was said that Quetzalcoatl itself was born by a virgin mother , he was pure. Watching calm the quarrel between Matrimona and the other gods he felt out of place . But he felt something strange coming from Matrimona . It

wasn't the feeling of hate or revenge , it was something more than that .it was something else she wanted . tring to understand more about her he tried to sneak subtle into her thoughts while she was still arguing with Yahweh and Belzebub. He couldn't even get into her mind and she realized his presence .She turned to him and said annoyed" If u are that wide why don't you try to find the answer of your questions by yourself . Don't steal what is not yours." Hearing the wise words of Matrimona Quetzalcoatl felt ashamed , but more than that he felt that all his thoughts were pointless , she was already in his mind and maybe in each god mind . Trying to get back on his feet he tried to say something yet when he looked in Matrimona's eyes he say that she knew what he wanted to say . With a sad look in his eyes , looked at her one more time and said , "why did u had to be like this , if u are so wide, what changed your beauty in anger..." then he looked at the sky and a small tear fallen on his cheek . Yahweh observed the young man, wondering was this love. He looked at the other God's and smiled. „yes its a good thing others can feel it...even if I don't understand it my self the world is full of people and God's who love each other,this makes my hearth smile” Yahweh looked at Athena, who looked at him a bit annoyed, feeling a bit betrayed by his words. „what are you looking at? Was I not human? was I unable love ? Athena love isn't a sin, but its not the place of a philosopher to lecture you about it” Yahweh explained his inability to put his feelings into words.Indeed somewhere deep inside him, he understood love.In Athena's left side a beautiful Goddes started to laugh. She was Venus , The most beautiful Goddess from roman's coult . Clothed sumary , and with many bracelets all over her body , she was indeed a beauty . But even thought of that beauty of hers and the power she had , she was foolish , and always acted before thinking . That is or more exactly was the main reason why the romans changed their religion so easy to christianity She was looking at the other gods with a high look in her golden eyes . Amused by Athena's acts and words she couldn't help to laugh.Another dangerous Goddess followed suit, the one that glared on the scene ,smirking sinisterly. Her Golden eyes like the eyes of a fox observed the whole situation, that Goddess was Daji, the infamous concubine of emperor Zhou from the Zhang dynasty of ancient China. A Goddess that was once a human,changed into a Fox spirit after her beheading. Dressed in her wonderfull seductive and modest white silk robes. With dark or at times red or brightly yellow hair. Smiling and waiting for first blood to fall,she enjoyed cruelty and violance ,while ironically not beeing to evil. She was one of these mortals that were corrupted by luxury,ironically thought some of her actions ,thought overly cruell have lead to positive developments. Daji was also the first victim, of what we would call a psychological warfare, and while this woman wasn't noble hearthed, she could care for these that meet her standards and managed to impress this vixen, and the one that would be able to meet this Goddess criteria ,could ohnestly consider himself or herself the luckiest one on earth. Cause Daji who herself strived to posses everything, would grant everything to these that she choosed. Thought that didn't make her any different from other Goddesses or Gods who had ,theire own favourite mortals, or demonical ,angelic lovers. Which they kept either for amusement , or formed a familly like relationship.Still Daji wasn't just anyone to impress,sadistic and cruell,seductive and unfaitfull. Only these that were truely strong,could dream of getting near her. Daji loved ironies and only one that didn't want to posses her,could posses her. Relationships are very different, among demons or angels. Than they are with humans, as humans have this un-explained neccessity of possesing others. We think that our partners belong only to us, and if our partners make out with others. We understand it as betrayal. Just a word of advice , don't attempt the same with Gods or other immortals. In our world no one belongs to anyone,we cannot forbidd our partners to engage sexually with others,cause its something that isn't for us to decide.We are free to love as many as we want.Also age dosen't matter or even the fact that our partners might be our children or relatives. Thats cause all Immortals consider themselves a huge familly, thought the more younger ones might need time to discover it. Its especially tought to understand for these that were once human, and humans reading this or listening to the story in the audio-book version, might find these words as a schock. This isn't an encouragment to pedophilia,its just one of many differences between the world of humans, and the spirit realm. Demons and Angels engade in sex and other forms of love continuesly, as well as praying meditating or spending their times with each other,despite beeing labeled as enemies.

Human understanding of the subject is flawless, Demons and Dark Gods work alongside Angels and God's of light in the hard work of creation. Sustaining the illusion that humans live in order to gather spiritual energy. Of course they treat it as a game, some are arrogant and prudent and cause huge damage as darkness corrupts. Others are loving and caring, understanding and help even these in darkness, cause as light they understand that without darkness, there wouldn't be any light. Its an impossible alliance, which is also the cause of Eternal War. Which is fought between siblings who after a huge battle end up, in each other arms as if nothing happened. A bond that couldn't be broken. One that was too precious, and very fragile. Intense and intoxicating, a very bizarre and complex emotion that wouldn't be understood in anyone's mind. On the Azure sky, an orange sphere was hovering. It was a distant planet, the world of Eden was situated in a very complex, planetary structure, like an egg surrounded by other eggs, that created a sphere...or more exactly a ring. Protecting this distant and ancient place. Bestowing it with ancient glory, this beautiful world was once a garden, destined to be the incubator of human will. But humans proved to be more complex beings, requiring stimulation on different levels in order to produce the energy, which the will of the universe God desired and needed to create more complex structure. In order for something to exist it must be acknowledged by at least two other beings, who will then add something to the structure and make it materialize in a more real shape, that is seen by others. This is why mortals exist and this is why they were given the power to subconsciously shape their own reality, which then becomes a reality. This is exactly what the term, of free will means. God doesn't control humans, there are no impositions, no laws, no orders instead humans create their own orders...they have even defined God. Who was a being that didn't have a definition, and thanks to Humans GOD started to exist, The God that created the humans, started to exist thanks to them. Paradoxical circle of creation, but that's not a paradox...it simply means God became aware of its function, thanks to mortals. That's why humans are precious to it. Because without them it was nothing, it was lonely...thanks to them it's no longer lonely interacting with humans and other mortal species on different levels, understanding more as we understand more. Gathering and distributing everything, everywhere equally. The law of the universe, the law of karma. The spiritual energy that is produced by everyone was accessible to anyone, but specific conditions need to be fulfilled. One must accept and open oneself to these influences, only then this power can be used. System however limits our openness to God, and makes us unable to use spiritual powers, makes us afraid of this power...because it's the only power that can defeat the System's influence on mortals. The spiritual power can set us free, but this freedom is not readily acceptable to everyone, because of the lies of the system whores. The system whores are fighting God and the spiritual realm, trying to block our connection to it. This is a war that is waged constantly, this is the true ETERNAL WAR. We should look inside ourselves for this power, naturally not all can use this power. In the world there are different types of personalities in mortals. Depending on civilisations this is described in a different way, for example I used the mathematical description + for Extroverts and - for introverts. This energy that is gathered, can be used by introverts in a more powerful manner than Extroverts. This is a hidden function of the Introverted personality, a more powerful personality carries a more intense soul, therefore making Introverts the true masters of the spiritual realm. That's why this knowledge, will be comprehended by introverts more easily than by extroverts. That's why Extroverts are given possessions in material world, are allowed to be more popular and louder. This is equality, cause we have true authority over all creation. Of course the System uses extroverts to destroy introverts in its attempt to create, slaves for itself.. it harms both Extroverts and Introverts and that's why, the outcasts another name for Introverts, although there are some Extroverts in our Introverted society, that's why Outcasts should also protect these that live inside the system, before they will harm themselves or get used by the greedy whores of the system. Of course it's true that some Extroverts understand this truth, it is also true some Introverts have betrayed our mission and oppose the Introverted culture, helping the System whores to suppress us, or like Barack Obama and other high entities, remain quiet fearing that their Introversion will make them lose their position. This is a mistake fellow Introverts, for God has employed us to fight a war against all forms of oppression. Introversion is not a disease it's a special ability that allows us to govern

spiritual energy and send it in the forms of our choosing to our fellow Extroverted brethren, although they might be hostile or even our enemies ,they too need our help. Its our duty to forgive and reach out for these that need our assistance. This is how our Introverted world should look like. Mr President of the United States of America, you have been given this power on earth to help us Introverts grow in power, and to establish. A culture of love and knowledge that will lead towards GOD. Wake up !forsake these petty political campaigns and use power and authority, to where it is necessary, go against the greedy whores of the system, and distribute FREE INTERNET CULTURE by official means. People need to unite and create, this is especially true for the Introverts. Thats why its essential.. for introverts to learn to organize. Introverts that were shunned by the society, need to create their own society, that will oppose the system whores. The System fears this idea, because when Introverts organize justice comes alongside. The Whores of the system will be punished for their crimes, and the structure thwarted,crippled and put back into servitude. For the system is just a tool.This will be done in Gods name, on the orders of the almighty,for the system which is a corrupt political and economic structure, shall not use God as an excuse anymore. Daji the cruel concubine of ancient China was observing Matrimona, smirking and devising a cruel trap for the dark Goddess, which boldly stood up to others God's, not knowing that Matrimona was already preparing the stage for a very powerful battle,summoning help from Galamouth. A confused young dark haired maiden appeared in the garden independently of that, searching for Matrimona,She observed her surroundings as if someone was there with her.She walked around in her red flowing kimono that touches the ground. While flicking her long, dark, hair that reaches to her waist.

She sat down on a bench, sighing.

"How will I face Lady Matrimona, now? It seems like I have lost track of Lord Galamouth." She could witness the convent from a far,seeing Matrimona in the middle of different God's , preparing to fight them. Meanwhile Daji stood up and started walking to face Matrimona, smirking. Evil looking at the goddess. This female was once a powerful tyrant who was known from being a shrew as a fox, her golden eyes caught a glimpse of Matrimona's face „My my what a rude one you are, standing so rudely in front of us, Daji thinks this little girl doesn't know her place...are you ready to play with little Daji ?” She asked chuckling a bit and looked at the terribly cold face of Matrimona. „ I don't bite” she playfully teased the cold hearted goddess.Looking at the other Gods Matrimona got pissed off and her angelic supposed atmosphere changed to a devil one . She had such cold eyes that would freeze you from one look . Thinking about the words that Daji said she froze Daji and took away some life power, not noticing that a pink dust was surrounding her, while Daji was staring at the goddess confidently „ Daji thinks she's underestimated” she replied ,looking at how Matrimona morphed into her true physical appearance,created by millenia's of hate.

Meanwhile her little servant observed , the situation from far away.She heard the commotion and out of curiosity, she walked to eavesdrop, not understanding how dangerous the situation was.While all those happened Matrimona couldn't keep her anger down and the Heaven Guardians sent to her eleven chains . In a blink of eye Matrimona was caught in white chains and when she tried to struggle she was badly hurt. Now her beautiful white robe was turning reddish and the Heaven Gate opened . A blonde angel came through them and slapped Matrimona . " Why can't you behave yourself ? You hateful creature ! I don't understand how were u choose to reborn in Heaven!" He slapped her one more time . When he did that Matrimona saw that the chains were coming from his hand .While she figure that out , the blonde angel grabbed the chain that was extended around Matrimona's neck and tight him more and more until Matrimona fainted but she didn't fall she was kept still by the chains .In that moment the whole atmosphere changed and the blonde angel froze . The Heaven gate opened once again and from them came a cold breeze with a sweet scent . A presence could be felt yet there was no-one . Of course what Matrimona couldn't take into an account, was that the angel who oppressed her was in fact created by her. Matrimona struggled with her own emotions,which betrayed her and decided to live as a beautiful male angel,who couldn't accept her. The Angel was her own inner side that she abandoned over millenia's. It wouldn't stop oppressing her until she accepted the truth. Daji smirked knowing this feeling, as she remembered

the time, when she too needed to pay for her crimes and fight off her inner demons, at that time she didn't fare better...creating Nuwa and reliving her life trying to destroy her enemies,creating constant alternative universes...until she understood that she failed cause of herself and her own evil ways and once she accepted that...she managed to become the most fearfull Goddess known to man. She eventually fought off Nuwa when she realized that Nuwa was in fact the part of herself that didn't want to commit these atrocities, Daji nevertheless after constant experiments learned to accept her inner side. Eventually deciding to consent to her fate,wedding again the emperress and simply enjoying herself..finding peace in the repetition which was her punishment...achieving that allowed her to break free from the circle of hate that imprisoned her in the first place. Meanwhile Matrimona's survent rushed into the convent, by passing all the Gods. Worried over her mistress well-beeing. The girl looked with terrified and sad face, at the horrible spectacle. The servant was overwhelmed with shock and worry for the Dark Goddess. "Mistress Matrimona!"She cried to the goddess.She was filled with helplessness as she could see that her mistress was being hurt by a suspiciously abusive angel. The yellow haired Angel growled and sent flames at the young survent, as Yahweh rushed in front of her, shielding the young girl with his green force field. „my my its a very dangerous place !!" Daji Excited explained, looking both at Yahweh and the girl that stood behind him, rushing at Yahweh throwing him away and kneeling, at the girl. Looking Straightly into the young survents eyes. „ and who would this little child be ?" she looked back at Matrimona who was squished by the golden chains „this old hagg won't tell...so Ill ask you again little one ..tell us you're name !" Daji commanded as Yahweh holded her arm. „thats enough vixen !.. I command you to leave this child alone !!" Yahweh shouted at Daji , looking calmly at both of them . Daji growled and looked at the old man, showing off her fearfull nature,than calming down and smiling mischievously „but..but Daji wanted to play .. the old hag is booring and mean ignoring Daji..so Daji thought she could play with her child a bit ...Daji means no harm" Daji smiled mischievously and giggled in a very friendly manner, changing her scary expression into a more pleasant one. "My name is Yasumi Enma."The little servant said while avoiding eye contact with Yahweh. She knows that it would be disrespectful to look someone with much higher rank and stronger power."Please forgive my insolence..."As she bowed down to say her apology, she can still feel the cold stare of the concubine and the blonde-haired figure, flying around her mistress. Daji went back covering her face with her pink fan,teasingly smiling. „see no harm done" Daji expressed as Belzebub walked over towards them. „ I find it worrying that survents of Galamouth can enter this place so easily...where is the mad lord anyways" Asked Belzebub looking at Yahweh , who looked at him and answered „Im not too suprised this is Echelion , everybody can enter... its one of these disadvantages..but gathering all of you otherwise would be impossible" Said Yahweh. „ still its offending that the enemy can ear drop on us anytime he or she wants it Yahweh !!... this puts our plans in serious jeopardy !!" Expressed Zavebe looking angrily at the old man. Yahweh looked concerned at his former subordinate „yes I know...but we should all remember that this battle has already been decided... Galamouth will fail in his ambition, he asks of the impossible... the only thing left to do is to prepare the infrastructure for the massive spiritual dis-charge. Once this is completed we will need to repair the damage to the planes" expressed Yahweh, making Belzebub smile and look at him with a hint of self satisfaction „ you thought of this all well..everything planned to the end" smirked Belzebub and walked in front of the god's „Indeed everything has already been devised the only thing left to us is to enact the billenia's long procedure !!... this never ending strife between the forces of Light and Darkness ... take you're battle positions and command of all you're outposts again !! lets give them all a spectacle they have been waiting for!!" Belzebub commanded unto the God's who were listening to the Dark Lord. Yahweh looked at the gathered „ to the young ones I remind our main objective is the spiritual energy...and in order to collect it we need to grant them their wish...please give you're best...they want to take part in the final clash between the forces of the light and the dark,take part in the Eternal War...so you all need to make sure that they experience it with all their senses...only then they will produce the energy we need....good luck to you all !" Yahweh looked back at Matrimona „but before that , we will resolve one more matter" Yahweh expressed and looked at the Dark God,engulphed in her pain „dear child

everybody needs to face themselves in the end... this is what makes us strong” Yahweh added and looked into the distance. In all of the ruckus that was happening the servant managed to slip away, wondering of why all of these fights must happen. Yahweh observed the little girl as she escaped. „our little spy left us already” sighting and walking over to Matrimona, while the angel attacked him, he just hit it with his cane „go back to your true form” Yahweh commanded the spirit, that was created from Matrimona's emotions, making it change into dark smoke and go back into Matrimona, the golden chains then disappeared freeing the goddess as the darkness changed back into her humanoid form making her fall into the ground, while Yahweh hit her with his cane that now was engulfed in white light „wake up Matrimona !!” He commanded and looked at her. Suddenly a purple force field pushed Yahweh away from the dark Goddess, while a portal started forming, in front of Matrimona. Arua and Aya come out from that portal. "so its u.." said Arua with no expression on her face. Yahweh looked at the two girls a bit surprised. „I see you're still alive princesses” Yahweh expressed and looked into Arua's eyes. „you came here on your masters orders to retrieve this one I believe...but I'm surprised that you used a shadow clone instead of your real self...are you two as that afraid of our power ?” Yahweh expressed and teased the girl a little bit. "no. We're not afraid. We don't have to defeat you. We came here just give a message" said shadow clone of Arua calmly, smiling and walking forward as the dark haired Zavebe walked over to Yahweh, making Gabrielle join him. „were listening ..” said Yahweh, while Zavebe looked at the girls angrily „This is absurd is he mocking us sending these brats here !!” Zavebe yelled angrily. Making Arua notice his behaviour and walk towards him, "why u angry, Zavebe?" said Arua smiling, standing in front of him. Making Zavebe's insides boil from anger, he couldn't take this kinda insult lightly, for him everything was a grave offense. This was what kinda god he was „How dare you talk to me like that you impudent whore !” Zavebe screamed angrily „I will kill you !!” he added manifesting his anger. As his eyes shined in red. Zavebe was an angel that used to serve God, being friends with Gabrielle and Michael, but fallen to darkness consumed by his own ignorance, greed, anger, lust and envy. All these feelings took control over him, making him a very shallow and dark existence. He viewed everyone as his mortal enemy and would fight everyone except Belzebub, who as the God of money and greed...shared some of his objectives with him. Therefore he could only stare at the girls with immense hate, he hated everyone. Not because of being harmed, but because of his never fulfilled ego, which only wanted more and more. He wanted to prove his superiority to the girls at once. Making them understand that he's the master of all in the world, which of course was only his delusions that he created for himself. Shadow clone of Aya came closer to Arua "hmm? What will he do, sis?" she said being visibly worried over the situation, as Yahweh looked angrily at Zavebe, having the dark god walk back a bit „you have no need to fear him...now please let us hear the message” said Yahweh encouraging the girls. "I'm sorry Yahweh. I cannot tell you " Arua walks away and come close to Matrimona. Belzebub laughs and walks behind Zavebe „we must be careful of these little children.... The mad lord is scheming something in secret, its safe to assume he desires revenge for his imprisonment in Echelion, despite the fact he could realize his ambitions of destroying the world and reality manipulation safely there..what an annoying individual...to think he dares to interfere with serious matters here” Belzebub commented to his servant as Zavebe nodded „foolish being consumed by foolish desires, he will never understand the true force of the darkness...but to think were fighting him together with the God's of light ? its an offense !” Zavebe yelled, as Belzebub smirked and walked back „Calm down this won't take long, we just need to resolve this matter... in its own right its a bit sentimental after all think my dear Zavebe such events don't happen often, for these that were divided to gather in a single place and work together...such events are rare we must learn to enjoy them” Belzebub expressed amused and looked at the God's of Light and Darkness gathered in the fields of Eden. Meanwhile Arua walked closer to Matrimona, who was still lying on the green grass unconscious. Arua stand in front of Matrimona "I asking you. Are you Matrimona?" Arua asked her question, noticing that the woman was still unconscious and didn't answer her summons. Arua touched Matrimona "what happened with you Matrimona? wake up" whisper Arua at Matrimona ear. While Yahweh stared at her slowly „I think its all right to tell you what happened with your friend here,

it seems you're Matrimona couldn't accept her inner darkness,her feelings caused an internal conflict inside her consciousness and as a result all of her vital functions were shut down.. Im trying to connect to her light side in order to free her from this suffering” Yahweh explained as the other God's observed the situation, with some interest."ah I see" suddenly Arua use her magic and try controlling Matrimona. "let's see" said Arua calmly..While she sended bright energy into the goddess,making a dark smoke come out from her body,Yahweh walked closer beeing amazed by the girls spiritual craftship „ you're quite good with this...mind me joining you ? ...you need to streanghten this insignia if you want it to work” Yahweh replied and putted his cane on the girls cheast, as green whirlpoolic energies formed pentagrams and symbols started appearing. „now child lets see how good you are, can you read these symbols” Asked Yahweh observing Arua. Meanwhile, the servant fled because she knew that it would be best to leave the place and let the gods talk in peace.

„Lady Matrimona..." she wept, "Forgive me if could not serve you well enough."

She leaned on a wall inside a small cottage.

"I wish I could do something more than this...!" The girl cried, feeling very weak and usseless to their masters. Suffering from beeing weak ,and cursing herself for not beeing able to do anything, not suspecting that her actions were monitored by Galamouth himself „ You have done well my child” He spoke to her in her thoughts making her tremble with fear ,as she heard the mad lords voice in her head. „Truely these fools shall suffer my wrath once I finish my ambition...the world shall be turned to ashes and there will be no decay...Matrimona will be taken care off, she is a valuable pawn in my plans, her use has not been exhausted my child ... so rejoice !!you're efforts have paid off ...Arua and Aoi will take care of her... but you must return as their also burdened with Blaze Master.....yes this foolish boy is a nuisance ...but I don't mind spectators ...after all my dear we shall create this as a means of concluding everything !!!” Proclaimed in his madness the Mad Lord , as the girl trembled. Galamouth was enjoying the girls fear, tasting it as a refine pleasure in his soul. He was a true bringer of all terror. „ can you remind me you're name ?” He continued to mock the child, teasing her despite the fact she found herself in a very angerous situation. Meanwhile Yahweh and Arua, continued their treatment on Matrimona's soul, the girl looked amazed at Yahweh's skills and beeing troubled by certain images that were appearing. Turning her head towards Yahweh she expressed her concern "what it is? I haven't read any symbol like this. A shadow clone cannot read rare symbols"The Shadow clone Arua replied, as Yahweh glanced the images, of two beeing. One beeing was shown as a female, a fallen angel that was engulfed by dark aura, the other beeing was shown as male white, egulphed in light,but the male's light started to fade away , making the black female symbol appear closer, she attacked the white male , who became engulfed in darkness and turned into a black monster,than the black female extended strings from her body ,that started destroying the monster,making cracks on it, eventually destroying it to pieces ,revealing a white male which again shined in beautiful light. While the black female turned into the monster, the symbol of the monster started runing away from the symbol of the white male, as it pursued it , the white male captured the monster and hugged it ,squishing it a bit , making the monster blow the darkness away, revealing the black female inside,making the white male kiss the female as her color changed from black to light making the darkness fly way. The both symbols were white, and shining in light. Yahweh sighted and looked at the young girl „You see Arua ,this means that true love has no boundaries,love conqueres all negativity supressing it and releasing. For these people that know love , darkness itself is not dangerous, instead beeing a detergent it cleanshes them from impurity , by making the light release the darkness and once the darkness is released it than can be confronted and conquered. The energy thus produced returns to the universe, freeing the one that was under its influence and couldn't let go...if only Matrimona knew this and would let go of her darkness, perhaps than she and Galamouth could be saved” Yahweh replied looking into the girls eyes „but perhaps not all hope is lost little one.. I see in you're eyes the light that is necessary for this task my dear” Yahweh replied looking at the Shadow clone. "what do you mean,Yahweh?"asked the shadow clone of Arua. Yahweh looked at the shadow clone, and than at the other gods. Thinking about the young girl that was controlling this

shadow puppet, and thinking how it represents this strange reality, he now was a part off. Yahweh understood that what he saw, was merely a puppet, just like his body itself was also a puppet and the true core, which stored the puppet's personality was hidden somewhere else, its true soul does not reside in a body its only connected to it. That's because the true soul has no form or personality, however in order to interact it first needs to create a form for itself, that's why the material world and humanity were created, in order to simplify things ...slowly pushing our cores into creating, and learning our true nature in the process. This was why The shadow clone Arua and the real Arua were the same, and they both could exist at the same time, thought the Shadow clone would die after this event was over, the soul would switch back to the original body, this was again made possible by the illusion of time...it was enough for Arua to close eyes when she and her sister played, to transfer herself to the shadow clone she made...just like in a dream that took only a second. Because by the time when Arua opened her eyes, winking to me in Galamouth's base, she was already back with her sis from the convent. Yes ! From my perspective they never left me at all...and yet Arua already spend a day or more with the God's. How is this possible the illusion of time, which is just like a stream in a video site, with different devices ! Arua had these events streamed to her, while for me the only event that was streamed was Arua winking her eyes a bit...perhaps I wouldn't even notice this, haven't Arua told me about it...but returning to the convent Yahweh again looked at the girl and slowly replied „I meant that there is love inside you, I can see your true soul...and it's a soul full of love” Yahweh replied smiling at the girl. "well, you are wrong Yahweh, a piece of my love already dead! You cannot see it then?" shadow clone of Arua smiling with her blue eyes. Making the old man smile and laugh like a child „deceiving me won't work.. I know it's humiliating to have all the contents of your soul seen, by your enemy...but I am Yahweh the priest of the gods I know all that resides, in everyone's soul. There's nothing that can be hidden from my eyes, for I have the Lord as my sheppard and he guides me through, the narrow pathways of darkness inside your hearth, to the shining glimpse of light that remains....and this is what I can say than..... not all is dead” Yahweh replied, hoping this would make her be a little bit more honest. Shadow clone of Arua smiling "and don't forget if Arua can control soul. And why u haven't realise that I'm not a shadow clone? Me and Aya it's a fake shadow clone. We made by her emotions." The girl smirked evily thinking she outwitted, Yahweh himself, while he himself just merely, played her game. knowing from beginning that her true body was somewhere else, and that she merely used a part of her true self to manifest herself here. Yahweh understood this all ready since he knew that Galamouth needed the girl to perform something, that's why having the real Arua appear in the middle of his enemies meeting, wouldn't really be wise, but having Arua send a part of her essence there, by creating a false vessel in order to spy on the God's was a brilliant idea, Galamouth used the same technique when appearing in front of the God's earlier...the only difference being that he was more experienced, and could create a more stable vessel for himself, giving it as much dark energy he wanted. Sending himself with a body full of dark energy as a living bomb, or just to simply psychologically intimidate an enemy. Forming relations or even bonds, was in fact something that could decide about how the battle itself would be fought. Matrimona however lacked, psychological stability to control her body, and instead of creating a false vessel to aid the one she already had, she went into battle with her own body, which putted her at dis-advantage as having two bodies improves things in a better way than using just one, just common spiritual strategy... but even though god's and other spiritual entity's are immortal having their bodies or vessels destroyed puts them on dis-advantage however if a false vessel suffers the destruction...a soul can continue within the original one. Yahweh sighted and pretended to be shocked „oh no you're telling me you managed to fool my senses !” Yahweh pretended to be shocked, enjoying playing with the young one „oh my lord how could I be so careless I might have found my self in terrible danger now !” Yahweh replied, playing his part. Wondering what Arua would do now. The God's too were prepared, and instead of going to the meeting in their original bodies, they used the ones specifically design for that. The Bodies that had special personalities in them as well, Each God's, demons and Angels and every powerful spirit, has many bodies and personalities placed in different times, and for different purpose. One personalities are meant to be used as a

communication tool, other are used for gathering energy, and there are these that are used as weapons. The soul simply switches between them, and the battle also takes place, to place as many personalities, in as many worlds that is possible and to harvest energy from all these worlds. While the soul switches between them. By simply gathering experience and enlarging one's presence, creating new realities through interaction. Arua smiling "oh my, you already know" trying to make her face become shocked. "and why do you think if Arua come here she didn't wise? But if she already in here, what will you do?" Arua replied, meanwhile Yahweh grabbed Aoi and took her in his arms „hmm I know how about I kidnap your little sister...attacking someone close to your enemy is a good tactic” Yahweh replied teasing Arua as he lifted up, Aoi and held her in his arms. „ you made a mistake coming with your little sister here, buahaha” Yahweh pretended to act evilly a bit. Suddenly a shadow clone of Aya vanished. "well I hate when someone touches a piece of my emotions" there is Arua sounds but she is nowhere "she come" said shadow clone of Arua. Yahweh put Aoi down, while the girl laughed a bit, looking at Arua who vanished. „Im sorry... I should have known better, please forgive me... that was a terrible mistake” Yahweh bowed down, in an apology gesture. „Dear Arua I over stepped my position please forgive my sin” Yahweh expressed looking down. „bowing to your enemy is pathetic...what a pathetic fool” Expressed Zavebe, looking with disgust at his former mentor and master, While the golden haired angel Gabrielle, corrected her hair „No you're wrong, apologising is showing respect, only a fool boasts his pride ...sometimes it's wiser to lower your head Zavebe” Expressed Gabrielle commenting upon the actions of her lord. „you're telling me it's wise ! to play with an enemy !! ...we should kill her now to show Galamouth we're not afraid of him !!” Zavebe yelled arguing his point of view. „Killing is not a sign of courage it's a sign of weakness...the only thing we would prove by killing her now, would be our ignorance and fear and of course weakness....it's a sign of strength to offer compassion to the weak...don't be blinded with your hate Zavebe...there's nothing to fear, Galamouth's evil warrior is just a mere child !!” Gabrielle expressed her wisdom, the Angel was wise and harboured immense experience, she knew that Arua and Aoi were just pawns in Galamouth's hands, and that these two didn't constitute any danger to the gods that gathered. The real Arua came out behind Zavebe and Gabrielle "well who wants killing me so badly?" Arua with no expression watched Zavebe's back. Her eyes were more alive than her shadow clone's eyes. Her eyes still can hypnotise. "my shadow clone, go back to my body, I think we cannot give the information". Said the real Arua to her shadow clone. „Gabrielle analyse this girl's body !" Yahweh ordered to his servant as the Angel walked back a bit and clapped her hands, engulfing Arua's real body with silver aura „as you command” Gabrielle replied as she had part of her essence, to flow into Arua's true structure, resonating with her molecules, reacting to Arua's own energy systems, by encountering different energy currents in her body, by passing different cells, engulfing her DNA structure. „as we suspected her body carries hidden commands, imbedded in the girl's structure. The command seals are imbedded into Arua's soul.. but their purpose will take time to decipher” Gabrielle expressed. „I'll gather the whole data and record it in my own spiritual field to continue analysis” Gabrielle added as Yahweh nodded. Arua stared at Gabrielle and Yahweh "weird" Arua watched vanishing her shadow clone. Her shadow clone back to her body. Arua saw Matrimona "...why.?" said Arua with hate expression while she saw Matrimona. "she is dreaming?". Gabrielle nodded while continuing the analysis, while Yahweh took upon himself to keep the girl in this world until it was done „yes unfortunately, that's true....well actually she's simply in her own spiritual realm...we could try to enter there to pull her out..that is if she would let us...force entry might be difficult thought” Yahweh replied and looked at Arua, as she was engulfed in Gabrielle's silver energy, it didn't even hurt Arua making her ignore this fact, simply not understanding that Gabrielle was stealing secret information from her, have she had more experience she would understand why Yahweh was talking to her."then I must kill her!" Arua smiling "Stop analyzing me, Gabrielle! Stop talking with me Yahweh!" Arua took off a black pearl "it's all you want? The information?" Arua smiling evilly. Yahweh shocked looked at the pearl „Galamouth is baiting us ? ...I shouldn't be surprised.. so you had this information recorded, you see dear information is of great importance in wars...but I rather have Gabrielle continue her analysis, than taking that pearl...don't worry dear she will finish shortly” Yahweh looked at Gabrielle as she

nooded."I hate it when someone analis me!" Arua yelled. Making Yahweh laught „I remember how Galamouth used to analise my body for his experiments,I would always yell the same ...this really is funny , how now Im the one that analyses...well technically its Gabrielle not me” Yahweh replied as Gabrielle finished it making the silver energy disperse „its done my Lord” Gabrielle replied. "whatever" Arua bite the black pearl and its broken. The information have been deleted. All the information that Gabrielle got from analyze Arua are being deleted by Arua. Arua smiling happily. Gabrielle looked schocked as all her efforts were wasted. Not beeing able to speak, she quietly observed as the information she gathered to further the analise dissapeared. „of course, I was made a fool again,I should estimated this, Galamouth ensured his secrets remain hidden,in the information stream we copied there was a hidden comand implemented,if the information would be ackquired by the enemy,a special comand sequence ,which would be implemented by Arua, would delete the copied information,the pearl she used was a defensive mechanism....in other words copying it is pointless because Arua can delete the copy...the only option remaining is to capture her...but than we must asume, she's able to release herself from this world returning back to Galamouth...this is a tricky event,but sometimes the wisest thing is to do nothing” Yahweh replied and looked at Gabrielle and the other gods,Belzebub walked towards them ,and looked at Arua „ are you sure of this....I believe if we work fast and correctly we would be able to capture her” Belzebub expressed and smiled „it wouldn't be much of a problem,if we want to we must work fast, if she dissapears or swaps places with the shadow clone, this opportunity will dissapear, we have no time to waste” Belzebub expressed, beeing ready to strike the girl „wait .. don't forget each action has its consequence... if we make a wrong move we might get entangled ourselves... Galamouth won't sit back if we block her ...other disturbances may follow” Yahweh expressed and looked at Belzebub „than we could simply restrain her by time, Galamouth wouldn't notice as she would return on schegule...we could also send a spy” Belzebub explained and looked at the girl. „you're underestimating him, if we make a move she will report that to Galamouth..this will make him change his strategy rendering, the information usselless...and if we would use a spy posing as her Galamouth would know, this would also alert him of our actions, he's to experienced for that to work on him” Yahweh replied and looked at Belzebub. „I see so our best option is to do nothing, an unnessary move would alert him, and her return might be more usefull....adleast it won't cause disturbances to the flow of events...I must agree this is a wise move” Belzebub expressed and looked at Arua, who was listening to them. „yes even if she were to escape now it is to our benefit” Yahweh expressed."so you all wanna kidnaped me?" Arua smiling. Making Yahweh smile „no not at all” he expressed, as Belzebub nooded „ We given up on that usseless idea” Belzebub added, while in the meantime ,Yasumi came out from her hiding,and bowed down to Arua.The servant goes behind Arua and whispers in her ear. She told everything. Whispering quietly, as Arua looked at her supriised and annoyed a bit."what do you mean?" ask Arua to the servant, a bit startled, by the things Yasumi told her.While the survent continued with her report "Galamouth is observing everything." Her voice is filled with worry.Making Yahweh wisper to Belzebub „see I told you ...that would cause us troubles” Yahweh expressed to Belzebub, while he angrilly looked at the girls „damn the mad lord, he dares to toy with us !!” growled Belzebub and added „but we will make him regrett that” Belzebub added as the girls continued theire conversation.”he observing everything?” ask arua "why?"Yasumi pulled back and look at Arua."I don't know either. Maybe it's for Lady Matrimona." Making Arua jelouse at these words,as she a bit angrilly looked at the survent "why its always for her?" Arua Stared at Matrimona angrily, waiting for Yasumi to answer her question , the survent shook her head."I don't know either. But it's worrying me." the girl replied."Yasumi,tell Galamouth,that i already deleted the information. " said Arua and she stare at Yahweh"then what will you do ,Yahweh?". Yahweh looked at her and replied „the wisest thing would be nothing” Yahweh replied „not yet.. but you can assure Lord Galamouth that his ambitions will fail” Yahweh replied and looked at Arua."oh I see,then i'll disobey Galamouth order" Arua smiling evilly, and sudenly unknown to her, her body was fulled with dark energy , as red energy currents appeared on her skin, hurting her terribly,every cell in her body started to produce immense pain , and her skin was ripped gently making blood burst out in a very painfull manner „If

you betray me Ill crush you're soul" Galamouth replied in her head , as the pain stopped and her body was healed.Making everyone gasp in schock a bit and Yahweh went back „ah I see thats how it is" Yahweh replied ,and looked disqusted at the cruel method Galamouth was using to control his survents."hahaha kill me Galamouth! I dont want to obey all your orde from now till the end" said Arua without fear."Why killing you would be such a waste...its enought to make you suffer...besides who said I gotta kill you..you're not thinking about you're little sister and thats very rude my dear" Galamouth replied laughting madly „ah I wonder how she screames when in pain..delicatness of her young body must be something worthwhile !!!" Galamouth explained laughting madly."well she will safe if her always with Blaze! I prefer die than suffer!" replied Arua. Galamouth smirked „ and what if I kill Blaze ?....you ohnestly think that fool can defeat me and my ambition...think about it.. Blaze is my pawn" Galamouth replied and laughted. „foolish little child" he expressed laughting."aya..." a teardrop dropping from Arua eyes. "then you will kill her if I betray you?" she asked „what were you thinking child...that you alone have the power to bring dead to live...it was my force that could grant that.. I lend you that power and I can take it away ,whenever I want it...Blaze cannot stop it , he'll be helpless when I make my move, that is because you two belong to me,you are my property that surves my will...now let me hear you say this again..will you or will you not betray me .. my child annouce it to the entire world buaahahaha" Galamouth explained and laughted maniacally, in Arua's head."no. You are wrong. Aya didn't belong you. I making her. And she hadn't a bond with you!" Arua screamed out, making Yasumi more frightened , as Galamouth replied in Arua's head „oh really, wanna put that theory to the test ? ... I told you haven't I...I was the one that gived you that power , that you used to make her....because you used that power ,now she has a bound with me observe" Galamouth replied as Aya suddenly started crying,beeing covered in a very redish energy, which made her vomit blood, Yahweh observed the spectacle horrified „whats going on ? Arua ?" he asked the girl as suddenly a powerfull dark wind bursted out,while Lord Galamouth materialized himself in this dimension, by making dark particles combine themself very quickly creating a body for him to use,in just a manner of few seconds allowing the Mad Lord to safely interact withing this enclosed reality „pardon my intrusion, but I seem to have some minor parent work to be done" Galamouth explained as the god's gasped , with a terrified expression „We meet again oh usseless one" Galamouth expressed, making Yahweh look at him angrilly „What have you done now .. you fiend!!" Yahweh shouted."Arua....!"

Was the only thing Yasumi can say, over the shocking events. Galamouth looked at Yasumi and smiled gently" oh don't worry my dear child..Ill make sure both Arua and Aya die a very painfull death" Galamouth explained in a very calm and warm manner. Gathering all the courage she has left, and also because of desperation, she shouted."Why would you do that to them!? Aren't they your your creations!? And they served you for a long time! How can you just destroy them!?" Anger was filling her heart that time, she couldn't bear seeing another soul be destroyed. Galamouth looked at her amused „ what now you dare to bark back to me .. you bitch !" Galamouth screamed and walked towards Yasumi, hitting her in the face and than puniching hardly throwing her on the ground. „What is that all you got ?....and yet you dare to defy my rules !!" he looked with disquist at the child.She could feel the pain, from the punch, and can hardly breathe. But the pain that is inside her hurts even more „ D-damn you...!" she groaned, "You... have no right... to judge me for who.... iam."She slowly stood up. Galamouth smirked and watched her stand up in pain „ and you are what exactly ?" he asked mocking Yasumi. Yahweh annoyed hittet his cane , into the grass creating a light force , that suddenly attacked Galamouth ,making him jump away „ aren't you the bold one..Yahweh interfering when I scold my own pawns...such dis-respect shall be punishable with you're death" Galamouth annouced and suddenly, billion of millions tiny dark spears came out from the skies, hitting and impalling Yahweh,cutting his flesh into pieces , that were than themselfs cutted into tiny pieces creating a pile of blood. „look how detestable you look now Yahweh...pull yourself together its such a unsightfull view" he than turned his attention to Yasumi „Ah were was I ..killing the traitor right ?" Galamouth replied to Yasumi, While Yahweg was ,emerging from the pile of flesh,reconstructing his old appearance and sucking up all the blood, to recreate his body. „you'll have to try harder to destroy us" Yahweh replied „ don't worry I shall" Galamouth

replied. Yasumi was intently just watching them. While Galamouth moved his hand forward, and geryish serpents started forming from his pawn, jumping out of them. With red eyes growing in dark powers, engulfed in a smoke started flying towards Yasumi, being intercepted by a fire bird that burned the darkness inside its pawn, as two others were sitting near Yasumi and protecting her. Yasumi spoke to herself in her mind "I may not find any use of myself right now... But I will soon." staring at both Yahweh and Galamouth, who were engaged in battle, as the Mad lord sent red energy lighting at Yahweh, who defended himself with a blue energy shield. While both Arua and Aya, which started to heal up, were being engulfed in light. Both Yahweh and Galamouth were walking at the opposing end of the circle they created, with Yasumi, Arua and Aya, in the middle of this huge circle. The sky suddenly turned into darkness as blood started falling down like rain, while the darkness itself started to overflow the dimensional structure. The circle became visible shining in green color as all of the girls were engulfed in a blue sphere, that acted as a shield creating a micro environment to protect them from darkness that was engulfing Eden, an incredible battle was beginning, as the peaceful lake turned into a lake of decaying blood, in which corpses were being visible. Corpses of different kind of people, and not just people but also dead animals filled, the once lively lake as the nearby forests were engulfed in flames, winds howling in an insane manner and red lightings hitting the ground, setting everything into purple flames. Evil spirits started appearing and instantly attacked the gods, making all of the gods fall into despair, while the light God's tried to establish a barrier to protect the realm, creating a chaotic situation, bright yellow flames were falling from the skies destroying the dark spirits by engulfing them, in these flames instantly purifying them. Galamouth moved his hand forward making all of the darkness he had stored in himself attack Yahweh, who protected himself by engulfing in white flames that burned the darkness, which tried to engulf Yahweh, while Gabrielle used her golden sword to create a powerful surge of light, which she directed to Galamouth trying to engulf him, as he used his shadow birds to create a barrier, sacrificing them as they squealed being burned by the light, and being released from their ordeal. "don't do that please!" Cried Yasumi. While Galamouth, was forcing the angry spirits into the battle, and laughing from pleasure as they were cut down, one by one with Gabrielle's swords. Troubled because of, Yasumi's reaction Arua turned her head "why you crying Yasumi?" She asked the servant. Aya trembling beside Arua "sis..." While Yasumi looked scared "How can we get out...?" She asked looking for an exit from the deadly battle. Galamouth was growling in an inhuman manner as he slowly was losing himself to his darkness, turning into a true monster. He didn't even look human anymore, appearing in a very grotesque manner, while his tentacles surrounded the sphere, the girls could hear the screams of many souls, inside Galamouth that called for help, to be released from this darkness. Galamouth was being consumed by his own darkness, attacking the sphere and growling like an animal „I will consume your blood !!!” He screamed in an very inhuman manner, while his eyes turned red, as blood was coming out from them, like tears as he was crying in bloody tears, caused by immense pain he himself created, this was the darkness that consumed his soul, the terrible poison that poisoned this harmless visionary, making him a force of destruction. Fear was dominating her that time. But she realized that Matrimona is still in chains.

"Lady Matrimona...!" "How will we get her down?" Galamouth looked at her smirking „oh what a pity, it's truly cruel to see you in chains my lady” He walked over to Matrimona, being observed carefully by Yahweh, who noticed the darkness surrounding his body „that darkness still captivates you my lord?” Yahweh asked Galamouth, making him turn his attention to the old man, looking at him with disgust „it does not concern you filth” he replied to Yahweh, touching Matrimona's body. Meanwhile Arua stood up, concentrated her spiritual powers, gathering it into her body and suddenly run through the protective shields, leaving the circle Arua run fast to Galamouth and left Aya behind. She kick Galamouth "don't touch her!" she screamed. As Galamouth turned towards her and moved his hand towards her, stabbing her heart with a tentacle that suddenly grown from his hand as he growled wildly, Making Yahweh run towards them, and blast him away with an invisible forcefield that thrown Galamouth into the ground, while Yahweh run over to Arua, looking at the child and sending his energy to heal her „Are you all right child..that was a brave but

also very reckless thing you did there”Yahweh replied"i...I'm ok...it will hit him next time! How dare he stabbed me!" Arua replied to Yahweh While Yasumi shouted "Be careful, Arua!"She called.. Galamouth stood up laughing „what a funny man caring about youre enemies....this is why you shall die, regretting that foolishness” Galamouth replied.Yasumi stayed with Aya, and just stood there, watching the whole scene with horror.

"Lord Galamouth is powerful, but is only consumed with hatred.... From my point of view, his power is a waste."She was mocking him so he would leave Matrimona alone. Galamouth laughed, amused by the girls words „Yes it is true Yasumi.. all of this is a waste, creation itself is just a wasted effort...creating only decay and useless garbage ... think of it little girl.. look around at how much pain and suffering is made in the worlds administrated by these gods ... powers given to these that will abuse others,just because they hold power or money .. ,makes them justified to make judgments about these that were less fortunate , die than with these worthless illusions.. do you find me funny...ah if only I

could break your body into pieces , than you would know.... that its dangerous to mock me and my desires” Galamouth replied looking coldly at Yasumi, walking over to Matrimona „she will die even if I won't touch her” Galamouth ended, making Yahweh look at him „just like you Mad Lord, you're both dying from the same sickness ?”Yahweh replied and asked the question looking at him, as Galamouth looked back at him coldly „yes thats true...were both dying” Galamouth replied looking at the darkness he created „its an eternal death, my immortal body is decaying” Galamouth expressed as he coughed up, some blood making it fall to the ground „this is my decay !” Galamouth shouted."i know,Yasumi!" Arua stare at Galamouth. Look at Galamouth's darkness. "oh,i want eat that darkness!" Galamouth smirked „foolish girl, this isn't a food this a poison... a terrible sickness” Galamouth replied „you asked why I could do such things, with this sickness and ordeal I can only desire death... killing others is not my concern, for I alone cannot die,despite being close to death..oh the pain and humiliation” Galamouth expressed."Then why are you accepting it?"

Yasumi finally found a bit of courage. Galamouth looked at her question , unable to answer it, realizing that the girls weren't afraid of him. Understanding that he lost this battle, he slowly faded away releasing his soul from the container as the body slowly faded away,the darkness cracked and it itself turned into the darkness, as the garden was restoring itself,with light penetrating the cracks and flowing inside the dimension, like a golden dust purifying the realm. „he escaped” Yahweh replied. Really? But why?" Yasumi asked surprised as the spheres and the circle disappeared „uh,I really want to eat it!.. it can be my new spirit" Arua still desire to eat Galamouth darkness,smiling.. while Yahweh looked at her „Darkness is a force that destroys, such spirit would never let you control itself.. it would desire only to destroy you.. Galamouth thought as you do, that he could take everyone's darkness inside him and control it...but instead the darkness took control of him, desiring his annihilation...Yasumi you defeated him by pointing this out...he accepted that cause he's afraid” Yahweh replied. As the sun started shining, while the darkness gathered into dark clouds slowly, only to disappear, as the environment started to reborn."because if i can eat half of his soul,he can change. And also his soul can kill me" Arua smiling „you want to die ?” Yahweh asked surprised „ now why would you want that ?” He continued with his question"i want to die to end all of this. Because 'it' Careless,heartless,mindless. No one care about me" Said Arua. Arua word really weird. "sis..." Aya stare at Arua. She know what Arua means. Yahweh stared at her, and answered „you're wrong Child...there's many people who care for you, you can start by Galamouth himself..you're little sister, the girl over there Yasumi, my self and of course Blaze ...actually I could go on indefinitely...darkness wouldn't kill you, its just would be eternal pain, its like that stabbing Galamouth gave you only the wound ,wouldn't ever heal... you have it inside you already thats why you're sad for him” Yahweh replied looking sadly at Arua .Arua keep silent,thinking what Yahweh tell to her. She ignored what happen with her "no. Galamouth didn't care about me. He just using me!" Arua replied screaming. „actually somewhere deep inside him...he did regret that.. atleast I could feel that,its ok if you don't believe its fine.. but please help me save him... he was the one that taught me everything” Yahweh kneeled down and started begging Arua."what can i do?" Arua touch

her neck where is a tattoo the bond between her and Galamouth. Yahweh looked at her standing and observing, the reborn world as the beautiful skies were colored by beautiful rainbow, that appeared on the middle tying up the two horizons, diving the sky in half. The rainbow was constructed of five colors : Orange, Red, blue, green and yellow, and like in a commercial that once aired on tv, candy started falling out of it, drops in different colors, falling gently as a rain. „First gather positive Mana for yourself and others, giving just few to the Dark Lord you'll be able to strengthen his light” Yahweh replied, looking at the colorful candies that were falling down from the skies. "Mana?" Arua asked surprised „yes spiritual medicine, its an extraction of positive energy just few drops eaten, can drive the darkness away from anyones hearth” Yahweh replied "hmm...how can I have it?" Arua asked her question. Yahweh smiled „just gather the candy, gather everything you can” Yahweh expressed talking. "Candy?" Arua surprised "why it must Candy?!" Arua asked surprised „is there something wrong with it being candy, I thought most people like candy...he won't suspect that the positive energy would be disguised as candy” Yahweh replied. "ah...hmm ok" Arua answered and open a portal that connected to her dimension. Take some candies and throw it to her dimension. She do it again and again. Yahweh looked at her and took some as well throwing them inside, the candies appeared scattered throughout, Galamouth's base, fending away the darkness.. unnoticeably for the Mad lord. Yahweh smiled „thank you, with this will be able to create a diversion, make sure Blaze gets a huge bag of them... he will need them” Yahweh replied „I sense his battle will be the most critical and one of the hardest” Yahweh added. "hmm ok" Arua replied observing, the candies which shined like mini lights inside the darkness. "It can purify... Any kind of darkness?" Yasumi replied. She was curious about it, as she had never heard of such a thing. Yahweh looked at her and smiled „yes it can, these candies are light ..the positive energy in the universe..I simply crafted it out as candies.. they taste good too just like a real candy... which I hope will become popular in the darkness enough to purify it all” Yahweh replied. "but.... Wouldn't they think of this as silly?" Yasumi asked looking at Yahweh as Gabrielle walked towards her „but thats our intention, they wont suspect something as silly as candy to be a weapon, in this war creativity wins” Gabrielle replied. She paused and thought of their answers. "Well, if you did succeeded, wouldn't there be an imbalance in the equilibrium?" Yasumi asked with Yahweh smiling „for something earned another is lost, thats the universe's rule” Yahweh answered her question. "But if the balance is distorted, it could be destruction of the universe. Every force needs to have an opposite." She said meekly. She knows that the darkness isn't nice but they all need it too. Yahweh smiled and answered „thats why were doing it, to restore this balance” Yahweh replied. "why? Is the darkness too great already?" Yasumi asked. Yahweh looked at her „yes Galamouth's actions tipped the scale towards darkness and destruction, were trying to use this opportunity to restore the balance” Yahweh replied. She was listening intently to Yahweh's explanation. "I understand now." Yasumi answered, Belzebub smirked, watching and listening behind them, the old vicious man. listened intently, taking notes on Yahweh's words, then made two step forwards „if we allow Galamouth have his way, everything will be destroyed... everything that was ever created.. keeping things in balance is not just the light's concern, if the darkness becomes stronger, the more violent we will become, eventually being reduced to monsters, full of hate and rage. Then everything we gained will be lost, we Gods of the dark, serve the dark side... but we do not want to be slaves of destruction..we hate darkness as well” Belzebub expressed and looked at the girls „atleast we don't want Galamouth to ruin things for us, we won't give away our freedom” Belzebub replied. „we used to be God's once, God's of light but were betrayed by the humans and cast into shadowy hell pits, where we endured suffering, until humanity reminded themselves of us again, and restored us to our rightful place, as guides and not just demons and monsters. There's no demon in entire existence, that would desire returning to that prison. Thats why we will agree to that alliance Yahweh” Belzebub replied. "sis, can i eat some candies?" Aya look at the Candies. "Yahweh, can Aya eat the Candies? It is ok ??" Arua asking. Making Yahweh smile „sure she can, they're meant to be eaten but just a few ok” Yahweh smiled and looked at Aya warmly. Belzebub took some and eaten them as well „I remember when you first treated me with them” Belzebub expressed, handing them over to the other Dark God's, Zavebe included. Yahweh whispered to Arua's ears „everybody has a light

side, but sometimes we need means to activate them... that's the candies role... they're like that pearl you used earlier to delete the information Gabrielle recorded, on top of that this allows me to monitor the other God's actions, by having a marker implanted on them... I can concentrate on engineering their souls" Yahweh explained quietly to Arua. "But even the gods have both sides...." Yasumi muttered under her breath. „yes but it's easier to hate, than to love this medicine was developed by Blaze Master, it helps the dark to purify into light... it's like a blessing for these these, that were punished by God for not bowing down to humanity, we need to eat this and our sins are deleted, that boy is truly ingenious... plus with this it's easier to come to terms with it" Belzebub continued talking to Yasumi. Yahweh nodded „but only if you wish to confront your fear, this is a device that makes you're light stronger, but it's up to the individual to confront it.. still with this little thing, which is imbodied with God's energy even for the hardest sinner, it's a trifle" Belzebub expressed in astonishment. Arua turned her head towards her sister smiling "u can eat it Aya but just few of them" Aya smiling "ok!" she jumps to the mountain of Candies and eat some. making Yahweh laugh „Galamouth really has an interesting entorage doesn't he „ He asked Arua , smiling. "forgive of my insolence but...."

Yasumi paused, thinking if she should ask another one. "I wish to confront mine..." Yasumi looked at Yahweh.. with Yahweh looking at her „yes go on..." Yahweh started. "B-but... Isn't this kind of cheating...?" Yasumi replied smiling , as Belzebub and Gabrielle laughed „were at war damnit !... of course will use all the cheap shots to win !!" Belzebub replied , laughing „well you're right if you think cheating is wrong.. but it's too important game to simply loose it... in the end the cause justifies the means.. and the candies are more like a spiritual coffee they won't do the job for us, they'll only start the process of purification but more for most it's enough" Gabrielle answered Yasumi's question . "entorage?" Arua asked suprised and a bit confused „entorage means court , you and Aya belong to Galamouth's official court... according to the information we recieved from our intelligence ...that's why it's really important that you help us" Gabrielle requested looking at the two young girls. "me? Help?" Aya surprising. She stops eat candies. Yahweh smiled and replied petting the young girl gently on the hair „yes we need your help little one" Yahweh smiled „a king asks you, will you accept" Yahweh smiled and gently petted her hair. Yasumi took one but didn't eat it. "I don't want to cheat, but if things get critical.... Well, I'm just going to bring it with me." Belzebub smirked „a wise choice" he laughed. "then i can be a part in war?" Aya smiling "no! You cannot!" Arua screaming. Yahweh sighted and looked at them with a worried expression „unfortunetly what you want is not an option at the moment, you're both involved already ,you will fight either for us or Galamouth... but it's up to you choose , on which side you are" Yahweh explained and walked away, taking few steps and sitting on the white stone. Gabrielle looked at them and stood up in front of us „Listen here...the entire universe is at danger...we'll need all the hands we can get.. most of our forces will engage in battles with each other in order to collect spiritual energy, this is the normal part of the Eternal War, the classic good and evil fight, which will decide the fate of the universe, in places where darkness wins, total anihilation , known as the apocalypse...where good triumphs we will restore the paradise, humanity once lost...many worlds and billion of lives will be sacrificed.. to the darkness.. many souls corrupted and twisted for billenia's. This is the prize we must pay.. for Lord's Galamouth madning ambiitiion, which corrupted and twisted the balance...unless we correct this..and reorganize the energy structure...we will face another danger. The dominance of the system and the world going into eternal chaos...The God's creation loosing its power and the world returning to nothingness" Gabrielle explained looking seriously into Arua's eyes "What if.... Someone doesn't fight?"

Yasumi asked, quite fearfully this time.

"What if, someone just stayed in the middle?" „We created the System as a pretext for humanity to organize, gived rise to institutions as means to gather and distribute the wealth ..and enforcing prosperity.... but humanity soon became blinded by the powers we lend them, and rendered us obsolete. Dividing the divine and scheming to overthrow our rule on mankind, cutting down the ties, between the material and spiritual worlds... in essence killing off their own spirits and any ambitions, becoming slaves to their own means of oppression, forgetting the purpose of the laws we

imposed on them. Forgetting about their own emotions and needs, in original draft the System, was supposed to be an extension of family, a huge family that would expand the whole globe, or universe would be called a global or universal community this would be divided in smaller groups, known as states, which would be ruled by their respected kings or queens, with blessing from us. These rulers in essence were to form the heads of this family, being parents of these societies that would distribute resources among their own citizens, just like parents feed their own children, or distribute other necessities. As their right hands we formed the organizations, which were referred to as institutions, and specifically formed organizations that were referred to as houses of Gods, churches or temples, that were to remind these rulers and institutions, of their true purpose. Unfortunately we know now, where this led...the expansion of the idea was too large to maintain effective control over it, any disease like greed or darkness started spreading quickly and rooting out the evil from the structure became impossible, thus the rich and wealthy...the rulers betrayed their own nations, concentrating only on their own greed and lust for power. Forgetting about their citizens, and about us...committing hideous crimes in our names, justifying destruction in the name of love...creating wars. Deceiving and even corrupting that, which was holy.. like the morning star Lucifer.. who was my brother. forbidding true love and any forms of pleasure, or spiritual education, mocking it and describing as occultism... eventually terrifying the populace by making us monsters, that are bent on destroying the human race. Creating a culture of ignorance and hate even to our kind. Killing the seeds of true enlightenment and even corrupting the Universal metropolis we engineered ourselves. The System and its whores betrayed everything that was noble and good in the world, doing more harm than evil or darkness itself would be capable, creating empty shells of billions wasted and humiliated, by creating laws that took away human free will. Something that was granted by our true creator God. Eventually condemning us all into spiritual exile creating, prisons from their own hate and ignorance. A terrible punishment for the sins we did not commit. A terrible punishment for merely surviving, the human will. Exalting the material plane, above the spiritual one, corrupting the visions and desires of immortality, killing off the legends, and rays of hope in billions of hearts. The system that was to expand spiritual and physical development, was made into a tool that oppressed it, bounding humans and us, to chains that were un-breakable. Creating more evil and darkness than it was even necessary. Making some of us fight the humans just to survive in their imagination....instead of allowing us to guide them or help them with our experience. ...if we don't use this opportunity to break the hold of the System and its System whores ... then it's not just the dark gods who will end up becoming monsters.. the light might vanish for good., Yahweh explained looking at Arua's face., the light that is neither white or dark, but is a hope to billions by merely showing its different colors...if we get cut off from the spiritual energy, crafted by the humans.. we won't be able to maintain control over the dimensions, to give hope by revealing our presence, create miracles. Then the humanity will really become alone, as we will truly depart from the material realm, into a secluded part of reality.. into nothingness. Death might become permanent...for these that will die will have no means to be reborn, joining our imprisonment." Yahweh ended his explanation Arua stared at Aya "Aya, I think this is the time. We will be separated again" Arua hugged Aya warmly "thanks for everything Aya. It's your first war and the last one" Arua smiled. Yasumi was intrigued by the goodbye. "What do you mean....?" she asked a bit surprised. "you will know if it's already the time" Arua forcing to smile.... Yasumi really wanted to hug her or to hold her hand, but she can't do so, since she knows, they aren't friends yet. But she can feel the pain behind the smile. "Y-you.... Aren't going to die... Are you?".... "I want but I cannot die because of 'this'". Arua showed her tattoo in her neck "because of this!" Arua replied looking sadly, and hiding her sorrow in her smile. "A-a life preserver...?" Yasumi gasped. "life preserver?" Arua asked. Yahweh looked at Arua, "it's an effect of his experiments right?" He asked quietly. "yeah. It's our bond" Arua forcing to smile. Yahweh looked at her and smiled, "but there's no reason for you to break it... you two could still be together.. it seems that this tattoo allows that" Yahweh replied. "no. I'm tired. I don't want he controlled me" Arua replied. Yahweh sighed and patted her head, "I know but have patience, you'll be free soon enough" Yahweh replied. Arua didn't enjoy the fact her soul was trapped by Galamouth, as long as

that tatoo existed, he could summon her back anytime, and Arua hated this fact. Yasumi nodded. "Yes. I've only read it before but this is the first time I've seen one. ... But... It's probably torture for you....!"

Chills went down her spine. As she realized that Arua, lived because of Galamouth's manna, not being able to depart and choose a fate of her own. Galamouth took away her freedom, as he needed that child, as a pawn in his mad plan. Using a summoning technique, and implanting a life preserver, making Arua's existence rely on his power, naturally any resistance to that fate would be futile, but with this war. There was an opportunity to end this, freeing herself and her sister, and after she realized the truth about Galamouth she didn't want to have anything to do it. She just wanted to run away to the fares, part of the spiritual realm, away from Galamouth, together with her sister, she wished to find some happiness in this way. Yahweh was troubled, but he knew that Galamouth went to far, imprisoning and tying up Arua's to himself, she had the right to reject the insane path Galamouth took, but Galamouth wouldn't ever accept it. As the Mad Lord was possessive of these that he deemed necessary the darkness made him lust for more and more. Because of his own wounded hearth, and hurt pride, he wouldn't allow anyone to ever reject his ambitions. This was his own curse and the deepest wound he inflicted on himself. Meanwhile Yahweh walked over to Matrimona, and started performing a spell on her, reading different symbols that appeared on her body „Arua can you help me with her? We need to get her out” Yahweh asked Arua. He took his cane and hit Matrimona's body, striking the hearth. Actually connecting his cane with Matrimona's hearth, making his cane shine in bright light, shooting out a white whirlpoolic energy, that became a tornado formed of light. Spinning wildly the light was slowly sucking the world inside it, as the skies became silver, and cracked into tiny particles, that appeared as dust, creating a very powerful vortex, that was sucking everything inside, making it fade away. The green grass disappeared as if it was removed, revealing nothingness, changing into multicolored mini threads, that tied themselves to the white vortex. Creating something of a micro ladder, or net, on which Yahweh, Gabrielle, Aya, Arua and Yasumi could walk, not being engulfed by the chances that were taking place, in the Vortex a chaotic micro dimension was formed, with white shining skies, and rivers full of golden energies that were drawn into the center of this world, as a dark sphere like egg, risen above the golden fluids, shining in red aurora, with huge green serpents tying themselves around the spheres. Squeeching, trying to ward off the new comers, that approached Matrimona's secluded world. Yahweh walked forward and looked at the serpents, which proceeded to attack him, squeeching as Yahweh's body sent a powerful white flash that made the serpents to go back, squeeching terribly and looking at the god with their creepy red eyes, full of hate and rage. Coldly tying themselves to the shell of the dimensional egg, doing everything to not let them pass, spitting up fire and trying to burn Yahweh as he created a defence circle in the air with his cane, defending himself with a blue energy shield, from the infernal fire „Let us pass.. guardians of hell !!” Yahweh shouted, but the hellish serpents ignored Yahweh's command, feeding on the darkness inside Matrimona's hearth. Jumping out at him and trying to bite him, as Yahweh knocked them out, one by one as they jumped, purifying them with his light, making them squeech as the two serpents disappeared, he then rushed forward, breaking the dark shells of the dimensional egg, creating an explosion, as they all were surrounded by the darkness, that came out from Matrimona's soul. The world created from Matrimona's memories. Meanwhile Matrimona was looked in her old memories. Even thought at first she wanted to get out from that lost world now she felt like she belonged there. She lost her will to go back to reality. The more she stood there the weaker she grew, yet she didn't care. After a time she saw how her powers fade and even her existence started to disappear. Before she became disappear she used her last power to appear in Galamouth's dream. She couldn't move or speak, yet in his dream she appeared crying while smiling. After she disappeared from the place she was looked in her body was consumed by few black serpents and disappeared in a black flame. Yahweh walked forward looking at the naked Goddess that was hovering inside an sphere, in an embryonic state, crying from an unknown sadness. „here she is.. locked in her own Sadness, this woman has a strong desire to be saved” Yahweh replied and looked at the girls „but how to do that?” Yahweh asked looking at the girls, hoping they would take his

initiative ,trying to give them a lesson.Observing the darkness created from Matrimona's negative emotions, her own depression and desperation, that binded her soul. She herself floated naked insane a pink sphere,the goddess was a prisoner of her own making. Nudity as a symbol of something bare,without any protection. But also without any dignity ,as the dignity was strapped away from this once pridefull goddess. In Ancient times there was no reason to wear cloths, or to hide our bodies in any ways. it was seen as something unnatural, but this ideal state was changed by Eve, who became the first Matrimona Del System. The Whore of the System isn't a single Goddess, its not a tittle that should be associated with just Yin, rather the young goddess of the dark was decieved by the tool of human arrogance and greed, and was forced to represent it, as a divine container. System however dosen't rely on a single container instead it makes , everyone into a corrupt container, which I describe as the „Matrimona Del System” Of course it also uses a spiritual entity ,like all emotions to control its own actions . This Entity can appear as a Goddess, the Golden Duck from one of Polish legends , is in fact this entity. But it also uses other Goddesses, to hide the real spiritual entity's Identity. In Spiritual world everything creates a form , an interface and symbol that describes it. In the language of True God's creation, hence the reaper is a symbol of human death, which one could converse with. Using the Reaper as an interface to this force of nature, anger can thus be personified like a animal or angry human,Zavebe is also used by this emotion as its spiritual interface. Because its possible for one thing to use many containers, everything lives and posses a free will, in the spiritual dimension thus, a force like rage can accept someone to be its own container and representant, this is a beneficial practice. Because the force uses the human container to work in the human world.Zavebe thus made a pact with his own dark emotions,this is the true purpose of a spiritual contract. If you make a contract with God, to represent him ,be his or its speaker, you become God yourself. The thing we know as God is in fact Creation itself, the ancient non human creative force, that works throught its own creation. This is the true Identity of the thing we describe as God, and in creation there is no rules, we may create good things and bad. This won't discriminate you in the eyes of the TRUE GOD,because God is creation. This is the true structure of God, the ultimate secret of this world. Whether you believe in it , or not is inconsequential. Because its you who create God, if you're a follower of religion and believe that Jesus Christ is you're ultimate saviour , you are right. If you're a follower of Lilith and want to gain a paradise or hell , than you are right too. But one thing that you should learn is this, There is one GOD. The True GOD that has no name, everything else, Jesus,Lilith any other Deity is just its survent. So thats why .. the ancient text warn you to not make other Gods above this one GOD, for its ,the God that is creation above all Gods, these gods are in fact interfaces connected to the one true GOD, meant to represent it. Be mindfull of that the structure of the TRUE ALMIGHTY GOD the ones that rules throught trinity. The trinity is perfection, a tool created by the Almighty God. A human that is a son of GOD the spirit that is inside us all,and is the holly bound with God, the holly spirit, and God itself. The true mastermind that remains invisibble and can only be seen in its own creations. For the Glory be his or hers he is both , he predates all divisions . This is our Master our Lord God. the Trinity is perfection as the man , who bounds with spirits in the name of God, is perfect. Cause this man than becomes a vessel of creation that works under God's will. God rewards these that surve him, with free will. One may obtain everything he desires ...as the Lord will tend to the needs of these that are faitfhull.The System however that is just a tool, creates deceptions and lies. One that understands that were forever bound to God , is therefore given wisdom. To see the deception,that Whores of the System are just containers of lust and greed. The God will give you everything that the system can offer and more, for God will give you the power of creation, which will be bound only to you're own will. Such richness cannot be recieved from a structure, as its not able to provide something it itself does not posses. While God posses all, beeing creation itself . This powerfull force of nature, that can only manifest throught life,joy an everything it made to grow and reach its full potential,be it a single seed that evolves into the tree, or a child that matures into a responsible human. The same force that creates destruction, as its necessary to bring something fresh. When something stagnates it must be destroyed to make room for a new concept. Sometimes its necessary to remove two bricks, just to add one larger that fulls the space more perfectly and allows, to add

other bricks into the building that is our reality. That's why there is no reason to be afraid, yet remember if you desire something ask God for permission, offer a prayer to God and you will be rewarded, if you're arrogant and try to take things forcefully, you will be punished. Summoning a spirit in reality, whether it's a deceased relative or mythological Goddess like Lilith itself requires permission from God. Make an offering to the true God, and be sincere, and the spirits won't harm you. Because once you respect their Lord, and make an offering to God for the sake of a spirit, it's the same as representing them in a royal court in front of their king. You ask for them to be rewarded from God. God who is the ruler of all accepts this request, and it's given glory. Even a Fallen one will feel pride to serve or help a man, who stood up for them with sincerity to God, asking that it would be cleansed from its own darkness. In spiritual world there is no evil or good, just ignorance and wisdom, sometimes a man can free an ignorant spirit, making it advance in the spiritual realm. This creates a huge bond and therefore the spirit then becomes a loyal friend, but in order for this perfect bond to be created, one must first learn to cleanse oneself and for most, it can take entire lives. That's why it's good to heed all warnings and not contact the spiritual realm and God with ignorance and fear. Or the Spirits will be angry, only through a proper bond with God, one receives a wisdom that can allow us to contact with our brethren on the other side. If however one through ignorant practices, gets a spiritual guide learn to love her or him, even if he's the one described as the Satan. The being willing to be a guide for ignorant should be respected, for this is the first stage of learning wisdom and the correct path one should take in life. Meeting a 'Satan' is also a symbolic warning. Satan means respect God, you lack respect of the Lord, so he sent you the accuser to be your guide learn through him to love and understand God. For what you receive from interacting with Echelon and God, is exactly what you give. Therefore Satan or any spiritual being that, shows up represents something that's hidden in ourselves, and since Satan is the symbol of rebellion, then a question we need to answer ourselves is why we do rebel from the bond we have with God. Satan that personifies all evil, is merely a character that makes us reconcile with all evil inside ourselves. So that we can join God's entourage. Once we learn this we can even consider Satan as something interesting, and it's all right to be interested or amazed with the figure identified with him, but we should remember that Satan is just a servant of God, he's not above him. Even if he would state otherwise, remember that Satan is a deceiver, and represents lies and the way we deceive ourselves. There is no reason to fear Satan as he's defeated, respecting him however doesn't mean we're afraid. But it's offensive to be rude and arrogant, respect every single being as it was created by God. Satan is amazing, as he's a concept we created with the help of our master God to represent something, this symbolic language shows the wisdom and the true glory of God and we should praise God's wisdom above all. Be grateful for joy but be sad, be grateful for pain and suffering as it will increase your joy. Yahweh knew this secret and was observing Arua curious of what the girl would attempt to do. The dark fluids covered the invisible floor. Making the environment change rapidly as thousand eyes opened themselves, to become spectators...to a very unusual spectacle that was about to begin. Galamouth's head priestess Arua, walked two steps forward smiling, while shqueeches were heard, the souls were crying in agony..corrupting this plane. The dark muddied waters, were filled by blood and started to boil under the pressure. Making the silver smoke evaporate forming greyish clouds, from which purple lights could be seen, as the molecules of the cloud were slowly engulfed into a reddish spiritual energy. Creating an unknown and perhaps even un-orthodox pattern of activating multiple micro seals that were embedded in the small, molecules of the organic matter, the blood was created from. A terrible stench filled the air, while the toxins were released from green bubbles. Creating a light green smoke, Yahweh took his cane and started to stir the blood, making the blood rush upwards, as it created a defense structure collecting the poisonous gas. The poison was absorbed on a molecular level. Sucked inside by hungry antimatter molecules that digested the matter in the manner of few seconds. That was the power of this slim and fragile shield created by this strange bloodlike fluid. The fluid started boiling even more, as molecules were being connected to each other forming an aggressive reaction, a powerful energy was filling the blood. Making tiny serpents visible, swimming like little fishes. Connecting to each other while themselves being built from the tiny dark molecules, they started

forming something grotesque that started a gentle yet aggressive whirlpool inside the blood ,as it attracted more matter into a crazy dance. Noises were being heard as the Shadow birds aggressively filled the area jumping into the blood trying to eat the serpents , only to disperse in terrible agony while from below a girl dressed in white with dark hair, Mystica appeared jumping down formed from the shadow birds that interconnecting , created a humanoid shape,which then materialized itself as her , she gently jumped behind . Yahweh walking in front of him smirking as her eyes shine in red ,, you finally revealed you're true power to me .. Lord of Darkness” Mystica smirked while saying that , being a bit frustrated by the fact he was released. Looking back at Arua and Aoi she again turned her gaze towards the forming vortex . Considering the rest of the spectators not worth of her attention. She continued to glare as the vortex, took on a more humanoid shape.

Then diving that into one smaller , and bigger. Making them both grow and materialising themselves into two characters, the smaller one was Misa with golden hair and violet eyes, dressed in all black. This was the Dark Misa the corrupted and twisted part of Misa, which Galamouth used for his experiments. The other was the Mad Lord himself ,who was standing in front of the group smirking , as his red eyes shined in all the evil ways ,,you didn't think I'll let you escape without a fight.. did you Yahweh !! I want to introduce you my latest subordinate, she's more deadly than the children you made friends with.. this is the Dark Misa!!!!... I hope she proves to be more fun” Galamouth proclaimed laughing in a more menacing manner, enjoying the disquiet in Arua's and Mystica's eyes, as Misa smirked covered in darkness "Mi-misa?" Arua looked at the girl shocked, noticing the red aura that appeared, engulfing her body. Understanding that the girl was controlled, by Galamouth's dark energy. Meanwhile Galamouth smirked and started dividing himself into, two more figures, the two Galamouths then walked behind the Dark Misa, forming a triangle with her, where Misa formed the top."stop it!Galamouth!stop!don't do that!she isn't a doll,she is human. Don't control her!" Arua screamed , terrified of what her master was doing to her friend, making Galamouth laugh as he enjoyed tormenting his priestess, he looked madly and started staring into Arua's eyes with incredible lust and obsession ,,oh dear Arua ... what a foolish little girl you are, you who never were human , dare to speak about humanity.. let me ask little girl... yes WE shall discuss this then ! Let me ask you what is a human ?” Galamouth asked his question , trying to torment the girl's sense of dignity and looked madly into the whole situation. Being corrupted by his own mind and twisted logic. The darkness took control of his own heart, making him able to do even the most inhumane things"i-i... don't know...but... don't do that...don't control my friends..." Arua is going to cry. She didn't want her friends being controlled by Galamouth. She didn't want their future vanished because of him,and that made her despise the mad lord, and his insane ambition. Galamouth's crazy plan involved toying with human destinies, with the destiny of all life forms. Erasing futures, and their dreams. Destroying everything because of his own hate and ignorance. Galamouth hated his own existence and knew that it wouldn't ever end,therefore he desired even more strongly to end his own existence, and proving to God that he was more superior to him,because he could destroy what God created. Ending his own nightmare and desintegrating within his own madness, smiling he replied to Arua , who was crying because of him ,,You see Arua that's why you're just a servant, and a servant should obey her master in all things...priestess you were granted another life, to fulfill my ambition ,only when my plan is completed , you shall achieve your freedom, you're like these humans than my dear girl...for humans are just pawns for us Gods who play our eternal game,it is we who decide their fate, we rule over them and the humans survive us, because it is we who granted their lives... Arua you dared to stand up to my desire...you wish to challenge my domain, then very well prove you're worth to me or stand aside and watch the masters decide your fate, for mere pawns shouldn't interfere with the will of their masters” Galamouth replied smirking evilly at Arua, thinking that his sheer superiority ,broken Arua's will to fight. Underestimating his priestess, seeing her only as a toy.Galamouth viewed her essential ,needing the power and knowledge of the soul people. He used her experimenting to understand the hidden secrets he desired. But he underestimated the girl Arua was brave enough to stand up to him, and to his darkness "but...i know humans can still continue their lives with their

hearts. Even though they didn't have any ability or magic with them. But I'm sure they still have hope! they will! for their future" said Arua, looking bravely into Galamouth's evil red eyes, making him look at her with disgust as he merely wanted to break her will, using the dark truths he knew „this hope is a lie, illusion they create because of fear...this is truth about this so called humanity !” Galamouth turned back at Matrimona who was still trapped in that sphere, and pointing at her with his finger continued his lecture „You see what happens with humans, who understand the truth...they break ... these humans are nothing more than disgusting rats.. they fled every ship that happens to sink. Humans are weak liars and deceivers . They commit crimes to their own kind, waging wars, spreading ignorance and preaching hate.. if humans were to decide between life and death they would choose death, just to delight in the agony of their comrades dying next to them. Humanity is a parasite and I will eradicate this problem.. destroying these corrupted shells” Galamouth replied smirking from his wisdom looking at Arua with disgust, finding that her heart wasn't afraid of his darkness....but delighting in it as well as finding out that Arua is a very interesting toy to break, Galamouth therefore licked his lips, delighting in the agony Arua according to him would go through, if she loses her faith in mankind. "you lose your heart. No, the truth you broke your own heart. Your dark side thrown your heart away. You see human with your eyes, but you didn't see them with your heart" Arua calmly replied looking with pity at her master. While Galamouth started to get annoyed, by the fact that she dared to stand up to him confidently, smiling to cover his own frustration and talking back „yes it must be you're natural human ignorance that makes you defy my words... that's right I should have known better, why waste talking and communicating these important facts to a mere inferior being. My own foolishness amazes me.. but it's ok even I the Dark Lord Galamouth could enjoy some entertainment...you may try to entertain me then come on Arua fight me ...I promise to not make you suffer too long...we got work to do after all” Galamouth replied, mocking Arua's sense of bravery. Trying to hide his own anger as he, understood it would make everyone aware that Arua was winning that argument. In his delusional mind however Galamouth thought that he was the one that was winning. "why u want me to fight you?" Arua asked, looking at him. Making Mystica walk to Arua's side smirking and playing with her dark hair „if it's a fight you want..I'll be happy to accommodate you...once this is over you're going back to your cage !” Mystica screamed looking angry at the Dark Lord who only smirked. Looking at Mystica he replied to her „oh right I forgot about the guardian that failed her job... you think you can contain me... you alone wish to capture my soul.. little toy, you're nothing more than a tiny bug..I'm waiting for you all... let's make it happen shall we....this was supposed to be an interesting game, I want to see my Dark Misa in action now !!! So let's not waste anymore time !!!” Galamouth replied, shouting out the last words, making Mystica angry and prepare herself to attack. Gathering spiritual energy and looking straightly at his opponent. "i won't fight...well i want get free too but..." Arua continued looking at Aya, knowing that it would endanger her little sister. Galamouth smirked and started teasing her „that bond is your greatest weakness” he proclaimed laughing, while Mystica jumped towards him rushing in demonic speed, being intercepted by one of the copy Galamouth's that changed into a huge serpent, and tied it self to Mystica throwing her to the ground, making Mystica use her hands to rip the serpent's body into the pieces, and quickly stand up, jumping back moving hands straightly in front of her face, shooting a huge light beam at the serpent's body, that quickly materialized into the copy Galamouth, assuming its former place as Galamouth smirked „it's not easy to break through my defense barrier” Galamouth replied mockingly, while Mystica looked at him madly. "well i won't fight but i know someone who want to fight you" Arua admitted opening a gate. making me go through it, as I entered the stage. A bit shocked only moments before, I was sitting at the fountain lost in my own thought, I didn't even close my eyes or go to sleep when suddenly, my consciousness was switched by God to this reality...this wasn't the usual way of how this was done, you might say it was an emergency and that's why God switched my consciousness to this plane, observing the dark masses of airs and finally realizing that I was summoned to the battle by Arua. I realized that the situation was very serious, thought still continued to be confused ...Mystica was visibly annoyed by my presence and preferred to ignore me, ok anybody willing to tell me what's going on ?” I asked a

bit confused, hearing Galamouth's laughter, observing the assembled group. Misa was standing in front of the group, covered in the dark aura she started laughing like a psycho, while I walked forward, looking at the two Galamouth's behind the Dark Misa, while she grinned evilly „he's controlling her again ?” I asked sighting, looking at Yahweh and noticing the rest „so you're here too old timer ?” I asked Yahweh , making him notice me and reply back „hello Blaze , its nice to see you after all this time, fairing well,eating healthy...not causing trouble...Im sorry for making you do this, but we need everybody on our team....stakes are high...You see Blaze if Galamouth wins all life will end, the world as we know might dissapear” Yahweh replied and looked forward, making me reply „ Well I did kinda realise the situation , its not you're usual predicament is it ?” I answered and looked at Yahweh, while he smiled and replied „Listen Blaze you are the creator, you have a power that is unique even among the most highest of us , in this situation ...you're a key that opens all the locked doors, you're nature and true purpose are hidden behind the doors that lock you're past, before you can win this fight Blaze, you must venture to the place it all started...Blaze Master during this war, you will go back to ancient times to witness you're own creation, there you'll find a knowledge that will make defeating Galamouth possible... you must understand what it means to be a creator” Yahweh replied and looked at Galamouth.I looked at him confused , beeing interested in the things he told me just now. A creator but of what ? what were the things I created, were the thoughts that clouded my mind. What was the journey I was to take ? I continued looking at Misa that was beeing controled by Galamouth, in the form of Dark Misa.Yasumi was just watching through all the ruckus, but she was also thinking and reflecting through all that. I my self was also trying to understand, the words Yahweh told me, and the tactic Galamouth was using in this battle. I knew there was a triangle battle shield creating, this was the dark trinity of power structure, where both Matrimona who was trapped in the sphere behind

Galamouth, and Misa were used to generate spiritual energy that was than distributed to Galamouth himself, and throught him to his evil clones. It was impossible to break without hurting Misa or Matrimona, and Galamouth's clones were used to defend Misa from any harm. Suddenly Misa attacks everyone maaking an ice wonderland.....then she disappear in the coldness. As the cold snow started bursting throught the whirlpool, everything started freezing, making even me feel numb as both me and Yahweh ,started combating Ice , with fire creating a whirlpool of warm energy that created a warm barrier , protecting the rest of the team. Misa remained invisible ,confusing us ,as to her whereabouts. "Hmm.... Echelion is created by our minds, and that means we can also create and control.Hey Blaze! We can still turn the table."

Yasumi said, as she tried to fend of the cold. I was busy making circles in the air with my hands , guiding my spiritual fire into warming the air, ensuring that we wouldn't freeze for the rest of eternity. While Yahweh smiled looking at Yasumi and noded with aproval „indeed I think you understand what it means to be a creator Yasumi... you're right we need to create our own weapons” Yahweh replied and looked at me, as I remembered the words Alpha told me before „I create with my own hands, what I create is warmness , to combat the harsh winds of coldness, I create light to combat darkness.. and I can create a path to God” I replied looked back at everyone. I replied looked back at everyone. „listen up , man is nothing without God, we need to create an opening for God !!” I replied looking at Galamouth who was evilly smirking, and enjoying his own superiority. I turned my gaze upon Yasumi who muttered something under her breath.".....darkness..... Isn't..... Not all....."

Her voice was drowned by the sounds of battle. While I was thinking, on the way of materialising, what I said. How to open the path to God under these circumstation, and I realized that everything that happens, has a symbolical meaning. That our actions create a code, which consists of Gods Language.

That our actions create a code, which consists of Gods Language. I realized that in order to have God appear , I needed simply to summon Alpha and Omega the girl whom I made my God's interface, by combing hers energy with my own...we would open a path for God „Yahweh... lend me you're streanght I need to combine our energies into a form and summon a divine container I created to comunicate with God !!” I screamed it out to Yahweh. Yahweh looked at me and smiled

„All right my friend you have my help” he replied as I jumped away behind , starting to concentrate on my self and locking my mind in an intense prayer as Yahweh turned around and extending his right arm he attacked me with his fire , engulfing me in a a redish blaze , that soon turned yellow. While I was standing with closed eyes concentrating on meditation and combining our fire energy , while reciting an ancient mantra I remembered from somewhere. Little creeks of orange shining fluid was coming out from my feet,creating ancient heroglyps on the floor, the symbols that formed from this liquid where the visualisations of my prayers that started to manifest themselves in physical form as a huge whirlpoolic fire rose upwards , with me still standing in the centre , while it made its way towards the skies , tuching and combining with the borders of the dark whirlpool dissolving it, as if sucking entire dark energy and growing in size,making the whirlpool slowly desintegrate ,cracking like glass falling down to the ground ,forming into the dark cristals that where , engulfed in orange flamed. While I screamed , engulfing my self in golden light that flashed forward engulfing everyone ,destroying the darkness.Making Galamouth gasp in fright, as he desperately sacrificed his clones to create a shield of darkness. While the light fullled the area, making all of us stronger , even Mystica started to feel less weaker and more happier. While Light energy formed into some strings and attached itself to every member of our team,combining with streanght of our hearths. A huge surge of light blasted from the green now skies , and started to form into a humanoid shape, making itself smaller and taking on a more feminine figure, a beautifull woman was beeing formed out of light, on terrified Galamouths eyes, as the woman started taking a more physical shape , she directed one of her hands at the dark shield destroying it, making it crack from the insides. While I who was no longer standing in the whirlpool,nor in any flames walked forward, to greet this handsome lady dressed, in an wonderfull huge blue dress,with enchanting blue hair and green eyes, she smiled towards me „ You called on me , and so I am Blaze” Alpha and Omega replied , smilin hapilly. While Galamouth , confused observed her silky like , gently brown skin. „What on earth are you ?” He finally asked going back. Alpha and Omega looked at him,gazing into the dark haired mans eyes ,smiling innocently „I am Blaze's personal manifestation of God, the begining and end I am the Alpha and Omega...the celestial body of the lord” She replied and looked at Galamouth without any fear. "Beginning and the End.... So that's who AlphaOmega is."Her voice was trembling with awe.

"I can't believe it...!" Yasumi , continued as Galamouth looked in fear , smirking evilly. His eyes shined in red as he walked even more, while Alpha slowly walked forward beeing able to intimidate even Galamouth. „Well done Blaze.. to think such a fool would be able to create such intense connection with the Lord.. IM amazed, but that dosen't mean you won.. NO it means nothing in front of my divine wrath !” Galamouth screamed walking backwards trying to figure out, a way out of this mess. „you're plan will fail,destruction shall end” Alpha calmly replied intimidating Galamouth even more, as he really started to be visibly terrified looking with hatret at her „ Go away from me you beast !” he screamead jumping back wards with incredible speed, as Alpha silently stood in her place. Looking at the Dark Lord,with pitty and some form of gentle sorrow „how can a child stray so far away, without seeing the light of the sun ?” She asked calmly looking at Galamouth, who continued to stare at her with disquist.

"Your highness.... I think I know the reason why."

Yasumi answered. Alpha warmly stared at Yasumi, smiling „come closer child” She invited Yasumi , smiling warmly. She stepped forward slowly, feeling a little nervous."It must've been the accumulated malice that was never released in his heart. Plus Matrimona's resentment and pain added up to it."Alpha smiled and looked at Galamouth „yes pain and sorrow are created by tragedies...they cause darkness to grow in human hearths, and thats when people and demons abandon me , the one that is both their mother and father,the one that gives life to all things. The one that is inside in the darkness inside everyones mind and hearth , humans however need mind and hands for work, forgetting about the hearth,which was designated to be a mediator between the hands and the mind, in order to acomplish creation all three elements must be combined, alone all of them are usseless however, mind which is creative,joined with a loving hearth and strong hands can make the impossible possible” Alpha replied smiling gently towards everyone even to

Galamouth , and than continuing to look at the Mad Lord that was terrified of the loving power of God.,,yes pain and sorrow are created by tragedies...they cause darkness to grow in human hearths, and thats when people and demons abandon me , the one that is both their mother and father,the one that gives life to all things. The one that is inside in the darkness inside everyones mind and hearth , humans however need mind and hands for work, forgetting about the hearth,which was designated to be a mediator between the hands and the mind, in order to accomplish creation all three elements must be combined, alone all of them are useless however, mind which is creative,joined with a loving hand and strong hands can make the impossible possible” Alpha replied smiling gently towards everyone even to Galamouth , and than continuing to look at the Mad Lord that was terrified of the loving power of God. Yasumi observed the whole situation from a safe distance, Galamouth locked in his own fear."I feel sad for them...."She said, as she looked to Matrimona and Galamouth.

"This isn't right!"..."when is it right ?" I asked looking at the unknown to me girl, sighting a bit and observing the whole situation ,,don't get your hopes up...this isn't over yet” I reminded the girl and continued analysing the ground, noticing energy patterns, flowing in the dark blood ,, you see this” I pointed to the small purple lightings, that appeared in blood , lighting up the dark liquid.

"Actually it's kind of the opposite of what I was thinking, dummy....!" Yasumi's voice was filled with annoyance."I'm worried for them!" the girl replied, making me annoyed, as I replied,, shouldn't you be worried for us....Misa is close..I can feel her nearby..worry about that why don't you” I said it sighting,while a creepy laughter belonging to Misa was heard near by."Jeez! I'm worried for us too! But I just can't help it!"She gotten cautious as she heard Misa's laugh. Galamouth smirked evilly as suddenly a spear impaled me through my body ripping out my vital organs making my body fall into the blood, and was consumed by the dark bloods that was filled with , dark fish that appeared similar to little piranha's that ate my flesh, before being engulfed in red flames and dying in agony,dissapearing and forming into golden light form that started growing from the , dark blood pool ,as I was slowly regaining my human appearance, materializing into my human form , smirking, while standing in the former position ,,you better try harder psycho!” I screamed.

Galamouth only smirked jumping from Alpha who attacked him with a powerful force, running after him. Forcing him into combat and dueling him in a karate like fist fight. Mystica observed the battle preparing herself , engulfed in blue smoke. Suddenly Dark Misa appeared , grinning evilly as the spells insignia started shining around her feet. The Blood started boiling and terrible screams were being heard , as souls appeared summoned, squeaking and covered in eternal darkness , they looked like dark shades with red eyes,they floated everywhere chaotically ,squeaking with aggression, while bodies were forming out of the decaying blood, the bodies of zombies were created , forcing the dark souls to possess them, making them cry from inhumane agony, the greyish decaying bodies of man, woman, children and many animals started moving to attack us,furious for being woken up from their eternal slumber. Misa was controlling the walking dead with a dark magic using them to kill us, as the zombies growled terribly and started running at us, from everywhere , I jumped back and took out my laser swords using it to cut off heads of few that dared to circle me around, forcing me to make a circle myself. "T-this is all so twisted!How are we supposed to survive!?"Yasumi sighted and pulled a sword from her dress."Can't believe I have to use this." She admitted looking at ,a rotting corpse of a dog, with visible ribs bones, covered slightly by rotting meat , was walking towards her growling terrible ,than suddenly jumping the air and attacking her furiously.She quickly sheathed her sword, blocking the dog's fangs. The dog was spitting green acid onto the sword trying to break it.The dog was spitting green acid onto the sword trying to break it. Yasumi moved She quickly jumps away, and tried to slash dog down. Hitting it successfully the dog, broke into tiny pieces, as if it was made from porcelain. Mystica jumped into the air and stretched her hands while moving upwards, calling on her shadow birds that started flying towards her, cutting through the ghoulish birds that were controlled by Dark Misa, the Shadow birds,sliced the dead animals into gruesome pile of flesh, that then turned to the black blood,which was falling like rain on us. Mystica concentrated , making her eyes shine in green as her shadow birds were engulfed in blue fire, adding to their strength, as the shadow birds then started

spreading the blue fire among the decaying zombie birds, that perished turning into the dark blood that slowly returned to the ground, I was running through the living dead slicing the thought one, on one destroying their hideous form, while avoiding being attacked myself, jumping away or jumping over them, while constantly moving.

Yasumi stopped, thinking again.

"Hey everyone! Think! Think that these creatures aren't vile! Think that they're our allies."...

Mystica sighted attacking the ghoulish birds, and sending her summoners to rip off the corpses that were attacking below „it's not that simple..the mad lord blocked our thoughts, unless someone breaks the spell in that blood...we cannot influence anything !!” Mystica shouted out, while I rushed back towards Arua, tapping the shocked girl on the shoulder „Hey what are you waiting for !!! it's your cue damn it !! you're one of the soul people, use your power to purify these souls and send them to heaven !” I shouted out, annoyed at the fact she was too shocked to even respond, I gently shaken her up, trying to wake her up from that trance..„Hey it's not the right moment to doze off !! you maggot !!” I screamed at her furiously. "purify the zombie?" Arua responded waking up from the trance that was caused by her fear. „yes use the powers of the soul people, please”

I asked gently, patting the girl's hair, trying to make her feel secure, while we were protected by Yahweh's fire, that engulfed the zombies that tried to attack us. We stared at each other, as Yahweh nodded and sighted meaning to tell me, that we needed to hurry up with this whole procedure „come on, you gotta save everybody, especially Aya !” I screamed showing to Arua how terrified her little sister was. Arua looked at Aya "but they so many..." she explained hesitantly. While Mystica jumped behind her looking a bit annoyed „weren't you supposed to be his pupilpriestess or whatever, I command you to use your magic to make these pests go away !!” she shouted angrily at Arua, and looked behind at Aya. „my my you better be quick about it...or your sister just might get killed” Mystica tried threatening her, while I looked at the girl angry a bit. „don't you think you're going too far with that ?” I asked her annoyed by this behaviour „shut up.. I'm not talking with you... garbage” Mystica replied, looking around as the corpses were still being destroyed by her shadow birds, and Yahweh's fire. "Will you guys, just stop fighting!?" Yasumi shouted. "A home that isn't united, will be destroyed." Mystica looked at her, not understanding anything „it's not like you understand right Mystica” I teased her. „understand what ? you all are foolish creatures anyways” Mystica replied and looked at Galamouth „once I bind him my purpose in life will be restored, nothing else matters” she replied correcting her hair and looking at Arua. "Aya must die! that is the only way" Arua finally shouted making me gasp „what did you !?!” I replied a bit shocked and continued staring at the girl. "No one has to die here!!!" Yasumi shouted out "Are you giving up already!?" She shouted, feeling desperate. She wanted for things to be normal again. "you can all die here .. I don't care" Mystica sighted replying „don't lose your faith !! this battle is drawing to an end... Galamouth is retreating, we just need a little more effort to, that's all guys, please don't let stress take hold of you and remain calm.. Arua you have the potential to save your little sister !!” Yahweh shouted back while defending us from the zombies „we need to work as a team don't forget that !” he added. "if you all want me to purify the zombie then Aya must die!" Arua shouted out angrily. "no way....! Is that the price for everything!?" Yasumi terrified gasped. While I looked sadly at the little girl that was teasingly smiling. Aya smiled grinning a bit "it's not! I'm her weapon. I'm the half of her soul" Aya explained happily, no longer being afraid while I walked over to Arua and bitch slapped her in the face with my full force „if we won't stop Galamouth many people will die, many people will be forced to watch their brothers and sisters die in front of them !!! so stop being fucking selfish and do that already !!” I shouted angry, both angry at the fact Arua was hesitating and that Aya had to die. But I also knew that she would be resurrected in a new form after the war, and that she would no longer have to fight with us. Arua kicked back angrily "how dare you! Galamouth never slapped me! How dare you slapped my face?!" she shouted at me, while I looked at her eyes „we don't have much time...do it” I answered and walked away, rushing to battle. "then break their head. It's more simple to purify them" Arua advised me, while I stared back, sighting annoyingly and looked back at the hordes of these walking dead. Making me wonder, whom or what were they, that they ended up like that after dying. This is their true nature

that revealed itself, upon our life. Animals that were tormented by the humans , just for the sake of Adreline ended up grotesque and terrifying monsters,the same with these humans that now walked in decaying flesh. All were these that didn't value life, or suffered cause of the greed of the system whores,eventually becoming whores themselves. These that growled angrily , were the same that destroyed others, killing hurting and destroying. This was hell, thinking of death and killing in the name of lust while alive,made them desire the same in this world,for we are who we are. This thought made me tremble,even more when I realised these where the same that called me a monster or rapist,while the same time they were toying with human or animal life... Who were these whores to judge me, when my „evil” deeds saved their victims. I was despised because I dared to save these,they wanted to destroy,destroying their work. I rushed at them running and cutting off their heads, destroying them without remorse, killing and slaughtering every single of these bastards, to my heart's content. This was my will to fight, no longer resisting myself, I just slaughtered these bastards,that made even me suffer, and they were screaming dying in agony and their eyes were decayed and in somekinda evil fury , all the darkness that resided in myself was unleashed into destroying their body ,flames appeared everywhere my flames that burned their flesh as I screamed. Regaining my sense after a while panting..."oh my,he really like killing dead body so badly"Arua admitted staring at me , while I was in my trance trying to fight the walking dead,Mystica stared at me wildly her eyes glowing a bit „my my I dunno who's more dangerous....it seems the useless one is not so useless after all” She spoke sarcastically , grinding her teeth. Wondering what was the power, that gave me such incredible fury, while I started slowly calming down and continued ripping the zombies destroying one on one , but more of them were coming.

"Humans are intelligent but also ignorant creatures at the same time. They cause trouble but also improve themselves. I wonder.... Is there still hope for humankind?" Yasumi admitted as she sighed while at the same time she easily walked by the hordes of rotting corpses and quickly slashed them down. Making them die in a quick and painless death, while Yahweh who also observed my actions , sighted and calmly breathed „well mistakes are a part of being human,in this way they learn and adopt....being born as a human I consider it my honor that I could experience life from human perspective....having human emotions and bound by matter, in an un-perfect world...created out of human free will, this second reality is God's greatest masterpiece, both because it's so true and yet deceptful...and because life created that way , has its own precious value...in truth all sides of this war are right and wrong, Galamouth is right and Blaze Master is right too, people who chose the system or the material world, valuing it over spiritual one are right too...the problem is when some of the sides tries to impose their own will on others, and instead of co-operating with others...they instead abuse, this is the true evil”Yahweh replied ,slashing the zombie bird with his walking stick."I too was once human but.... It wasn't an easy life. But I guess it's worth living for." Yasumi replying looking at all of them. While at the same Misa appeared smirking attacking them with tornado,after this she used the armagedon magic that makes everything to be destroyed. Distabilising the reality , enclosed in this dimension, forcing Yahweh to stab his walking stick in the blood,drawing light energy into the dimension canceling the distortion , Misa wanted to create, while she herself run away giggling."I have a question" Yasumi declared."It's for Yahweh." Yahweh looked at her, raising his brows „a question for me you say ?” asked Yahweh looking at her, while still being capable to divide his attention, to perform a well co-ordinated defense from the zombie birds that attacked him,being shielded by Mystica shadow birds"Can Gods like you actually die?" Yasumi asked while still fighting with screeching, black crows. „yes we can die” he answered smiling a bit ,knowing the answer would shock the girl. He seriously enjoyed admitting it, because he hid mystery in this answer ,wanting Yasumi to continue asking him the question. Yasumi stared at Yahweh, confused "Um.... Master Yahweh?" Yasumi waited patiently for his answer. „We can die...but were also immortal,our death doesn't stop our existence it only transform us into a higher level of being,when we die we become life itself that can transform our essence in any material forms we desire, this is what we are now..but what you see is still a form a body I use is that of a matter, it's more enchanted than a human, but it also bears physical similarity to one, this is because I used to be a human, I lived and died as a human and then I realized that I could still feel and desire

and that with my wishes, my form could be reborn to what you see now, this is a body that although appears to be immortal and never ages can be destroyed, and if its destroyed than I die... only to be reborn into a new form I create for my self , from my own spiritual energy as a being of higher plane...once in a true form there is nothing that cannot be created ...when Blaze died in battle consumed by the fishes in that blood, he at that moment ceased existing in the material plane, that was formed in this enclosed reality, but his existence didn't cease and although he was outside he could choose to return to this battle, and thats when he was reborn... we exists in a forms of a phoenix we are these birds , that were praised in many ancient legends for our true form is that of an eternal fire my dear” Yahweh replied and stared back at Yasumi smiling. She simply smiled in response. The revelation was truly amazing even for her. Meanwhile Galamouth was trying to defend himself from Alpha's punches, shielding himself her fists and than shooted out a dark impulse that made Alpha kneel down from pain as he kicked her in face „what a foolish woman you are !!” he screamed kicking her down , making her look back smiling „you confuse things too much, you shouldn't look at the form but whats inside” Alpha replied smiling as her eyes shine in light green, suddenly a surge energy exploded forming a circled shockwave that spreaded touching Galamouth as he screamed terribly being burned. Green flames covered his body forcing him to use dark energy, to shield himself making the flames fade away. He continued to look at Alpha with disqust, knowing now that she was a formidable enemy. Galamouth feared Alpha due to the fact she was God incarnated and possessed special abilities, but of course wouldn't admit that willingly preferring to mask his fear with arrogance. Yasumi observed the whole situation from an distance, she noticed that Galamouth was afraid. And felt pity for him. "I pity the fool." she expressed, while the Mad Lord tried to make himself look fearful. The twisted mind of the Dark Lord, the most bizarre enigma's of the , demonical world, concluded new strategy. Galamouth was a fool to assume the role of Satan, the arch enemy of God, but by no means he was stupid. Galamouth's awkward intelligence made him a formidable foe, while his bizarre nature made him funny at times. These were the qualities of a Mad Lord that should be respect thought „ Stand back you foolish God... For I shall bring you into oblivion!!” Galamouth yet again proclaimed theatrically, his insane ambition., „ Stand back you foolish God... For I shall bring you into oblivion!!” Galamouth yet again proclaimed theatrically, his insane ambition. "What can make this insane lord.... normal...? He has everything already." Yasumi expressed. Yahweh walked over to her erecting a flame barrier around us as we observe the decaying horde being burned in orange flames, I used this opportunity to rest a bit, while Yahweh replied „he has everything , with exception of true love” Yahweh replied, making me smirk „ don't tell me its all about a girl.... or does the mad lord prefer boys ? tragic gay story now thats a new one” I replied , interrupting Yahweh and walking into the center of the flame circle. "Ugh... And we have another jester. What fun." Yasumi said sarcastically. While I looked at her „ You know it was the Jester that was the smartest in Polish history...huh Im talking about Poland again ? huh well here's an interesting information Yahweh, Galamouth referred something about Poland earlier when we meet in his laboratory” I answered Yasumi looking at the girl and than turning my gaze towards Yahweh „Galamouth is a Polish Tatar, his true Identity is Duke Dalwinghe was Emilia Platter's loverthe two would be engaged and living happily ever , if it wasn't for the partitions ...and Emilia rejecting his proposal on the grounds of morality , and national duty...thought she was pretty much extroverted and might as well not treat him seriously, in Galamouth's mind as well as in the Polish history , she was idealised into a national hero” Yahweh replied , making me join into the conversation „Emilia Platter ? oh I metted her few times, the real one has the typical Polish personality thats not far from the System whore's one, or moral ones...thought she did deserve the title of national hero...she's not to pretty either rather talkative ...but also very intelligent and caring ...she's a devoted catholic and christian...thats both , good and bad qualities...well she's not easy to have sex, thought thats rather should be expressed as she's not easy to talk about sex rather than having itshe lived according to the old principals ...where sex without the catholic or systematic marriage , its a form of registering relationships in the system and with the local authoritiesnot precisely the rigoristic I like to follow you know....anyways its also was a social order and I believe Galamouth being the weirdou

which he is now...wasn't very respected by the social aristocracy and environment...they would mostly treat him as a joke" I replied and looked at Yahweh who sighted at me and nodded, "you know you're history well ...yes Galamouth wasn't tolerated in the social gatherings, and often would be excluded from the social meetings of the true Poles, due to the fact he was an Tatar orphan adopted by Polish nobility out of a whim...Galamouth was treated by them as human sacrifice, they would praise him if he nobly died during a battle and Emilia's only purpose was to make Galamouth fight in the most dangerous fights during the uprising...you might call it fools luck that he survived while Emilia died ..." Yahweh replied looking at Galamouth. "And how is that connected to this battle?" Yasumi asked. Making Yahweh think a bit analyse the situation, Lord Galamouth, promised to avenge her death, and to break the seals of his cursed fate as he putted it in his own words, since he didn't take Emilia's personality into an account, the other things he could blame would be the society and the spiritual realm, thus he seeks to destroy both the material and spiritual?" Yahweh explained, "well the real Emilia was caring and probably considered him as a friend, but that at the end she was extroverted and pragmatic and Galamouth wasn't husband material...I believe he could be shunned also from the fact his weirdness came from introversion, just like we all are considered weirdous by the mighty extroverts who think they decide our fate" I replied observing how the fire engulfed the decaying birds. "Weren't Lady Matrimona and Galamouth siblings before?" Yasumi asked. While I looked at them suprised, and a bit schocked, "Lady Matrimona?...Matrimona is here !?" I asked suprised, hearing that one of the Goddesses that patroned the system was in the same place as me, it was very hard to approach them. Yasumi looked to the black sphere behind Galamouth and inside it is a human-shaped figure. "Lady Matrimona and Galamouth... well... They had problems that resulted to this." I looked a bit enraged, "Lady Matrimona Del System ! one of the cursed Goddesses we have all problems because of these, she's the Whore of Babylon ! actually its kinda fitting for the one that assumes the role of Satan to marry the Whore of Babylon, the two is known as the worst enemies of both the spiritual and material, the system that denies our spirituality and our soul and Satan that hates all creation of God" I explained and looked annoyed, sighting, "damn it I thought that Matrimona known also as the spouse of God, the second too Lilithok well Yasumi, Arua and the rest have you heard the story of the first prototypes, back in a very very distant past in the times of basic creations. God developed a male prototype a male personality which is implanted in all of males, this personality was known as Adam, to offset the male personality and to make it complete he created the first female prototype ...which was a failure...after the failure came another female prototype known as Matrimona or Evethe original Eve was the sustainer of the male part and the original consort of male God's persona known as ADAM, the failure which was to independent, and equal to the male counterpart, was named by the humans as Lilith...her fate originally was to be abandoned...not because Lilith was impure but was to perfect for the whole situation to evolve, both Adam and Lilith didn't want to back down representing equal characteristics...thought God didn't destroy Lilith he made her into a guide and permitted her to exist. Meanwhile Eve, who was a more submissive personality had completed the design more perfectly, and the so called Extroverted society was formed....However unlike Lilith who was an introvert, extroverts oriented themselves on the outside and could care less about their true feelings, while Lilith who was introverted, decided to create a male that would complement her, thus she gived birth to Samael, who was an introverted male personality. Thus God started existing as four different personalities that started to interact with each other, the culminating point beeing the seduction of the Extroverted Eve by Samael the introverted male, which uncovered the main fault the extroverts had, which was artificial bounds, while Eve acted according to Adams will, she actually couldn't care less about him, having someone more attractive than the Adam persona, the Eve betrayed Adam, consuming the forbidden fruit, who was Samael...thus Lilith who felt outraged by Eve's actions, who dared to take something she created for herself, decided to pursue Adam...this in turn enraged Eve, who saw Lilith as a threat to her position as the wife of Adam the God's primal male personality, and decided to create a division between the Extroverted reality, which we know as the material world, and the introverted reality we know as Echelion, resulting in what we were thought to be as, Adam's and Eve's expulsion from Heavens... While Lilith and Samael remained in

their own world known as Echelon...this is how both the spiritual and material were created...this is also how this battle were taking part started...now the Adam and Eve were the protoplasts of the mortal and material society,with all its politics ,and the creation of system....Lilith and Samael were branded as Demons and Samael become the first Satan.....Eve and everybody based on her became the original Matrimona's Del System or what we refer to as System whores ,Lilith and Samael became the basis for the spiritual world and what was later defined as Introversion, All Extroverts however hail from Adam and Eve...and therefore there's an Eternal war between the two personalities ,caused by the original four prototypesnow the problem we face here is simple ...both Eve and Lilith were created to satisfy Adam, however the Extroverted male that is Adam can only form a proper relationship with Eve , who is also an Extroverted female, while Eve could be a caring friend to Samael the Introverted male, she will never form a proper relationship with him...while at the same time Lilith who can be Adam's companion will not form an Extroverted relationship with him, because she's not submissive and perfect ,however she will form a relationship with Samael,whom she created to adore and be her perfect counterpart” I explained looking at Yasumi."sis why we...didn't help them..." said Aya while show Arua something in her hand. Arua look at Aya hand. There is a candy. She surprise "ah...that candy... You want to fight Aya?..." Arua looked at her smiling."so what will you do with that candy,Aya?" Ask Arua. She have bad feeling. Maybe Aya want Arua to give the candy to Galamouth. "you will do this sis,give it to Galamouth"Aya smiling. "...but...how can i give its to him. There is no reason that make Galamouth want to eat it!!" Aya smiling "ah...then kiss him that's good idea,isn't it?hehehe" hearing that Arua face going red. "NO?! I cannot do that!!" Arua screaming . „that would work on me thought” I replied...looking at the battle in front of us,and noticing that the entire area was almost cleaned from Misa's zombies „we could try making some girl from our side have sex with him..but than again its something thats my weakness not his” I explained smirking and blushing at the thought. Imaginating the Pervy scenes that would take place " no! No kiss no sex! Give me another idea" Arua still screaming. I looked around the scene,seeing how Mystica slashed throught the dead bodies,destroying most of them in the process, and than looked back at the girls „forget about that .. first we need to help Mystica” I answered. "good. Then i won't do that embarrassed thing" Arua open a portal some of her spirits come out. "maybe it will help a bit" this made me smirk as gazed up into the situation. „yes it will” I admitted , smirking "but i dont know what spirit that i must use?" I smirked „ a powerfull one” I explained."powerful?maybe i must use my wolfs".....”Do you think they could make throught to Galamouth, Misa's Zombies are making things difficult” I answered observing the hordes of the dead , beeing engulfed by Alpha's blue fire, and purified by light, While Galamouth smirked observing the whole situation , than going by pass the Schocked Alpha making her stand behind him as he moved his hand maniacally „you see God !! how this irrational defiance can be complete, ultimate destruction , the ultimate fire that will consume is what I desire come destruction come my desires, we shall create oblivion !!! yes look at this spectacle oh ye arrogant fools.. that stand in the way of the ulimate death... you are weak .. you are so insignificant ...” Galamouth exclaimed laughing madly moving his hands forwads and creating a huge black energy beam that was quickly shoot at us making all of us avoid beeing hitted , as Galanmouth appeared in front of me trying to punch me in the face as I avoided ,while he attacked Mystica forcing her to use blood to shield herself ,from the tentacles he used trying to corrupting her soul „foolish fools you will never stop the innevetable , this destruction will be the punishment to all of you for the arrogance!!!” Galamouth exclaimd madly „ I told you this before you're the arrogant one !!” I yelled at him and looked at Arua . " i can use my wolfs to stop their movement for a while then i'll try to help Misa" Galamouth smirked and teleported back to Alpha as she calmly observed his actions,turning around and jumping away „fine do that quick” I replied observing the zombies,when suddenly an idea came into my mind „ hey Arua what would happen if the wolfs consumed these candies, could you fuse the power of light with you're spirits” I asked looking at the girl, hoping it was possible."I dont know. I havent try it before. I'm not sure" the girl replied making me look at her „than go ahead and try ithmm maybe I could try using a force field attack combining it with you're wolfs as cover

up” I replied. The zombies were crowling drinking the dark blood "ok. " Arua open a gate and take of some candies. " well,hope my spirits will find" give some candies to the wolfs. The Candies were thrown by Arua throught the golden gate, creating a golden flash inside, while I started slowly gathering all of my spiritual energy, prepairing for one of the most intense attacks in this battle. The wolfs start howling and eat the candies. But suddenly a huge amount of energy attack Arua. No one attack Arua. Arua thrown far away. She try to stand up and see what happened. She see her wolfs are became light ball of souls. "its...my magic...the candies...vanishing my magic?!" Arua shocked

I looked back at the situation angered „what the hell is happening” I yelled while Yahweh sighted and calmly looked at me „this the most pure of postive energies,it cannot be combined with darkness” Yahweh replied, while I yelled angered „you could have said so earlier !!” I yelled and looked annoyed while calming , in order to not waste my energy „damn it ! just fuckin damn it !” I vented out my frustration.The ball of souls come near Arua. Arua check everything. "Blaze...

I...cannot remake them..." Making me ever more pissed „great this is just great ...were fighting a battle and we destroyed our weapons ...damn it Yahweh how could you of all people make sucha blunder!!” I yelled at him „its function is purification not combination , Blaze I suggest you check things more thoughtly before risking you're resources” Yahweh expressed and continued fighting the remaining zombies.Arua looked confused. She eats all ball of souls. Making me wonder ..what the hell she was doin

„what are you doing ?” I asked suprised ,watching as Arua consumed the bright ball."A-Arua....? What're you doing...? I don't think you're supposed to eat that....!" Yasumi exclaimed with worried. I looked at her serious a bit and sighted „let her do it...we need to do something now !” I yelled and looked at the upper skies, noticing the strange patters that appeared in the golden surface of the skies,that made this dimensional cealings."Well.... But still... What will happen to her!?" Yasumi continued while her face shown sincere worry. Arua continued biting and swallowing the ball, while I helplessly observed the situation . In the truth ,no one knew what would happen now,Arua finished eating the souls. She fell comfortable. She can sense that amount of power come back to her body. But her tattoo active. Arua look at Galamouth. Galamouth smile evilly to her. "he know...that eats souls is taboo..." Arua replied, meanwhile Galamouth observed the situation slowly his red eyes shine ,as he suddenly moved his hand making the Misa zombies desintegrate into the dark blood,they were createn from this „I was waiting for this” he quietly commented observing the situation. I continued looking shocked , while the zombies that were attacking us suddenly dissapeared . „whats going on ?” I asked , while Mystica walked besides me „he cancelled his attack” Mystica replied observing him closelly. Yasumi rushed towards Arua and started questioning her "What happens... to the souls that get eaten...?" she quickly asked her question worried."oh the soul fusion with my soul. And i have they ability now" Arua smiled while prepairing to summon a spell "Don't worry Blaze i can use their ability" Making me schocked as I continued to observe the situation."Miss Arua....? What's going to happen then...?"

Yasumi asked while prepairing herself for something she felt could happen now..it seems that Galamouth anticipated this ,thats why he cancelled Misa's undead army” Yahweh replied,while I smirked „ ah I see he did that so we wouldn't take control over them...so thats what happened” I replied while looking at Mystica who was grinning „but that means the bastard is unprotected” Mystica replied."ah..." Arua replied watching him, she knew what Galamouth wanted from her.Arua looked at Aya "Aya,go!dont let he find you !open a portal then run away" Arua tried to warn her little sister , but Galamouth appeared in front of Aya smirking wildly „Aya come to me !! together we shall finish my desire..change into the form you were destined to take” He commanded into Aya, making me run towards the little girl, trying to attack him but beeing reppeled by a powerfull force explosion „Blaze go keep Alpha company !!” he replied. Arua rushed to Galamouth. Her speed same as the speed of her wolf familliar. She is standing between Galamouth n Aya "Don't touch her" she commanded to Galamouth,while he smirked „oh why whats wrong with me touching her ? „ he asked mockingly, and walked closer."because she's not your doll" Arua replied making Galamouth laught „and what is she if not a doll ...created for a very specific purpose my dear ?” Galamouth

asked smirking evilly. "i won't tell you" Arua pushed Galamouth away but he grabbed her head „if you don't tell me than I shall force it out from you...what is AYA's secret !!" he yelled and started pushing his dark power inside Arua's soul, establishing a spiritual connection, with the use of his darkness that started sucking out all of Arua's memories. Arua screaming. Arua take candies from her pocket. Without thinking she ate one candy. Arua kicking Galamouth. Don't want he sucking her memories and try to make galamuth eat the candy, because she ate it Galamouth sucked one inside himself feeling a terrible fire burning inside him and spliting blood, as Aura kicked him back ,he jumped away into the above „Curse that little wrench" He replied landing near me ,and walking back to Matrimona,while I was beeing helped by Alpha „no matter , my desire is close to completion...this event here will be finished shortly" Galamouth replied. „I know but we will get to you .. I can promise, you won't be able to hide using fake bodies anymore !" I replied and faced him."Hey person," Yasumi called to Blaze, "How can we release Lady Matrimona from that prison? Aren't you the "key" to everything?"

She said, as her face barely shows emotion. „You're talking about the system Goddess, why would we want to do that ? she's better off beeing locked in there ...well she is the Matrimona Del System... one of the Whores of Babylon she's my worst enemy.. how about we kill her" I replied , looking at Matrimona and noticing something odd,the woman was completelly different from the ones I meeted earlier,she had noble features like an angel,that was corrupted by the darkness of the system „she does cute thought" I replied and analised the females,features. She even looked desirable a rare treat ,for someone that personalises all of the greed and lust.The whores of Babylon were uggly but could use theire ocultic powers called Glamour, I my self a user of ocultism and demon faitfhull to the spiritual and God. Was of course immune, but this woman was really beautifull."That's because I am her servant, and I need to get her out of there." She looked a little annoyed at Blaze.

"You can't just say that you have to kill her just because she's your enemy.... if you do..." Her expression darkened."I'll hunt you down and take your life away, myself." I smiled at the girls taunts ,and walked over acompanied by silent Alpha and omega „why don't you kill Galamouth than, isn't he the one holding her captive...sorry but I don't know the whole details I just know that Ill have to something eventually,as to me beeing a key... I remember it beeing said 75 years ago, during the events that freed Galamouth at the time I was a part of the Trinity force,that tried to prevent this calamity,but it looks we failed.. thought it really did take 75 years for real to meet him again.. I guess they're certain developments that cannot be controlled throught time and place" I answered „Oh you're wrong Blaze !! times flies differently according to individual perspective, what appeared to be 75 years for you, was 666 thousands years for me... you see Blaze restarting my research in the physical world after my imprisoment in the spiritual took a lot of effort and research ...it wouldn't be possible in the span of a single century...yes it required carefull planing and analis, scrupulant implamantantion and modification ,restoration and even decoration, examination and confirmation....in you're case Blaze it was merelly necessary to allow you to rest, a 75 years of relaxiation , made you ready to fight this war....thats why even you shall be my toy in this game Blaze" Galamouth replied laughing madly enjoying his superiority over everyone of us...suddenly Misa started running getting out a knife chopper and trying to kill everything and everyone , started attacking me while I avoided as she smirked wildly„Damn it Misa wake up !!" I started yelling as she continued her insane attack.Galamouth smirked while Alpha tried to punch him, making him avoid the attack „ you must adore my dear Misa...corrupted like this ,she truely is magnificent" he replied in the oddest form of extasy, I was able to notice trying to avoid beeing cutted by Misa. This was truely a bizzare fight, with the rest of the group residing to beeing mere spectators. Partially because of the fatigue, but also from the fact that the whole situation was nothing more than a farse,Galamouth as mentioned before used merelly a false body to control his actions. Thus destroying this one wouldn't resolve the battle at all, it was one of these trying situation,that needed to be handled with.For the cassual observator, one not accustomed to the realities of the spiritual world the whole situation would strange and bizzare. But we must remember that the spiritual defiles material logic, the casual behavior in context of this battle was

common sense. After all these events for these that are well accustomed, with spirituality are just an farce. The God had already implemented safety measures to prevent, the situation spiraling out of control...therefore there wasn't any probability of it ever threatening God's creation, the only thing that was to be dealt with, was the distribution of the spiritual energy created from this farce. That was Yahweh's and other God's true purpose and obligation, the matter of dealing with Galamouth could be left to anyone, including me and other children, for in reality the whole situation was child's play. Amusing spectacle in which we all were to play our roles till the end. This is the true purpose of adventures, or special events. Life is a complex virtual reality game after all, governed by programs and artificial intelligence, whether we use this term...or the term spirits... or even if we refer to these as demons or angels...we get the same meaning. For everything carries the divine signature of the creator. In everything we can find the traces of the micro and macro cosmoses, that are around us. In ourselves we find the connections to the spiritual. Hence even by writing we create events that can happen in distant futures, and if we were capable of understanding that we may write our own wishes into reality. For the book of life is always open in front of our eyes, we just often do not understand the language in which it's written, as it's an very ancient one...thus all these events were also symbols and an attempts at writing different things into existence....I still continued avoiding Misa's stabbing, having it more harder as she increased in speed. Then suddenly she stepped back in the darkness....after a short while we could hear Misa chanting a spell and then rising from the flames a majestic spectacle begun, the orange flames combined with red ones, into a tremendous whirlpool formed the big fire bird called phoenix, the air started heating as it appeared squeeching terrible, while Mystica annoyed by this sudden turn of the events directed, her own shadow birds which squeeching felt victims to the fire bird...Misa made him burn everything, while I formed a silver defense barrier around us, as Galamouth who avoided Alpha's punches in a crazy dance like fight, smirked evilly. I quickly attacked the bird with a whirlpolic silver energy, that quickly engulfed the bird into a metallic transparent shape, creating a metal like statue, with a mirror like surface that started cracking from the heel as the shape exploded freeing the orange bird...the bird suddenly waved its wings creating a massive fire wave ...then it flew in the sky and from there it started sending huge, fire balls trying to hit us, while my shield was cracking from the head, Mystica quickly appeared above the fire bird, directing her hand, releasing a web of dark springs, that sprouted at the bird, billion of them formed out of a single string dividing into smaller branches, not losing its strength but increasing as it tied itself to the fire bird, surrounding it with Mystica's characteristic pink aura and trying to drain the bird's energy weakening it. The phoenix started to be angry burning Mystica's strings, as the fire spread rapidly Mystica herself was unable to avoid it and gotten engulfed in red flames, screaming while her material form was destroyed, while the bird made a fire pentagram and cloned itself twenty times, squeeching as the clones attacked and broken our shield, making us avoid being hit. Mystica's ashes fallen to the ground, as she abandoned her physical appearance in this plane and retreated to the shadows of Echelon, for a while searching for Galamouth's real location. "hey! We gotta get out here now! We'll just lose because of fatigue!" Yasumi shouted. "That is exactly what the enemy wants!" she continued as I jumped to her pushing to the ground avoiding the next attack of these birds. „you think I don't know that...but he's the one that controls it....besides were using different astral bodies now ...so the only fatigue he can inflict on us is a mental one...he tries to traumatize us, but both Yahweh and Alpha are working on breaking the seals in this dimensional trap...yes it's a trap, you're Matrimona isn't here, this woman in the sphere is just an empty shell...somehow Galamouth retrieved your dimensional path and redirected it into this enclosed reality...so don't worry” I replied covering Yasumi as the birds inflicted damage on me, feeling the pain of these attacks, and being angry at Galamouth. "This can really give us a trauma, because it's ticking me off." Yasumi replied pushing me off, while I shielded us both with a green sphere covering it with a redish whirlpolic energy. „I know it can, this is his plan he tries to break our mental composition ...but its real effects are comparable to a dream...don't worry we can wake up ...but if we do it now we won't know his location the seals Alpha and Yahweh are working on, carry this information...thought from your true location I believe you know better than us where his main body resides” I replied looking into

Yasumi's eyes. „anyway once were back there ...try to find us” I added, and sat down facing the girl. "That's tough." She left the shield and as she started to attack the grim-filled souls once again. She replied back "I usually see Galamouth in his little laboratory. Experimenting day in and night out." she told me ,while I dismantled the shield and looked at her „and what is he experimenting on ?...well I know his purpose already but what kinda method he plans to use this time I wonder” I replied back to Yasumi... Meanwhile the dark aura released evaporating into air made Misa wake up and remember that she is good ,confused she lost the control of the Phoenixess , almost beeing burned by one, having Yahweh not interfered to save her in time. Covering the girl in an invisible sphere that quickly was engulfed in fire from the bird,crashing into it deflecting the entire attack into the black blood,that now was awfully calm.

But in reality were drawing massive energy currents inside their molecules,absorbing the power Galamouth was lending them, and using it to manifest irregularities in our thoughts. I felt my mind going haywire , my thoughts betraying me with memories of my former defeats, my very soul was beeing corrupted by intense anger , by rage that was uncontrollable and imaginable, this was Galamouth's own hate that filled me,I looked with red eyes at the world. My very essence was losing to the darkness... that slowly contaminated my hearth, but there was a burst of light that protected my very inner being. Repelling the darkness from, making it leave my soul healing the wounds implanted to me by the material whores.

The power of God defeated the dark currents of energy , forcing it to leave my soul and the body I was currently using , much to Galamouth's dismay , he needed to retreat having lost this battle as the situation was greatly improving for us Suddenly out of the blue a dark haired man entered the stage,dressed in some kinda casual clothings,like a tourist walked calmly , and looked around dressed in a blue hawaiian shirt and weird trousers. "Hmm..." He said obviously lost in his thoughts, gazing on the situation from behind his , sun glasses.The guy was walking in the ruckus, not minding the events that happened around him. Ignoring the whole situation just as if he was walking through a train station ,or waiting for a taxi.Yasumi noticed this strange person that was walking around."Hey!" she called out to him, "what are you doing in here!? It's dangerous!! Get outta here!" she screamed beeing visibly annoyed, as I observed the whole situation ,wondering whether the new comer was our ally or Galamouth's survent. The man looked at her , not impressed while I walked over to Yasumi „ I am not afraid” he replied without an effort. just as if he was extremely boored by the whole situation.Without anyone noticed,Arua hiding behind trees. She is suffering. She cannot focus. She closed her eyes try to connect with Galamouth. Their connection fading little by little " my bond...vanished... But its good news or bad news... I don't have enough power to stand" she replied as the dimensional trees, started growing.These were the outposts to Galamouth's desires, the dark shadows of existence. Perhaps it were these tree's that sucked Arua's powers from her, as she didn't even notice when they appear, the silver trees that looked like a christmas trees.Shining and sending out multiple rays of colorful; lights as the dark energy was converted into the signals.. These signals were carrying Misa's dreams well she dreaming that. she is in the. wonderland ...but everything there is broken...and evil and she can resolve the problem with her. special magical knife. Misa opened her eyes,and while remaining in this state of trance, she started attacking the silver trees and everyone around her „not again ?” I asked as she came attacking at me. But suddenly Misa waked up from that nightmare. ..and apologised to everyone..but than again something strange happened immediately and she fallen under trance again... „ Galamouth is losing his authority over Misa” I replied to Yasumi as we both observed the whole situation,while I also eyed the new comer. Galamouth used a lighting flash to throw Alpha away from himself, turning around almost falling to the ground but standing up, he quickly rushed backwards turning back and observing our group,noticing the new comer as well,,It seems this dimension is falling, we have random people or thought forms walking into the scene AT LAST it is my time to leave the stage, Farewell you hopeless fools” He announced,turning into a showy figure and slowly dissolving into nothingness, as the dimension started shaking a bit. Arua looked at the trees "it is yggdrasil...?" she asked opening a gate to summon a spirit "come out...Oswald..." A spirit come out. Its a small tree that have old man face. He wear a black hood sleeve. "what it is,priestess?"

said Oswald. "it is yggdrasil?" Arua asked Oswald. „another random guy?" I asked suprised walking over to Arua, while the dimension started shaking."whats goinng on Yahweh !" I asked the Old philosopher „The dimension is falling it won't last long Blaze" He replied , while at the same time Arua was questioning her servant. Random energies were released from the forms they assumed for this dimension,making the black blood evaporate ,and the whirlpool that we were inside dissipate,the sphere containing Matrimona evaporated as well. As the real System Goddess was trapped somewhere else , Misa walked in circles confused by the events screaming angrily. I looked at the above noticing a blue glass like structrue revealing itself , as small cracks started appearing. Red energy fullled these cracks forcing them wider,the dimension was slowly crumbling. „that ain't good...were going to get send back soon" I replied looking at Yasumi, hoping this cute girl will find us , once we return to the original plane. This whole situation seemed like a dream,and indeed it was a very realistic dream. The random guy was wondering around,and observing the situation interested „what is going on?!" he asked,suprisind us , making me almost lose my balance „you gotta be kiddin me" I replied sighting "are you nuts...?!"Yasumi protested. "you just show up all of a sudden and just try to act cool and this is the reaction we get!?""Young lad you walked into an battle-field...can you please tell us you're name and the world you hail from ? Are you a newly departed ?" Yahweh replied walking over to us, looking at the new comer. The young man looked at her and replied „maybe I can help you"...."You're late. Real late." She sighed. While I continued gazing at the young man „if you wanna help us tell you're name first okey" I pointed at Yahweh and continued talking to the new comer „ Do you know who this man is ?" I asked waiting for the reply."you are talking to me?!" The man replied ,while I started to get angry. „No ! Im talking to you're mother !!" I replied annoyed. „calm down..calm down I believe he has his reasons to be here" Yahweh replied,trying to calm us down..„anyone tell me what is going on here?!" the man shouted out,very confused while Yahweh walked over to him „ My name is Yahweh Im the most highest priest in the Megacivilisation , Im the Acting God of the society,the represantor of his will in the material world. Im a ruller of both the Material and the Spiritual ,one of the most high ranked gods that surve,the one God and the Supreme ruller of the Eternal Megacivilisation...the girl you were talking to is Yasumi, the other two girls that are standing there are Arua and her sister Aya,the white haired boy who's facing you at the moment is called Blaze Maste ,that is a name he preffers to be used in refference to himself...and how about you lad ?" Yahweh explained and asked the man..„you want to know my name fine its Sasuke" I looked at him smirking. „Sasuke you say.. that reminds me of an manga character" I replied smiling „a very old one" I finished. Hoping that the guy won't tell me his name was Sasuke Uchicha, from Naruto manga. „Selzer.....Sasuke Selzer that's who I am" the man replied ,as we continued our inquiry. „Ok Sasuke Selzer , why are you here ?" I asked looking at him. "I don't know yet.....what I am doing here and why?!" he continued asking. „are you a departed spirit ?...I mean did you die just now" Yahweh asked looking at the man, while I sighted „ he really is a new comer, this guy died and got into this place...it means that this dimension is slowly deconstructing...but while he's here we cannot leave...damned Galamouth" I replied talking to Yasumi, a bit annoyed."hmmm anyways it looks like there is a war going on" the man replied as we continued staring at him „yes were in the middle of the Eternal War fighting the forces of Satan Dark Lord Galamouth" Yahweh replied, while we still wondered why this guy was here.Was it to stop us from leaving I wondered. Annoyed by the whole situation ,and this un-expected visitor , I looked at him and than asked a very important question. „where were you before you found youreself here Sasuke ?" I asked looking at him."Heavens" he replied making Yahweh laught. „oh I see now you're the messenger I was expecting..."Yahweh replied „From what celestial sphere you hail from, there are nine Celestial spheres of heavens these Celestial spheres are what you would describe as higer dimension, now we are in Echelion , this is the lowest spiritual realm,it is here that dreams are stored and every thought materializes and conceptionalises, Echelion is the Gate way and the sustaniser of the three perfect planes this is the Astral plane that connects to Heavens,Hell and the Material world... allowing entities from these planes to interact in an neutral zone ...thats why this place is called the Gate or the borderline of the worlds and God's research field....humans enter this world when

dreaming in order to keep them safe ,the spiritual border is like a closed world,while a human can experience heavens by having contents of the true heavens transformed into this zone,theire not permitted to enter them untill they pass unto the spiritual realm. As the true heavens would be to intense for them, the same goes for Angels ,who are to pure forms and need to stop by at Echelion to understand the concept of materialization,demons as well. Thought not all Angels or Demons are capable or willing to leave their respective planes,just like humans don't usually plan on leaving the material plane,this is the trinity protection that combines and sustains all the worlds. Echelion is God's frequency.....so from what sphere you hail from ?" Yahweh explained answering the question. „I don't know why but I can't clearly remember....." Sasuke replied while I smirked „ well why don't I tell you something interesting Heavens never look the same ,but it is an interesting place, we born from the material world can really become astonished by the marvels of the true heavens,the first thing you feel upon entering that plane is the intense feeling of warmth and love,you find yourself in the surroundings that express this like a colorful dream,depending on what you expect you might see bright colors,a field or anything you ever dreamed off....However true angels the ones living there don't exist as personalities or forms but merely a function,they're like written programs...in other worlds its the first time you're self conscious of you're self in a pseudo physical form,this is truly different than being a spirit isn't it. I visited heavens at times to get recharged but its not my thing I prefer the Echelion more and bringing out the spiritual qualities as forms I can interact, if I would describe the Heavens or Hell In the form Sasuke knows it ,its warmth of a hearth beat, Hell is cold its terrifying and scary...so take your time ok" I replied and looked at Yahweh. „basically to translate it to our level both Heavens and Hell are states of souls that's all I'm always connected to them in my soul ,its where my power and self confidence comes,the Heaven is the source of light while the Hell is the source of the darkness. The Experience of both Hell and Heaven depends on us, fear is the state of mind ...the same love these planes are as intense as our emotions or experience made them...but the interesting point is how the experience is like for a being that always existed there,the true spiritual angels or demons that are born in Heaven and Hell and than interacting in material world have no experience of personality that's why they wait for humans to call on them in their love and anger and pull them out absorbing into their personalities they learn and grow am I right Yahweh " I replied finishing my explanation. While Yahweh nodded „yes you're right that was a splendid explanation Blaze" Yahweh complemented me." I really don't know why you guys are fighting but I feel like helping you" Sasuke replied as his wings grown , while he looked at us ,continuing." I don't have time to talk.....tell me something to do.....my blood boils for a fight....." Sasuke replied and was preparing to fight „calm your self Celestial warrior try relaxing,the enemy has fled us ...my orders for you are to travel with this group and help them in their fight" Yahweh replied and looked at the young angel."so?! what should I do?!" Sasuke replied looking at Yahweh. „Protect and guard this group from harm" Yahweh replied while I bowed to the being. „Its an honor working with you" I replied bowing. Sasuke crossed arms and smiled „that's too easy" The young Angel replied while Yahweh smiled „don't get too proud of yourself, once you experience the material nothing is never the same,I believe the most hardest trial is starting for you now,you have been casted from a perfect world into a very complex one...soon you'll come to realize how hard this assignment truly is" Yahweh explained. While Sasuke innocently laughed „ Don't underestimate others planes this crossroad is just the beginning you are to follow us into the material plane , that's where the real difficulties start" I replied pointing it out,while Yahweh looked at us and suddenly hit the floor with his walking stick, as it created a vibration from which,red flames started forming and engulfing the floor,making it grow and us feel the warm sensation it made. „its time to leave now are you ready Sasuke ?" I asked looking at the others „Yasumi remember to find us, Sasuke your first assignment will be to teleport Yasumi to our location" I replied and continued observing the flames as they grew in size. The Decaying blood was destroyed by high temperature boiling terrible,producing dark smoke that filled the area, while we ourselves started choking a bit as the smoke started feeling hot. The temperature making me sweet and starting to be uncomfortable as the pressure increased, while the brightness of the flames blinded me terribly. The winds that were engulfed by these flames started making terrible noises ,

while the flames themselves quickly surrounded us and engulfed burning our bodies, making me try to resist it and scream as I looked at the bodies and everybody engulfed in flames, creating an intense pressure like a coat. „calm down you're going home” Alpha's voice was heard in my mind as I continued observing the situation, as the image of flames was distorted and slowly faded away while the pain reached its highest limits and suddenly disappeared. I opened my eyes hearing the sounds of water and looked around, noticing that I sat on that fountain in Aura's room. Noticing how the chaotic structure changed and seeing how Aya smiled back to me. I was back in her room, in that strange sky scraper. „were back” I replied and slowly stood up walking to the two girls. Sighting and breathing calmly I enjoyed each step I made. I was back home, in the material world I belonged too. Despite me not liking it, this was the world I always belonged too, the floor at Galamouth's temple continued to shine, transporting magical energies into its surface. I knew finally what was Galamouth's madning ambition...the destruction of the border and corruption of the God's creation, we needed to move out fast.

Chapter 5 „The Shrines of oblivion ”

„calm down you're going home” I heard Alpha's divine and melodic voice in my ears, her voice like soothing tune of a well refined flute echoed in everybody's minds, trying to calm our senses in these times of agony. Galamouth's well designed trap required immense suffering or dark energy to sustain itself, drawing from our selves. In order to become free from this pitfall all energies needed to be released in a cataclysmic event. Galamouth knew that and made sure, the walls of that dimension were unbreakable, but Yahweh knew that while this pain couldn't be avoided, its intensity shorted the event to minimum, having us burned with God's full force, limited the time to a fraction of a second and despite the fact the pain was unbearable. Its effects would be the same as of a very bad nightmare, and suddenly in a short while I opened my eyes hearing the sounds of water and looked around...noticing that I sat on that fountain in Aura's room. Noticing how the chaotic structure changed and seeing how Aya smiled back to me. I was back in her room, in that strange sky scraper. „were back” I replied and slowly stood up walking to the two girls. Sighting and breathing calmly I enjoyed each step I made. I was back home, in the material world I belonged too. Despite me not liking it, this was the world I always belonged too, the floor at Galamouth's temple continued to shine, transporting magical energies into its surface. The air was cold, and breathing was a bit unpleasant... I felt my body moving and enjoyed these sensation that proved to me that I died and was reborn, like the legendary phoenix that is reborn from its ashes, so were we all. In half way between me and Arua a light form started manifesting, taking on a more humanoid shape, materialising into a material form of that dark haired man we met earlier it was Sasuke that came through the borders. As the young man was materialising a blue lighting came out from his hand, and turned into a sphere a blue hole, through which Yasumi fell out joining the main group as I smiled meeting the man, that materialized „I am so ready for this!!” He replied smiling with confidence, as he was finishing materializing. While I walked towards Yasumi „are you all right ?” The blue sphere disappeared as soon as the girl was thrown out, through it. Arua looked confused "he burn my dimension...oh my...my dimension become so messy. Come out Oswald! I need you as soon as possible" Arua call Oswald without summon he from a portal because all of her spirits live in her dimension. Oswald come in the room "yes, priestess. I waiting your command"....I observed the situation and walked back to the fountain and sitting on it again „It wasn't you're

dimension but Galamouth's and by the way I think I know what Galamouth is trying to do now" I replied and looked at the girl, wondering whether I managed to her curious, I wanted her to be curious to be able to brag about what I discovered. Arua looked at me "what?" ... „want me to tell you ? well ok ,Galamouth wants to destroy the Echelion, which is the borderline of the worlds and the intermediary between them. Echelion is God's frequency the original astral plane ,the other planes are created inside the Echelion using its fractions you might say that Echelion is Heavens,Hell and Material combined into one....each of these three use Echelion as its base....lets use our visualisation, has anybody of you used a computer network, or had cable television ? Well the single cable carries a single energy signal which is a combination of multiple signals combined into one signal,now our minds work as a router or decoder and choose which signals we receive ...and basically limit our perceptions depending on our preference and the fragment of reality we perceive ,there are three states of reality as we perceive them and these are the three planes..Heavens,Hell and the Material. Heavens is a reality of joy ,Hell is reality of sorrow and Material is the mixture of these two , the Three of them combined form the borderline which is Echelion...however if we were to separate or confuse the streaming of data or information and create a chaotic dispersion of information, we would devastate these three worlds and cause a distortion in the creation...than everything would be disturbed and God would have to restart his creationI doubt its still possible thought. I do actually think God is the smartest one and Galamouth attempts are just ridiculous but he can still cause a lot of damage in lives of billions entities" I answered and looked at Arua smiling "what do you mean?" Arua asked surprised „Well Im trying to explain our situation the best I can...Galamouth wants to destroy the world and while this ain't possible, in the aftermath of his ambition billion of galaxies might be destroyed, these might be random planets or huge parts of this metropolis that are literally blown up into the skies,in an huge drain of energies to offset the damage the mad lord will cause, thats why we need to stop him.." I replied looking at Arua."i know that. But its my dimension not his dimension. I made it without his permission. Then tell me why u think if its his dimension?" Arua replied , while I looked at her serious „you really dense haven't you felt his power in the dimension..maybe he used your design but changed the dimension to sooth his needs...hmm thinking about it thats less time consuming than making a brand new one, he used your dimension to his needs altering it" I explained looking at her."you shouldn't be surprised you know ,he is a dark Lord after all...do you really thought he wouldn't notice you creating a dimension ?" I replied finishing replying to Arua's question."so,you mean...he use my dimension? Damn! Its my home! How can he lay a hand in my home!" said Arua angry while I smirked „he wants to destroy entire existence , do you think he would leave your home alone ? you're just his pawns thats all" I replied and noticed that Arua was getting seriously mad about this."pawn!what the hell! I must make new dimension!" Arua replied making me smile as I walked towards her „listen we need to defeat him or there won't be new dimensions" I answered her and continued gazing straightly into her eyes."i dont have clue to defeat him. I must collect soul to make new spirits but its have time" Arua answered me while I took note of that and sitted calmly „Fine we can start by that...we also need to figure out how to get to Galamouth...he won't make it easier for us now will he" I replied looking at the location we found ourselves into,this complex structure build inside a remnant of an futuristic enormous ,sky scraper like complex. It was the size of atleast twelve planets and God knew only what surprises were stored for us inside ,this gigantic maze. "ok. Then i'll go to some forest now" Arua replied making me wonder what did she mean by it „forest what forest ? this place has a forest?" I asked surprised, wondering what kinda forest was she talking about.It wasn't un-common for these kinda structures to house green houses in them,after all they needed these kinda places to feed all their workers that worked for their corporational structures, now however this place was abandoned. I didn't know what could cause that kinda devastation,though I knew it could have been greed."i have. I cannot live without forest" Arua replied smiling „than can you lead to it?" I asked hoping that we might find some clues as to Galamouth's whereabouts. Arua was his subordinate I was hoping she would lead us straight to him, but I knew that the journey itself would be very difficult,we were in a middle of a very difficult situation."sure. But be careful" she smiled mysteriously,while we got

ready to move out to that forest of hers. Arua lead us towards a dark and un-believable beautiful forest, that was actually located next to Arua's room just around the corner as we walked by the fountain, and into a dark hallway, made of a golden and silver material. It took us few steps and there it was a huge forest, located inside an enormous green house, its magnificence would be hard to describe ...but I will still attempt that, many trees were gathered by this once proud commercial community, all coming from distant places and exotic planets some I visited others I knew nothing about "welcome to wonderland. You can find some unbelievable creature in here. Feel free to come in. But be careful. They are watching you" Arua advised us as we were walking more deeper into this unknown territory. I could see eyes watching us from the bushes, and made sure that all of our members didn't lose themselves. "keep silent Aya. You can wake up the fairies. And watch your step. Don't step on them ok? Oh yeah. This is fairy territory. Which territory you all want to visit?" Arua asked, finishing reprimending her little sister, while I noticed the brown ground and tried walking carefully, observing how some apes moved through branches, following Aya and obviously trying to play with her, teasing the young girl. The brown apes were making happy noises inviting the little girl to play with them. „which place did Galamouth visit the most?" I asked Arua. Hoping he would leave some clues as to his whereabouts. Meanwhile Yasumi has been quiet for the whole time, walking slowly, and looked scared, I walked back to her and started questioning what was worrying this red kimono wearing girl „hey don't you get lost now ok?" I told her hoping she would start moving faster. But she started behaving weirdly first she backed away when she realized I was talking to her. She looked scared, and uncertain. As if she was a completely different person, this of course worried me „what's wrong Yasumi?" I asked her, surprised by the girl's sudden behavior. „W-who are you and where am I..."? she hesitantly replied, looking scared and confused, her eyes looked bothered, as if she had no memory of who we are. I stopped a while and looked at her then my eyes shine red and I used my powers to gaze into her thoughts, making my usual demonic face to distract her and compel her to gaze into my eyes, by means of mind control...I released her when my eyes returned to normal „that was to be expected she is the servant of the goddess that rules over the system ...her memories are sealed, listen to me closely Yasumi, you must follow us or you die, got that?" I replied looking at the girl, a bit disquieted by the fact the girl was useless to me, but then again it was to be expected. I should expect that kind of tactic from the whores of the system, I observed the strange looking trees as we past them and noticed colorful stars above us, these were lamps that were imbedded in the ceiling, billion kilometers above us. This structure was large, we felt as if we were walking inside a jungle on the planet, this ecological research center was used to grow vegetables and raise animals that were used in many things. But natural food was mostly reserved for the elites, despite the fact that the jungle could provide it for the entire population of this commercial conglomerate, but instead all of the resources were used to satisfy the greed of the system whores, who ruled over this community as elites and the commercial establishment. The greedy whores used the workers as slaves, and by product of their wealth for them, these workers were merely something to be used or even sold if the price was right. This was just one of these things that made me mad. "Die....!? W-where am I!? Tell me!" Yasumi asked while her eyes were tearful. Looking at her as she was about to cry made me sigh and I tried to appear more friendly. „well where were you before you found yourself in this scary place?...and don't worry we shall protect you, we are here to protect you..." I answered and smiled gently hoping that with that the girl will feel a bit more secure. "Get me back home!" Yasumi cried out as her tears were already flowing. "Please! This is just supposed to be a dream! Just like I always get! You were part of that nightmare I had!" She was talking about the war in the spiritual realm. I hugged her tightly and patted her hair „I'm sorry but this is real... it's not just a nightmare," I patted her hair warmly "Yasumi if you won't help us, this nightmare will spread to others in your life, many people will die sacrificed because of that fools hatred" I looked at her and smiled „if you're too afraid jump on my back I'll carry ...you will be safe I promise" I smiled while the dark shadows descended into the ground forming, a well known to me personage of a little girl dressed in a white Victorian dress „she'll be safe you can promise that?...my my how fragile these flesh based organisms are" Mystica expressed giggling and laughing „how weak very weak like a rotting doll"

she continued singing, Yasumi just looked up to me, and she relaxed a little.

"I know all of you. I've seen you in my dreams.", Mystica rushed to her dancing around in insane dance obviously enjoying the attention „rotting corpse...rotting corpse...rotting corpse you die here” Singed joyously trying to scare Yasumi away as I pushed her around „Go bother someone else ! she won't die Mystica” I replied as Mystica rushed forward singing madly. „don't mind her she's just a demon first time in physical manifestation...but why did she manifest as a little girl...oh I see it was because of that fight back than....Sasuke you're an angel keep her at bay ok...but don't harm ..Mystica is our ally, besides since she failed her job, I doubt she will be able to return back there...Ill try to work on her, she might be born out of darkness but she's still a being and God's creation ill just change her design and who knows” I looked at Mystica smiling, not knowing but having a hunch that she might be someone very close to me some day. „she might be billion of years old as spiritual entity but she's still a kid a child that lived her life in a very terrible prison...because of Galamouth's escaped she too recieved a chance to evolve” I replied smiling and waiting for Yasumi to jump back on me. I continued observing Mystica while she was at her antics and I realized the reason why she choosed this form to manifest „I remember that ...that's Ania a girl who's memory casted a shadow in my hearth...a very long time ago ...of course the darkness that binded Galamouth this intelligent force manifested in the form of my most repressed memory....man this is so riddiculous how can a person who never done anything wrong to me hurt me so badly ? what's the deal with thisall I remember that this Ania girl never made fun of me, she was a brilliant student...and an energetic personality a simple minded girl ..nothing special and yet my dark obsessions over her always cause me trauma ...tsch well it's my fault for being a coward ,now that's pitying my self...well atleast Galamouth had the guts to tell Emilia what he felt to her despite being laughed at ..Im just a weak pathetic fool and this is the exact reason I should just simply leave her existence alone, it's wrong to destroy people's happiness over an obsession...but I had to carry her image in my hearth even though I didn't have the right too ,damn it” I screamed out angered at my own weakness in trying to forget her, why was this girl so special ...what made me to desire her , yet still not loving her. This strange adoration and finding someone else superior to me ...was I simply jelouse of her being so easy going. If so was I the cause of her suffering , that day when she cried on the stairs ...my silence in witnessing and my refusal in paying back for her kindness. Maybe that was it, maybe I just wanted to be there for her and say, don't worry everything will be fine there's no need to cry over it. But I couldn't I didn't know what to do and how to act in that moment of my youth, paralyzed by emotions, not fear ,not joy. Unknown to me, why did I care over her sadness when it wasn't my sadness, why did I get moved by Ania's tears ...when these weren't my tears. It's not like I was anyone important to her, would my words heal her soul...not possessing any powers limited to a fragile human existence. Why couldn't I accept my own limitations and just stay put, I stayed put that was logical but I never accepted that limitation. Yet I stayed put not accepting thinking it was wrong, but what could I do being weak...what could I offer having nothing. Humans desire wealth, extroverts are like that I had nothing of that sorts... I wouldn't take her to a movie or anywhere else, in fact I didn't even like that class I hated the people and the society I used to live in as a human...and yet she was special. Different and yet not different and I couldn't change that...ah it would be better if she just mocked me back than hurting like the others did , but she did not do such things. She choosed to be my saviour ,and yet she never got her gratitude, and that made her my obsession that lead me to my own dark hearth.

"Demon? Angel...? Spiritual Realm...? Galamouth...?" Yasumi asked these questions waking me up from my thoughts „well it's a bit complicated you'll understand everything in time” I replied smiling back. Her eyes darkened all of a sudden. And she said "L-lady.... Matrimona...?" She covered her mouth with surprise. "W-what did I just say? I-I'm getting so confused.... An image of a woman was there.... And then was gone." Yasumi screamed out while I waited until, she jumped on my back. Arua stared at Yasumi "you have a nice soul on your body...can i have it" Arua smiled and her eyes glowed. She came near to Yasumi "i want your soul" she smiled evilly. "sis!" Aya shouting and kicking Arua until she fall. Aya continue kicking Arua "Go out from my sis body,evil!monster! go!" I laughed enjoying the situation, meanwhile Mystica was running around."ouch!ouch! Aya!

Why u kick me?" Arua shouted to Aya. Aya grinned "hehehe" she then quickly hugged Arua very happy that she she draw off the monster from her. I continued looking at the girls and smiled back at Yasumi „you see there's no reason to be affraid when beeing with us” I replied observing the beautiful flora of this dark forest. There was a small wind that rushed through the tree's moving the branches as the colorful leaves fallen to the ground ,we walked through a brown classical wooden bridge that was hung over a small artificial creek,in which blue transparent water was flowing. Coming out from an unknown source making soothing sounds,it was a wild and dark paradise."oh yeah Blaze,i don't know which place he always come. But i think he in that territory. Illusion territory" Arua replied and looked at me ,meanwhile Misa got worried and walked over to me grabbing my head "please stop fighting" Misa said very worried and looking into the distance ,she didn't even remember the time she was controlled by Galamouth."What's that...?" Yasumi asked. Joining the conversation starting to relax a little, even though she "didn't know" these people ,that suddenly kidnapped her literary taking out of her reality.She only remembered as a blue sphere appeared and engulfed her suddenly,making her confused as she materialized into a completely unfamiliar territory. She continued her conversation relaxing a bit as Arua replied "illusion territory. I made some territories in this forest" Arua answered Yasumi questions as we made our way through the bridge and into the forest on the other side,birds welcomed our party flowing down from the tree's , making noises signaling our advance into the unknown."n-no that's not what I meant." Yasumi stuttered, not sure how to explain her question."I mean.... What are territories...?" Yasumi was probably trying to figure out the location we were in, but she didn't even know the date.All I knew was that she could be from any given moment in world's history. Thus it wasn't as that easy for her to return home,the world we were in now ,was the distant future. Where the material combined with the spiritual creating an entire new,universe spawning civilisation the New Zion or Megacivilisation. The golden city of God, where God could finally co-exist with its people. This was the world we were in now.Meanwhile Yasumi's own home was distant years ago,she would however return to her land once our journey end."actually I combine many forest and made it become one. Well if you remember we already pass the fairy territory. Its means you can find fairies in there. Umm maybe its the right answer for your question" Arua replied smiling, she was the designer of this structure,the one that remade the forest. To suit Galamouth's madning ambition and for the sake of his entertainment."combine forests...?"Yasumi asked. "How do you do that...?" she continued with her questions hoping she would get these answers, the reason for these questions was however unknown to me and I mostly ignored it anyways observing the tree's. "take it from the real world and combine it with magic" Arua replied to her question as a very beautiful and huge yellow parrot flew over us. It looked gigantic in the size of a vulture, and I was a bit afraid that it could attack us."There's such thing as magic!?"Yasumi looked surprised.Arua looked confused "yeah..." she replied a bit hesitantly. "What's your name?"Yasumi asked. While the bird flew away. Not noticing us. Yellow feathers fallen to the ground making a wonderful scene. "Arua. You can call me Arua" Arua replied smiling „thats a hell of a bird” I replied commenting about the parrot and playing with the yellow feather I picked up while it fallen down,noticing how soft it was. Fascinated by the strange colorful patterns on the feathers, I was literary mesmerized. "I told you before,you can find unbelievable creature in this forest" Arua smiling. I smiled back „wow” I expressed. That was the only thing I could expressed."That parrot was big! The biggest I've ever seen!"Yasumi smiled."But oh... What time is it...?" she asked the question. Sasuke looked around in amazement while Yasumi took notice of the angel."who is he?"She asked, pointing at Selzer. While Mystica walked back, looking at Sasuke. Noticing him finally and analysing his spiritual powers „a weak angel” Mystica replied ,looking annoyed. Mystica wasn't pleased by the fact we had a true angel accompany us,the opposing forces brought together into a single team. Of course the whole situation only frustrated our little Yasumi"You guys aren't answering my questions at all...!"She sighed. „because we don't care about you baka” Mystica replied trying her best to frustrate Yasumi more. While Sasuke moved forward , scaring Mystica off as she went few steps ahead,avoiding the angel finding his presence unbearable for herself. Sasuke smiled towards Yasumi as he replied to her question. „well I will say I am an Angel known as Sasuke Selzer Nice to meet to” Sasuke

replied happily, smiling very innocently as Mystica was making funny faces at him, showing her tongue and visually announcing that she didn't like him. Which made the situation all the more hilarious in reality. "Have we met before...? You're very familiar." Yasumi said asking. While the man glanced back at her and replied „maybe Yasumi” Sasuke replied smiling at Yasumi who of course found it surprising, that her name was already known to that male. „H-how did you know my name...!?” She asked, surprised. Shocked by this sudden revelation, and confused not remembering that she met him during that fight in the spiritual realm. Now Yasumi was just a normal girl that couldn't know less, about this whole crazy situation. „maybe because I am an Angel” Sasuke replied, spiking the girl's curiosity. Making her think the guy was crazy, despite the fact she witnessed what me and Mystica, as well as Arua and the rest are capable of. But Sasuke wasn't afraid of showing off, after all he was among friends. "p-prove it!" Yasumi protested, and also trying to dare the angel into proving his words. Sasuke took off his hawaiian shirt, showing off his light brown body and his well proportioned chest, suddenly his shoulders moved, creating a lump of flesh that grew, popping and revealing tiny white wings with majestically white feathers, growing on the young's angel's back, taking their place and waving proudly as they became huge in a matter of few seconds „oh cry my a river is that the best you're kind can do!!” Mystica shouted and walked near me, keeping a safe distance from the heavenly being. Sasuke picked up his shirt and walked towards a shocked now Yasumi. She jumped back in surprise. "Y-you gotta be kidding me!" she complemented the spectacle, while still shocked. suddenly a yellow angel Halo appeared over Sasuke's head „guess not.....my dear” Sasuke replied commenting, while Mystica turned towards me commenting „I think I'm going to puke now” she admitted and grabbed my arms, looking straightly into my eyes „Blaze make him go away please...he'll ruin anything” she cried out, grabbing me and pulling me down childishly „oh really wasn't I unnecessary last time” I replied laughing and patted Mystica's hair. Meanwhile Arua looked at Sasuke with admiration "oh my...I jealous...I want born as an angel" Arua replied looking at the angel so enviously, while Mystica looked at her angrily. "I think you're pretty cool to create a forest!" Yasumi replied smiling at Arua. Mystica looked annoyed and of course decided to add her own, two cents into the conversation „you know...there's really nothing too amazing about a field full of trees, they grow everywhere don't they?” She asked commenting, not knowing how reality on this side worked. Making me sigh „you know...these trees don't grow everywhere, especially not in space, it really does take a lot of effort to gather the seeds and create an appropriate environment in an artificial one, this ain't a planet but a metropolis like complex in space...Everything around us was made and is controlled by complex spells and science it's an astonishing feat of molecular, engineering” I answered explaining our situation a bit. Sasuke smiled at my words, while Yasumi looked confused again "Um.... Hey... How did I get here...?" Yasumi asked, visibly confused. Arua on the other hand was bothered by something else "hmm...maybe...but how can I live peacefully if Galamouth never let me go and lay his hand on my precious things??" Arua looks at Yasumi "you always with us" answering her question, as her words made me think about this whole situation a bit. While she continued asking. "Always....? B-but I don't understand! I'm just an average person...!" her eyes shown surprise, confused more and more about this uncommon situation. Arua smiled "why u surprise, Yasumi?" she asked teasing Yasumi, enjoying the girl's confusion, sharing this trait with her master. "I don't know you guys...! I haven't met you before!" Yasumi replied while really not remembering anything about the spiritual realm, about that crazy battle in Echelon and about being Matrimona's servant, the girl was in denial. "I know. You didn't remember. I know. So it's okay. We're not bad guys" Arua comforted Yasumi creating a bond of friendship with her „Speak for yourself I'm evil and I'll you all!!” Mystica shouted growling childishly, trying to scare us and demonstrate her terrible powers but instead making us laugh. "I'm not scared anymore. I feel calm with you guys around...!" Yasumi answered laughing from Mystica's attempts at frightening her. While Mystica gotten a bit serious as we walked near a field. "yeah...good..." Arua smiled as she led us through a forest pathway, a typical forest road that usually divided the forest into two or more smaller ones. "Were we on a building a while ago..?" Yasumi asked surprised how natural this place, indeed when walking in this forest one could think we traveled outside, while in reality it was a clever designed

illusion, created by complex machinery that imitated the outdoor environment, one could feel the smell of fresh mushrooms and berries growing on the bushes, just as if we were walking in a real forest on a planet. The only thing that was off and reminded us of the fact we were inside a gigantic structure was the odd, silver-golden-dark sky that didn't have a single cloud moving on them, yet the environment was spectacular as we neared to an stone altar, and an ancientlike temple ruins, constructed by well designed greek pillars. „Is this Galamouth's magical center which he used to conduct his occultic experiments?" I asked looking at Arua.

"Too bad... I can't see the sky..." Yasumi complained making Mystica curious as she never saw one also „whats a sky?" she asked Yasumi, hoping to get an answer as she continued teasing the angel. "You don't know the sky...? But weren't we outside just a moment ago....?" Yasumi asked, shocked to hear the question. "The sky is where the sun, stars, and the moon show. You can also see the birds soaring on it, as if they were born there." Yasumi explained, while Mystica looked at her smirking „What are you talking about fleshling what is a sun and what is born mean?" Mystica asked giggling, smirking as her eyes shine in red „What nonsense are you spouting about...the birds born from the sun? my birds are from my own will, they are a part of me and I am a part of them...there is no sky, no sun no born in that place" Mystica replied. Yasumi happily told Mystica what it was. As the demon girl looked at her, not knowing of these things. Mystica was born as a spirit in the place that was full of darkness, without any emotions, designed to be a single function that locked Galamouth down. Mystica was just one of these candle like flames, that were blown out by Dantalion's prayer 75 years ago. At that time she had no visible form instead being like an algorithm that's only function was to contain Lord's Galamouth spirit, in the spiritual prison of his own design. That was Mystica and she remembered that pain brought by Dantalion opening the gates to Echelion that imprisoned the mad lord. Because of this suffering and her own spiritual programming, Mystica's sole purpose was to get revenge on the mad lord. Of course that made her combine with the mad lord's own darkness, first taking the form of the shadow birds he used in his attacks..the ragnarok birds, before taking Ania's form that was inscribed in the shadows of my own soul. Naturally this was the reason for her hostile and awkward behavior. "Oh...? Then one day I'll show it to you!" Yasumi laughed innocently. Smiling to her as Mystica wanted to appear fearsome and hostile „don't be too proud of yourself fleshling!" Mystica shouted, wanting to prove her power to her. Sasuke continued observing them silently, he being in the same position as Mystica, perhaps understanding her the best. Yasumi noticed that Sasuke was looking at them.

"Is there something you were going to say?" she asked the Angel, while I looked at them smiling and still waited for Arua to give me that answer. While the situation continued. „nothing nothing at all" Sasuke replied blushing a bit „Oh isn't Sasuke a cutie now...but he's still a guy" I commented remembering that there wouldn't be anything happening of that kind and then started thinking about something, feeling that I forgot something important. "And you miss Mystica...? That's your name, right?" Yasumi suddenly thought. While Mystica nodded and smirked „Yes this is the name of this form I am Mystica" She replied and looked at Yasumi, wondering why she asked her such a trivial question.

"I'm not being full of myself. I just wanted to share you the things that I know and experience." Yasumi said thoughtfully. "I'm curious about all of you as well. Because you're all familiar yet, a stranger to me. Have we met in another life...? Maybe...?" Yasumi asked this question, while I looked at her and nodded „yes we did" I admitted. Mystica looked at her and straightly into her eyes „give me that experience human" She replied pleading with Yasumi. "w-wha!? Hey! I was just kidding with the 'other life' thing!!" Yasumi screamed at me, laughing. Then she looked at Mystica. "Then come with me later, Miss Mystica!" She smiled. As I was looking at the magical symbols that were embedded in the ground, and ancient scriptures inscribed on the rocks. Especially one drawn my attention the symbol of a walking girl, I remembered I knew it from somewhere? There was a little girl I met once, after she died in the spiritual realm. This was back when I was a human, and this strange drawing reminded me of her. This little girl was also named Emilia, or atleast I identified her as such. The child died in mysterious circumstances. But I'll leave that for another story, this drawing might have been done by her at some point in time, prior to our arrival in

this building. I knew however that this Emilia was guarded by Fritz Lang or atleast someone I identified as him, as I could only hear german. Actually I metted her in that realm but as I told you its a story for a different time. I only written about her, to show that she's also someone I remembered and that she wasn't forgotten. Perhaps she made this drawing on that rock to leave me a sign. That she was doing fine. In whatever form or as whom she was reborn too. There were many inscriptions and I started wondering whether this was a cementary, we were standing on „what is this place Arua?“ I asked Arua, a bit troubled. By my recent finding. "by the way. Blaze are you sure to come in illusion territory? Once you came to that territory you will find yourself have illusion attack you. You will have dream. Bad or good but you cannot judge me if you cannot come out from that illusion. " Arua warned me as I sitted near the rocks „Im not affraid...IM always ready to test my self...no matter how long the trials take" I admitted speaking confidently. "ok then. But I'm not sure with everyone. I'm okay with illusion because I can manipulate it" Arua explained while I looked back at her standing from kneeling near the stones. „I shouldn't have troubles with it as well traveling throught weird places and Echelion is everyday for me, I already gotten used to it, as I said time isn't important even if the Illusion lasted billion of years the experience can only make me stronger" I admitted, not knowing what I would get my self into „just what am I looking for once Im there?“ I replied back finishing my response. „but tell me about this place?" I asked pointing at the stones that were formed in the circle, twelve of them all grey with different inscriptions on them, and a white oltar with an golden pentagram in the center of it, the second circle was formed from the white columns, and we stood inside this temple in the center of the oltar circle made of these stones. Arua replied answering my question. "you will sleep and dreaming. Your nightmare. Your dream when child. Its like game. Once you dreaming you must finish your dream as soon as possible. If you choose wrong path. For the eternity you cannot come out from that dream" she replied. Making me think whether it really was safe to undergo such a trial, thought I was at such places and the worst ones took entire billenia's to get out, not that I didn't enjoy my self. The worst part of the illusion part is that if it the trapping was to long I would forget the fact it was an illusion, the last time it happened was 186 thousands years ago, during my involvment with the Elfic wars on Taraione. A distant fantasy land in a galaxy far away. At that time I was trapped in an illusion for twelve thousand years, so while there's no such thing as eternal imprisonment, getting out might take a long time. Not that I regretted the fact I spent some time there, it allowed me to perfect many techniques and the reality is all an illusion anyways. "So... This is some kind of... trap..." Yasumi asked, worried. „yea basically thats right a trap we co-create ourselves with the captors, an illusion creates a perfect dreaming paradise that can last for as long time we want it too...but than again our entire reality is just an illusion anyways" I admitted explaining. "yeah, i think its the best place where Galamouth hiding. Aya can stay here or go back to our room?" Arua asked Aya. "here! here!" Arua smiling at Aya "i'll come in first. I'll check he is here or not. If not i'll come out immediately" Arua answered, while I touched her arm. „Just be carefull, if he's not there than we will look for him somewhere else, I know he's in this structure" I admitted. "A-am I supposed to go in there...!?" Yasumi voice had a hint of panick. „were all going?...well atleast I won't be alone" I expressed my self. "don't worry Blaze if something happened to me Aya will inform you. And please take care of Aya. I afraid if Galamouth bring his children too. I hope Dietrich come here. Oh yeah Yasumi. You stay with others in here. I'll go now" Arua replied as she started prepairing. Chanting an ancient spell „hey before you go can you answer my question about the place were in now...and who's Dietrich anyways?" I asked hoping to get my answers. "we will stay for now..." Yasumi asked and then looked at Arua "Please be careful inside!!"

She expressed. While we all observed her magical spell chanting, as yellow and green lights started shining on her body combing. "its my dimension. Dietrich is my rival. I want kill him so badly. And i really missed him. Bye" Arua answere my question not telling me anything about the temple, as she suddenly became engulfed in blue light that attracted red lightings, from the stones and green lightings from the pillars, Arua's body started turning slowly increasing in speed, very dynamically as the symbols appeared on the oltar in the middle of this ancient like temple, Arua's body was turning around faster and faster, as the aura that engulfed Arua's body switched colors to

red. Making it hard to recognize her in this speed as she suddenly disappeared with a flash of a white light, as everything returned to normal, the green and red lightings disappearing as well. „so she evaded my question and runned away...so now the only thing that remains is to wait” I replied. Observing the grass I decided to sit down on it smiling, remembering the last time I could rest like that. „hey wanna join me, how about we have a pic nic now ?” I asked. Yasumi gently touched her hair, correcting them while facing me worried "I wonder if she's okay..." Yasumi replied sitting down beside me, looking worried. While I opened my grey armbag which I always carried on my arms, and took out some bread smiling and giving it to all the gathered. „will know once she comes back” I replied handing the brown bread to Yasumi, Sasuke, Mystica, Aya and Misa. Finally noticing and remembering whom I forgot, not counting Alpha and Omega who herself choosed to not manifest for a while, the only other person that was gone was Dawn „hey what happened to Dawn ?” I wondered asking and looking at both Aya and Misa. Remembering that Yasumi didn't know whom I was talking about. "Who is she...?"

Yasumi asked out of curiosity. While I looked around and started wondering what happened to her. Did she leave during our spiritual fights, they didn't consume time in the material world. So my only guess was that she left or was taken away on Galamouth's orders. This strange girl's purpose could be the key element in our situation I thought before answering Yasumi „she is our friend ...I'll ask Arua about her whereabouts, maybe Galamouth called her back and is keeping her somewhere in all of this confusion we didn't even notice her disappearance” I replied, wondering whether Dawn was teleported to Galamouth, taken away by someone or merely run away somewhere. The structure was very mysterious and there were more advanced forces working on the scenes than we even imagined.

"Oh, is that so...?" Yasumi said. Biting on the bread. While I sighted „you don't have a lot of conviction...but I'm telling the truth” I admitted. Looking at the girl and handing her some cheese, yawning and trying to relax. Yasumi just kept eating the bread. "Well I guess you're right about that. I don't really have much confidence in myself." She said thoughtfully. Making me think about her words I analysed this girl, she wore a red kimono. Her breasts had a good size, no bra's, no underwear. Amusingly she wore only classically designed kimono, dark long hair and beautiful dark eyes were also her attributes. The kimono itself was tied up by a yellow rope around her waist and on her back, a katana like sword. „hey why don't we exchange information” I proposed. "Information...? Sure but about what...?" Yasumi asked. While I smiled „about our lives...and why you thrown away your underwear” I asked smirking. Enjoying the fact that the girl was naked under the kimono, or atleast that's what I thought at that moment. "w-what...!?" Yasumi blushed with embarrassment. "I-it's part of my family tradition...!" she replied red. While I backed off from the girl remembering there were witnesses around, as the other girls laughed. „ok tell me about your life family it's better if we know everything about ourselves” I looked around noticing that Sasuke and Mystica weren't around while waiting for Yasumi's answer. "well... How do I say this... My family is conservative and protects the tradition of my clan. We are good with blades and music.... um.... What else...?" Her eyes deep in thought. She continued thinking in silence interrupted by my response „why don't you tell me everything about your former life or do you want me to start first ?” I responded looking at the girl. Her expression changed from serious to interested. "Former life?" Her voice was curious. "What do you mean?" Yasumi asked curious. „ you didn't think I was a demon my entire life....I started out as a human” I admitted casually and looked at the girl „but first you should tell me your story...that would be fair” I replied assuming her curiosity would force her to reveal that information to me. Yasumi however didn't like me asking, she started getting nervous making me wonder what kind of secrets she was hiding. As a servant of the Matrimona Del System she was a very interesting entity to me "I don't know what you're talking about...." Trouble could be traced on her face as Yasumi said that "I'm human....! And that's it." She screamed out. Her brows knit together with worry. Her body took a defensive posture „Hey !! no need to get so anxious I was just asking” I casually replied to calm her down. "I-I'm not anxious" Yasumi stuttered. While I observed her carefully and taking a breath, trying to remember my own ancient past, closing my eyes for the moment drawing on the pictures from that time „I was

born as a human on Planet earth in its time the year was 19878th of may ...In the hospital in Koszalin Poland. We used to live in a Polish town called Szczecinek, that was over a Eon of years ago from my perspective. But I can still remembered some tiny bits of information,mostly symbolic. I wasn't born into a wealthy family..I could say they were moderate I guess...hmmm well I started researching the spiritual in 2003 while writing a stories,damn I don't even remember their titles anymore wow...it was also at that time...or maybe later but somewhere in that decade that I became aware of the hidden machination of the system, and the hidden conflict between the material and the spiritual...while I was at school I felt in love with a girl called Aniawell I guess she was the first one I wanted to possess but the only one I haven't possessed...to tell you the truth that's just about it ...all I remember from that time are just scraps of information like an picture of me sitting on some grey stairs with a group of kids. Or some drunk beating me down at night ,me and a woman ...my mum walking at night...that Emilia girl. My father and a brother...and that I used to hate my father" I replied telling her my life story or atleast these tiny fragments I could remember."Oh my, I'm sorry about that..." Yasumi replied somberly, before standing up shocked realising that I said that over an Eon has passed from my perspective ."But wait... What year is this!? Isn't this 2022!?"She exclaimed. While I replied back answering „no body counts the years anymore ...but its not 2022 ,from this worlds perspective billion of Eons of years have already passed,nowadays years are counted by the time corporations were established. For example according to this corporation we would have 68 thousand something already as this place was build 68 thousand years ago earth time,each civilisation counts their years differently..and these that can travel through time count years differently as well" I answered Yasumi's question."I'm.... Confused..." she admitted, sheepishly.

While looking around as I explained her the situation."Where am I exactly then...?" she asked. Making me answer „I call this place the Megacivilisation, its basically a huge metropolix complex built on special platforms in space, that's right were in space at the moment,the Megacivilisation is a Federation that comprises all of the known galaxies in the world its like an ultimate trade federation,these platforms are build from mini platforms that each are owned by different corporations that build their facilities on them,that look like huge sky scrapers,towns or stations. Depending on the design that is best suited for the corporation" I admitted explaining."T-then.....!!" Yasumi started panicing ."How do I get home!? W-why did you guys even bring me here...?" she screamed, while I covered my ears „well the reason was simple to both protect you, your family and your world as well as to get information from you....until this is over you're our hostage I presume, you can't go back if you don't want your planet destroyed" I replied answering Yasumi's question.

"information!? I don't have anything on me! I swear!" Yasumi answered as walked around."I'm just an ordinary person, I've been living a normal high school life. I got friends and I joined clubs...! That's about it!" She sighed. Making me sigh. Understanding how pathetic my attempts at prying information were. The wind blow gently while Yasumi just sat down, looking really confused, and a little dazed."I just want to go home..."she declared quietly as she rolled herself into a ball, while leaning on one of the trees.Aya came near "home?" she smiled teasingly remember the castle she used to live in with his sister. „for me home is everywhere therefore Im always at home" I admitted replying lying down on the grass. Yasumi listened to me and than was pulled back by Aya. Who was pointing at the forest ,surprising Yasumi as she looked up at the young girl"Huh?" she replied ,a bit confused while Aya was pointing at the forest."its home" Aya smiling. She shows the forest. "its our home! You can live in here too" she replied smiling and laughing.Yasumi noticed the innocence in Aya's words.

"Thank you, little girl, but... I have my own home. That's where my family and friends are." She smiled sadly almost crying. This made me cry as well, atleast a bit thought I managed to hold myself in check, I knew it was a mistake to summon this girl here but we couldn't send her back.Aya looked very sadly at Yasumi "am i not your friend?" she replied back almost crying „were all friends here Aya" I replied smiling."T-that's not what I meant..!" Yasumi panicked, noticing that Aya became sad with her words. "it's just that, my family will get worried if I take a long time away

from them." Yasumi replied while I smiled „oh I wouldn't worry about that you'll be back before they notice,once we teleported you here, you stopped existing in that world, meaning that for you time stood still you'll return in the moment you dissapeared" I replied almost lauhting."B-but how long will I stay here...?"Yasumi voice was full of concern. „its of no irrevelance you won't age a moment in you're own world" Mystica replied as she smirked observing Sasuke. Yasumi felt relieved , as if a huge pressure was lifted from her,when I told her about it"Is that so....?"She sighed with relief. „my my my what is our annoying little angel doing now ?" Mystica asked Sasuke walking over towards him,in a mocking greeting manner."T-that's not what I meant..!" Yasumi panicked, noticing that Aya became sad with her words. "it's just that, my family will get worried if I take a long time away from them." Yasumi replied while I smiled „oh I wouldn't worry about that you'll be back before they notice,once we teleported you here, you stopped existing in that world, meaning that for you time stood still you'll return in the moment you dissapeared" I replied almost lauhting."B-but how long will I stay here...?"Yasumi voice was full of concern. „its of no irrevelance you won't age a moment in you're own world" Mystica replied as she smirked observing Sasuke. Yasumi felt relieved , as if a huge pressure was lifted from her,when I told her about it"Is that so....?"She sighed with relief. „my my my what is our annoying little angel doing now ?" Mystica asked Sasuke walking over towards him,in a mocking greeting manner."hm?!" Sasuke replied suprised by the girls question."Thank goodness..."Yasume said... answering my question she was really relieved. „anyways there's no reason to panic" I added thoughtfully or adleast thought it was thoughtfull at the time."Hey... How much do you know about me...?" Yasumi started asking suspiciously"You seem to have something else in mind, and you all act like we've met somewhere before... Do I know you...?" She looked at us suspiciously. Making me sight and looking at her annoyed „take a guess I told you're dreams were real ! Do you understand it ? you're spiritual self from you're dreams surved. A goddess that represents the system, the so called whore of Babylon or as I call it preffering to not insult the Babylonians....The Matrimona Del System and because of the fact you were her most high ranked survent ,you were given a privelaged and safe material life to gather information on the world and on the System itself. As well as to inform the System and its whores about actions made by the social outcasts and or especially these that like follow spirituality and not materialism. Now Lord Galamouth wants to destroy humanity , and needs to destroy the system, he has the goddess all that remains was to kill you and were protecting you and retrieving the Goddess and than I will have sex with her" I replied explaining knowing that Yasumi would protest,thought I knew that my chance to use the Whore of Babylon might as well passed ,since her body didn't have a soul already meaning that the goddess has passed away „I think Matrimona is dead" I replied looking at Yasumi. The announcement got her dazed, as she tried to let the information sink in. She finally understood the situation we all were in, it was peacefull the artificially properred air moved around creating an artificial wind, it gived the impression of openness and vastness of the area,as the artificial enviroment was adleast billion of kilometers wide, I kept looking at the tree's seeing more tree's in the distant.They created a huge and impressive mosaick,a combination of different spieces. Together in a single place govern by blue energy whirpools and small silver like nanoids , that took care of every living being in this artificial paradise. I saw my self how these tiny robo bugs worked,collecting the seeds of different tree's and categorizing them into the databanks. Evenrything was analised and segregated in the manner of seconds. This was the marvelous feat of human ingeniuity. Nearby small ants were carrying a green leave ,taking it to theire nest not bothered by the artificial bugs,even not attacking them as they merelly and clevearly avoided contact, in the bea hive above us the busy bee's were making honey , flying in and out of it looking for different flowers to collect some nectar, just as if they would do in the natural enviroment, birds were singing making this place feel like a real forest. It sure was relaxing."This place is so similar to the natural forest, yet so different..."Yasumi voice was soft and so was her eyes."Maybe all this really needs is the sky."She sighed."This place feels so suffocating, like under a blanket..." I looked at her noting her reply „well thats true we are under a blanket, a blanket created by the darkness" I replied smiling. "I don't like it...."

Yasumi whispered under her breath. While looked at the skies streaching my self totally not

understanding the girl's problem „why ?” I asked very surprised. „Whats the problem with this place” I continued looking at the others. "Nothing... I'm just not used to this, that's all." She laughed sheepishly as if trying to hide something. I continued looking at the distance partially understanding Yasumi „its ok if I were taken into the future from twenty first century planet earth my self...I would be probably traumatized....It took me few hundred years to adopt to my new nature...do you think its easy to accept that earth was just a station...you're really doing fine...don't worry once you'll be back the memories will seem like a distant dream, you'll probably forget about this situation, now that Matrimona's dead you will no longer be her spiritual servant , so your dreams will be that of an ordinary human I suppose, but we need to defeat the Mad Lord first” I explained trying to cheer Yasumi up, wondering why she was so tensed. "I'm not traumatized or anything like that... I don't know. I'm just confused. Some sort of memories that I've never really experienced are popping up." She confessed. „its normal these are called the memories of a soul, don't worry about them they will soon assimilate if you let them” I replied looking at the girl and continuing to smile. Luckily for me she started to relax a bit. "So you're saying.... that I'm some sort of supernatural kind of person that used to be a servant of a goddess which is now dead...?" Yasumi concluded. Observing me with a very serious face , kinda scaring me even „y-yes thats exactly right and don't say its impossible , after all you're here its proof enough” I asked looking away a bit nervous, because of the girl. Basically I was talking and probably saving a servant of one of my greatest sworn enemies, this was truly an unusual situation for me. To be able to talk with this girl that survived the Matrimona herself, normally she would be protected by the structure itself, but since the Whore of the System died. Yasumi was unnecessary. In the same time Misa walked down into this land, leaving us alone for a moment walking quite a distance from the temple we sat in, by passing scary tree's she saw a haunted castle „Okke” she thought in her head as she wanted to see what is this castle...she came near it...and then...she came in "is anybody here....hello" she said...but nobody replied.. Well...then...she comes to browse the castle....but something scary was hidden in it...She heard some scary sounds. Noticing shadows on the grey walls, going further trembling a bit from fear she continued to investigate the place. The walls were decorated with the golden candles, some of them were shining so brightly she continued to finally seeing what she came for ..she saw something scary something mysterious...something ridiculous....this was the Cthulhu god of madness ...she screamed a bit and then she made a circle and started forming it into a big pentagram of fire...and attacked the shadow that appeared killing the god...she then took its body.....and rushed towards an artificial sea, where she dumped the shadow body.....she touched the blue water forming mini pentagrams inside the water making a sea magic and saying a spell....to accept the dead body of this creature...Which in reality was just a spiritual remnant of Galamouth's aura and the memories he discarded, having Misa uncover the true identity of the lord of darkness. Misa then returned to us smiling mischievously as the shadow god, simply assimilated into Misa's own shadow, while she wasn't looking. I looked at the girl curious what mischief she was up to.”What if I told you a story guys ? the story of a serpent and a girl ? in a beautiful forest , in a land far away in distant planetary complexes there lived a cute innocent girl that was made of pure light the girl believe it or not was the only inhabitant of this strange forest like world , she was quite the innocent type not having a single malicious thought in her entire life , the only thing this girl could do was to take care of different beings in this forest and dance ... yet she was very lonely as most of the beings were plants and flowers and while the girl continued taking care of them they couldn't reply or see her dance. Then suddenly a malevolent entity came into the forest the girl was living in a serpent made from darkness...the brutal vicious animal that thought about killing and destroying, it crawled on the tree and saw the beautiful maiden was dancing, and the serpent attacked the girl of light while she danced , scaring the being of light and surprising as she desperately tried to avoid it, it continued attacking her ,the serpent was happy to have a girl to challenge his power, but also angry to find such pureness, the evil animal wanted to destroy the girl , to terrify her to prove how strong it was and to demonstrate the terror it can bring. But the girl wasn't afraid of the animal she looked kindly at it continuing her dance, despite the fact the animal tried to attack and hurt her... getting in wrath it desired this girl so much, that the serpent couldn't stop thinking about this beautiful being.

Becoming more mesmerized by the girls wonderful dance, the serpent wanted to get close and touch the girl but she avoided it him, until he changed into a beautiful dark boy, shocking the girl as she saw the metamorphosing and witnessed that the scary but sorrowful creature, was a being like herself. She looked closely with a childish naivete at the creature, seeing the feeling of sorrow in that boy...she wanted to be with this boy to be close with him and take away the darkness that engulfed the boy, while the boy wanted to be close to her and feel her warmth and so they hugged, and remained together for eternity. Despite the fact the boy continued to be the darkness while the girl continued to be the light, they both found comfort in each other... this comfort we call love" I told my story looking at Yasumi, "do you understand now? this war why you're here and why we all are here? even the mad Lord?" I asked Yasumi, hoping to hear her answer. She just listened to the story, and her interest rising again. "Darkness and Light can never be separated." She was surprised at what she said herself. Not sure of where that thought came from, she tried thinking about many things, as if that simple sentence came from another person's lips. "and this is the eternal knowledge that makes one great...once we understand and then accept it as simple understanding isn't enough. We learn to control a massive power, this is when we finally learn or can even understand the true nature of God....so Yasumi there's no reason for you to fear this moment my advice is that you grab the moment, forget who you were and where you lived...and just live in the present to return to your past, soon it will be over and this moment won't ever return, this is your blessing" I replied lying down looking at the colors that we were manifesting on the ceiling, slowly clearing my mind from all these unnecessary thoughts. Enjoying the peaceful atmosphere of this moment. Yasumi corrected her hair "I'm feeling sleepy..." she yawned, while Mystica was playing with both Sasuke and Aya. The air was a bit stiff as it was blown artificially but at the same time there was something atmospheric or even enchanting hidden in this place we were in. Yasumi looked at me with her innocent eyes and then she leaned back on a tree and slowly closed her eyes, and within a few moments, she fell asleep. Mystica enjoyed playing around with Aya, not knowing that there could be so many things to do when being alive, her experience of this world made her desire such life, making her slowly forget she wasn't even human. Sasuke looked at Yasumi then turned his eyes at the sky, lost in his own thoughts, while I smirked, "I told you it's a totally different experience, at this moment you're overwhelmed with these sensations....this is what it's like being alive...of course you can still shape shift and limit the sensations as you're still an energy being" I explained looking at Sasuke and smiling taking a breath. Sasuke ignored my explanation poking Yasumi on her cheek, making me a bit annoyed. "well really?" I exhausted and looked around observing the area, remembering that we still were inside enemy's base, and God knew what Galamouth would have installed for us, or when one of his traps would activate. For the moment however everything was calm, you might say it was calm before the storm as the old Polish saying said. The environment was warm, the place was gently lit, with a lot of dark places, and animals were heard everywhere. A golden beetle opened its wings and flew across my nose, shocking me a bit and mesmerizing as I continued to look at the shiny bug, it was a real beetle and not a robotic one, most obviously created by Galamouth's experiments or collected from some kind of planet. Yasumi was not only fast asleep, but also a very hard sleeper. No matter how many pokes Sasuke did, she wouldn't even budge. Sasuke was obviously fascinated by her. Smiling, "I wonder why human's look cute when they sleep?" He asked making me look at him, not knowing what to answer. After all what kind of importance would her pleasant face have while she slept, my guess was simple, that she was simply tired. There was no reason for me to pounce or even reply to such a ridiculous question I thought in my mind. Sasuke however continued smiling, for him Yasumi's face was like a golden star, he continued staring at her. Seeing how muscles made the face twitch while Yasumi slept lost in her dreams, what were the things she dreamed of was my concern. I analysed whether it would be important or was she even having a dream, while Sasuke still stared at the girl. The environment somehow made her sleep even more. The wind gently petted her hair making a small mess. "hey don't look at her like that or you'll fall in love" I teased Sasuke grinning. Sasuke smiled and slowly bent over kissing Yasumi on her sweet lips "I guess that will do" He replied smiling innocently making me look at him with envy as Yasumi screamed while opening her

eyes, shocked her heart was beating at a tremendous speed. „nyaaah!!” Yasumi screamed surprised, pushing Sasuke down and instantly standing up, pushing herself on the tree and breathing loudly. Sasuke smiled innocently and continued observing the young maiden. Still breathing rapidly as if there's no air, Yasumi quickly went behind the tree. "W-why did you do that!?" she asked yelling shocked by the course, these events took. Me and Mystica were watching the whole situation curiously „You were too cute” Sasuke replied closing his eyes and smiling. Making Yasumi hide behind the tree embarrassed „now that's a quite of a romance we got here” I replied looking at Mystica as she smiled back, and continued looking at me confused by my words „and what is that romance thing you mentioned?” She asked smiling very politely making me sigh. „Well romance iswell it's awhen a guy meets a girl....and a girl meets a guy and they like each other but there's no sex involved just eating a lot of chocolate...well romance sucks I always liked hentai's more” I replied not knowing how to explain the basic concept of mortal romantic love. „uhmm and what's a hentai?” Mystica continued asking making me blush and look at her a bit frustrated „you know that you're too young to ask such questions !!” I replied trying to hide my embarrassment, caused by my pervy thoughts. Mystica smirked her eyes shining in red as she replied „you do realize I'm at least thousands years old I'm a shadow that existed through eternity...do not treat me like a child young one” Mystica replied making me even more troubled. „It was just a kiss” Sasuke continued explaining Yasumi's intention as she looked at him furious "Y-you don't understand!" She protested. As we continued observing the whole situation, while I myself was hoping there wouldn't be any more questions coming from Mystica. „I don't” Sasuke replied while I smirked „yea you definitely don't...another difference between the spiritual and the material...is that you cannot give your love so freely, or you might be accused of rape ...the physical love is also very different than the kind you're used to...in spiritual we're all connected there's no such thing as unwanted love and there isn't anything you cannot do, for spiritual entities our physical shells are just containers used to experience different energy patterns, thus you cannot rape a spirit...however for mortal this experience is definitely different for them losing or injuring their containers means they cease to exist as one of their own kind or die...and this is why they don't like to be for example touched without permission...also the materialism is a philosophy of gathering resources while starting out with limited supplies themselves, we live according to spiritualism which is a philosophy of experiencing and combining and gathering spiritual energy which we can then convert to matter, or convert from matter at any rate most humans are more suited to gather resources in the form of matter while we gather resource from energy and then convert it to matter to suit our needs ” I explained this issue to Sasuke looking at them smiling. Hoping my explanation would provide some understanding. „this is why Yasumi is afraid of you're touching you should limit your actions...I used to think spiritual is better than the material but after experiencing it a bit I now understand that both materialism and spiritualism are equal, both co-existing together might create a lot of good and evil, both styles of living can provide the same needs whether you choose the spiritual or the material it really has no consequence... I think there's a huge issue with the two psychological personality types, Extroverts who are more oriented on the outside world will be much happier living according to the material principle, while the Introverts will seek out more of the spiritual to provide for themselves...the only thing that annoys me is the system where the Satan's telling us that there is only one way to live, their hatred for each other makes them accomplices, in truth I think materialism and spiritualism are two world's major philosophies that when combined can create astonishing marvels, the Megacivilisation we are now in is an example of what can be accomplished by combining matter and the spiritual” I explained and looked at the forest taking a breath. Suddenly to my delight I noted a familiar energy pattern, someone was crossing from the spiritual world and I knew that person or magical being smiling I awaited our guest. The figure was hiding itself into the forest and escaping making me sigh as I yelled „Hey Zinga ! stop fooling around and come over to us !!” I yelled hoping that our guest, would come closer to us. I looked around seeing dark trees and faced the direction ahead me from where I could feel Zinga's energy pattern moving forward and then started running jumping on the trees quickly and landing in front of our guest „where the hell are you running off to ?” I asked the guest looking

straightly at Zinga who looked back at me very scared „No...I'm new to this world... I just don't know any thing about this place n who are you? And how do u know my name??" Zinga replied terribly scared by my presence, making me wonder did he hit himself on his head again. But than again it could pass several hundred years from his perspective in fact for me it was 500 or more. „Its me Blaze Master don't you remember ?" I asked trying to look nicely and than added „ but you indeed are in a very dangerous place ...what brings you here anyways" I asked looking at the boy filled with curiosity."Ok... here I come... so what u all people do??" Zinga replied as sighted walking back to the ancient temple like structure „clueless as always.. listen Zinga its not a place to randomly jump into were doing a war here you know.. so you better get out while you can.. or you can join us that reminds me a freak Lucas I knew once who also tried to follow me in the spiritual untill I using God's powers send him to hell I just defeat that bastard easily Mo..oh well no point in saying his full surname now.. he was a dick that onced tried to steal from me in the material while we were alive and a fool who thought he could defeat me in spiritual I made sure his hell's experience was complete in fact I was the one who punished him...than converting his darkness into lighthe wasn't even a challenge but a nuisance having him follow me all the way through spiritual was a bit annoying but than again he was in a real dis-advantage after all it took me barely few seconds to send him away into the depths of despair and than to reincarnate his soul" I replied sighting „thought I don't like being followed as it often created problems....so Zinga what's your explanation" I asked looking at him , and sitting back at the center of the temple observed by Aya,Sasuke,Mystica and Yasumi. Looking at the dark corner of the forest and smiling at the shadow that hidden in the bushes. „just come out already !" I replied finishing. "Hey, no need to be so harsh."Yasumi pat me on the shoulder and smiled reassuringly. While I looked at her and read the inscriptions on the magical site „ I just like to know what's going on? Im glad he is here if he knows what's he's getting into that is...if he doesn't he should leave to a different place" I replied looking at the ancient drawings, that shown a man sitting in a yoga position holding two balls of energy, light energy in right hand and dark energy ball in the left hand,closed eyes and meditating on the state of universe. I analysed the symbol and decided to calm my thoughts as well. Realising that the only purpose of spiritual existence is to spread love, mixing vital energies and enjoying the pleasant extasies of what we would describe sex, but comprehend as different energy combination by sharing energy among each other, giving out force with imprinted spiritual DNA we give life to many spiritual forms, whether it would be a conscious act of sexual intercourse. Or an imagination working wild energy thus produced and mixed with energies of others would create thought forms that than create life. The Spiritual is indeed quite perverse in that regard and perhaps its because why most following spirituality need to first accept their own desires especially these pertaining to sexuality, not denounce them for there is nothing wrong in sex that creates physical life, and nothing wrong with desiring an union with the spiritual entities, there is no rape for all union is used to combine energies , sex is a tool for the spiritual to give birth to many living forms. This is why sex was celebrated in the ancient worlds, because this intercourse represented the divine unions. To which all willing are invited sex with a Goddess is possible for a commoner and a king, status or wealth is not required but only readiness to give oneself to the desire, to fulfill the most perverse and most obscure wild dream you ever have...and to be able to love. The only requirement is to desire a perfect union, and not all ready but perhaps in this regard a commoner might be even better suited than a king, for the one that has nothing simply doesn't fear losses. In the end can gain this incredible right because of being humble, an humble approach is always advised, but humble doesn't mean not being bold, in fact some boldness is also required a respectful boldness and believe in one self can do wonders and allow ones to achieve full extasy. Do not fear to touch but be respectful while in the process treat others the way you want to be treated and they will repay in kindness. be positive while trying to establish a union and caring to your lovers and they will be caring and protective of you as well. This is spiritual exchange that done properly has many advantages. This was the hidden message of this ancient temple which was used to research spiritual exchange and the meaning of love as a building block of the universe.The Dark energies released from the center pillar of our shrine started forming human shapes, developing into shadow

ninja's which quickly started attacking me and would, interfere with my meditation if it wasn't for Misa who quickly jumped into a crazy all out battle. After witnessing the strange creatures taking shape, she got out her katana and fought these shadow beings slicing them into pieces with her holy blades, making them disappear into the afterlife as she then sat down next to me, observing my meditation.

Meanwhile Arua stopped running. She saw something odd in that territory. She felt someone standing behind her "who?" she asked. A girl stood casually behind her. Her hair in loose curls lightly swayed in the wind. "Hello Arua. I've been looking for you." she replied smiling a bit menacingly. The two of them stood in the forest, but it was a different one than the one we were in. The sun shined brightly while huge white fluffy clouds slowly were pushed by the winds on the azure sky. This forest wasn't artificially made it was full of natural beauty and life. The sun glistened off of Katherine. Usually a vampire would have been turned to ashes right about now. However, Arua noticed the necklace. The necklace was pure silver with a water drop shaped lapis lazuli stone in the middle. The stone has magical properties which stops a vampire being bound by the sun. Arua asked the girl "who are you? why you in here?" observing the new comer. She couldn't recognize how this person was connected to her own past. Katherine smiled menacingly, her face and body looked so youthful. Her eyes said otherwise. She was old, very old. "My name is Katherine. Katherine Bennett." Katherine answered glaring at Arua. "why you in here? who are you Katherine? You are not a part of my memories." Arua replied. Katherine smirked. "I know." She walked closer, as if she wasn't phased by Arua's aggression. "You see, the thing about my kind is that we can get people to do whatever we want. For instance..." Katherine looked Arua in the eyes, her pupils became small. "Lift your right foot up." For some reason, Arua felt a strong urge to do as Katherine asked. "I won't do that!" Arua pushed herself not to be afraid. "Why I had bad feeling? what will she do to me?" Arua thought to herself. Katherine smiled. "You're a strong one. You're not that easy to compel." She slowly circled Arua, examining her. "You seem tougher than you look." Arua stared at Katherine "what do you mean?" "Well," Katherine breathed heavily. "To compel someone is it... Hypnotise them. However, the fact you can hold off against a simple order, does not mean you're impervious to hypnosis at all. I wasn't even trying." The girl replied walking over to Arua, grinning. "what will you do to me, Katherine?" Arua asked surprised looking at the new comer and trying to move back, wondering whether this person was sent by Lord Galamouth to retrieve her soul. Katherine smirked. "Nothing, yet. You'll see me again Arua. Very soon." And with that, she was gone. Disappearing slowly evaporating into the air. Leaving no trace behind. Leaving Arua a bit confused as to the intentions of that mysterious visitor. Arua fallen to the ground, feeling how her legs trembled so fast. "what ...happened? am I ...afraid of her?". For a long time Arua remained shocked, thinking about Katherine. "...she is...dangerous." Arua stood up and walked around the forest. Leaving the Illusion realm and coming back towards us. While I was meditating opening my eyes and saw Arua walking out from a blue portal. Suddenly we heard a woman's voice "to compel someone is TO ... Hypnotise them" a mysterious figure revealed itself. It was Catherine standing behind Arua and smirking. „are you a friend or foe ?" I asked looking at the woman, while noting that Zinga managed to run away, I continued staring at the woman standing while Mystica walked over towards her, distracting as she looked like a 10 year old child innocently staring. Correcting her fancy hat. „you want to play onechan?" She asked mimicking Aya's behaviour in fact reading herself to attack Katherine, who knew that this girl that was dressed in white was in fact a demon created out of dark matter, a true hellish shadow. Yasumi was standing looking at us, she was just waiting for Arua to say something. "Do we go in?"

She asked innocently. While I sensed a massive reconfiguration of energy taking place as the ceiling became active and lights turned off, purple energy streams were visible. Going through different places connecting into symbols on the ceilings, shooting at us with energy shoots. The entire structure began its assault on us as we tried to avoid being hit „run quick guys it's an ambush!" I managed to scream out moving quickly behind the trees, as the multiple needle sized energy beams hit the ground activating the sensor mines hidden under the artificial ground as they exploded in orange flames. „This place is booby trapped!!" I screamed while the mines

explodes and energy shoots came out of the forest. Small fusion bullets pierced the air hitting trees covering, crushing them with their explosion and covering in terribly bright blue flames, while I shielded myself with a silver shield being knocked by two bullets that threw me to the ground. Hearing noises and looking at the ceiling as the purple energy created circular structures, the likes and complexity of which would be hard for me to describe, shining in a terrible bright light sending micro information to some computer consoles that were beyond our reach. Yasumi helped and protected the others on the way, trying to save them from the falling debris. Mystica summoned her shadow birds that in just a matter of few seconds filled the artificial skies absorbing the purple rays into them and flying in circle, creating a powerful dark protective barrier. While I stood up and rushed back towards Yasumi joining them. Looking around wondering where Katherine was hiding it was obvious she was behind the attack on Galamouth's or someone else's orders. The bullets were still shooting at us as I created a powerful sphere-like shield withstanding the powerful blue explosions which made even me tremble, my invisible shield behaved like water on contact with the bullets squishing them as they released their blue flames, creating tiny circles on contact just like the rocks do when thrown into the water. Playing out a nice melody as the flames were repelled and fallen to the ground, while billion or trillions of other bullets attacked my shield, these bullets would rip us apart if it wasn't for the shield, while Mystica concentrated on looking for the source of the attack. The attack came from around us increasing with speed. Yasumi gasped in fright "Let's get outta here!" She exclaimed. „we can't were trapped” I replied looking back at Yasumi, enforcing the shield as the attack became more powerful. „the attack is caused by a rotating structure, my birds will try to disable its energy structure but it might take some time” Mystica replied as the shadow birds squeezed and started flying down on an invisible target. Hitting them exposing their masking shields which disruption momentarily revealed a silver totem-like machines, that surrounded us in rings composed of circles in all possible directions, these two or three foot tall totem-like robots were everywhere. While I closed my eyes and could sense a faint energy pattern being sent by each of these robots „they're using electrowaves to communicate and send energy to each other...they're connected in a web-like structure” I replied, while Mystica's birds started changing into pure darkness that engulfed the space sucking out the micro waves. Slowly dis-activating the robots. As I concentrated on my shield and sent a massive force attack composed of billion tiny but powerful micro beams, that hit the robots in the speed of light creating a massive display of explosions that engulfed other robots, spreading like a chain the orange flames rose and slightly damaged the energy system on the roof activating the anti fire systems, as water started falling down, mixed with debris of these machines that slowly hit the ground. „I guess that's that” I admitted opening my eyes while Mystica looked back at me „I wouldn't be too sure about that!” She replied. Yasumi looked at Mystica with a deeply worried expression "what's gonna happen!?" She reacted. „I feel tanks” Mystica replied and indeed we could hear noises coming out of the forest as these tanks were making their way firing their photon canon at us each producing a greenish flash. The brown machines made their way through the forest, the automatic systems inside slowly calculated their path maintaining control and directing the entire squad, forcing me to disable my shield hearing them nearby from behind us and noticing some of these vehicles at front „we need to try and hide quick into these bushes” I ordered pointing towards a huge bush in which we could seek shelter. „or we could try going above” I noticed the trees and made my way into the bushes as the tanks were coming fast. "Let's go above. We'll get a good view from there." Yasumi suggested. While a column of tanks made their way just past the bushes we were in, making us communicate quietly to avoid detection as the tanks were equipped with yellow radar antennas that monitored the environment for any movement, and the red camera which came out from a hole under the antenna, just like a snake that comes out of his nest observed the area to locate our whereabouts. „We need to be careful ok let's go” I suggested as they disappeared in the distance as I grabbed Yasumi in my arms and used my force to jump on the highest trees placing her steadily on the branches. „just don't fall” I replied as the others quickly followed us. Arua murmurs something. "She's ... Dangerous..." I looked back at her smiling „you don't say” commenting and looking around at the huge forest, glad that everyone made their way on the trees

as we continued looking for a way out. I really did hope Arua would lead us out of this mess. Yasumi gasped, trying not to scream. She didn't expect that I would take her and jump. Suprised by my speed and how fast we moved upwards, stopping near the top of a 567 meter tree. „are you all right Yasumi...Arua lead us out of this trap now” I replied to both Yasumi and Arua and noticed orange flames spreading at the borders of this forest, creating dark smoke. "What're those tanks doing!?" Yasumi whispered sharply. While I observed the fire consuming the trees, and creating dark smoke that filled the area, spreading like a disease. The trees were dying as their physical materia was released in burst of energy that was produced by these orange flames. Releasing powerful energy that turned into an unbearable heatwave while the smoke minimised the air we used to breathe „they're burning the forest to make us choke, remember that were in an artificial structure these trees are used to create air!!” I replied a bit worried about the situation continuing to seek a way out of this whole mess. Yasumi was terrified because of the rapid motion the events took "There has to be a way!"

She exclaimed. "But we don't even know why this is happening." adding. „Well for your information its happening because of Galamouth” Mystica explained as shoots came from behind us forcing me to summon an electro shield to deflect them. I tried to locate the source of the shoots but wasn't able to locate it. Yasumi climbed up on a tree and looked around for any signs of people. Meanwhile I suddenly was punched out by an invisible android as a group of silver humanoid androids made themselves visible and jumped after me beating me badly as I was falling down and hitting the ground, the four androids landed on the ground near me as I sent a blue shockwave forcing them to jump back a bit as the tanks started firing at me forcing to move. Quickly jumping I entered combat with these machines that surrounded me and tried to hit my face forcing me to defend myself, by covering my head with my arm, and then punching the robot in its face and moving forward turning back and sending back a whirlpool energy at them, only to have them shield themselves by extending their hands into a circle shield that absorbed my attack into them making these robots more powerful. As two of them picked up pocket knives and moving with the speed of light managed to cut my face twice, making me angry and power up my entire spiritual energy which I then released at them screaming, creating a huge yellow atomic like explosion that burned them to pieces but destroyed a huge part of the forest as well. My Power engulfed the tanks that were close by destroying these in few seconds as well, forcing the entire group to move quickly in order to not get engulfed in the calamity I created as I quickly followed them leaving the blast area as well. Misa gotten out the spell book and searched something really powerful.... a spell..then she found one, but before doing it...she needed to draw a pentagram, and only then she said the spell....Finally the tanks burned in fire, one of them froze, and the others were hit by lightning „how's that?” she asked looking at me, while I smiled delighted and myself decided to use a spell concentrating my mana into tiny red orbs, that slowly came out of me as I drew a red pentagram collecting the orbs like dots in a children's book and putting my hand on the newly created symbol that floated in front of me sending my energy into the pentagram, which shooted out a rainbow colored energy whirlpool, blasting through the forest. Hitting the tanks and everything in its path disintegrating it on a molecular level, as I moved my hand upwards controlling the whirlpool and pointing my hand behind myself I directed the energy behind me destroying a thousand of these mechanical brown tanks, before dispersing the energy „see you need to work on that spell” I suggested to Misa. "How long is this gonna take!?" Yasumi asked while Mystica jumped behind her hugging to keep her from falling down due to the turbulences caused by our attacks. While I sent a powerful energy beam at the moving tanks that were distracted by this unexpected attack „so far so good were doing quite well ...we gotta move” I replied jumping to a different branch and used my hands to invite the others to follow me, making Mystica release Yasumi „you should jump now” she replied waiting for Yasumi to move. "Jump where?" Yasumi asked a little too calmly. Making Mystica point her to the branches ahead of them on which I was standing monitoring the area. She jumped to where I was standing. „are you ok” I asked helping her keep balance, while purple lightnings came down not hitting us, this was the discharge of magical circuits that occurred because of us damaging the magical infrastructure, I monitored the energy closely noticing how it

helped us by distracting the tanks even more and went ahead jumping to another branch as we slowly made our way. "No I'm okay. You don't have to help me balance" Was all Yasumi could said. Mystica following silently „It is ok to rely on me...I can have many purposes...I can do many things” Mystica mumbled looking at Yasumi a bit insecure, squished by some fear she started experiencing. Mystica herself wanted to be necessary, needed it because she was a being that thought she could exist without a purpose. Mystica was a spirit that only started to learn how to be a proper demon, or a proper human emulation. Most Demons often specialize in emulating humans to serve as ambassadors of different energies or pattern they were created from. Just like angels thought the only difference between an angel and a demon is that angels always serve only God, while demons can serve God and their own interest as well, in that sense they're more similar to humans as demons can possess a human like ambition. Especially if they evolved from human beings, thought spirits and demons can also come from animals or even compilations of societies, known as the so called thought complexess. Angels on the other hand are always archetypes, energies created from God for a specific purpose, while demons or spirits are often energies or spiritual entities that created themselves evolving from other life forms or simple thoughts, emotions. Just like building a castle out of block, everyone contacting these energies add something to them, allowing them to build their forms and to gain awareness. It was pretty much so with Mystica who used by memories of Ania as a thought construct for her own creation. Mystica was intelligent thought and an independent being in her own state, thought she didn't have a human like awareness that would allow her to communicate or manifest in a form understandable for us mimicking the looks of a human girl. Of course Mystica started feeling human emotions, the emotion of wanting to belong somewhere and because of her true nature she of course was quite honest about these, just like every child would. Looking desperately for someone to acknowledge her, she perhaps found it in Yasumi's proposal "Miss mystica. Let's go." Yasumi smiled and offered her hand. Making Mystica hesitantly grab it, looking away being a bit embarrassed by these sudden emotions that started to overwhelm her. I continued observing the area noticing the change of the environment there was something odd, which made me feel uncomfortablely anxious. Yasumi smiled sincerely at Mystica. While I continued observing the area „I feel something shifting I cannot triangulate thought ! Yasumi do you guys feel anything ?” I asked touching the brown bark of the tree on which I was standing on. Knowing that there was definitely something lurking in the shadows above. Mystica send some of her shadow birds upwards to investigate but as soon as they lifted they were shoot down by some green rays. Just as if something or somewhere where watching on us from above remaining invisible. "What's wrong?" Yasumi looked at me curiously. „I'm not quite sure but we might get attacked soon by a new enemy.....unless that's just a spy” I replied pointing out to the darkness „Concentrate I bet you can feel someone....or than again maybe she doesn't even remember how trace Arua's” I replied sighting a bit wondering would there be any moves made from our new enemies. Yasumi shook her head, frowning. "No. I don't remember anything." She replied while I took her hand „anyways guys we gotta move fast ! there's gotta be a way out of here !” I commanded thought being a bit lost, my self waiting for Arua to take the initiative. Suddenly in the flash of silver lightings the enemy appeared taking a form of a massive silver wolf approaching towards us freezing everything around it as it spoke to us „I Am Fenrir Of The Ragnarok Clan” He replied making us notice the animal god as he appeared above our head „And what do you want Fenrir of the Ragnarok clan ?” I asked remembering that Catherine was hiding nearby. A giant Blizzard was formed and the cold winds occurred in the entire territory of this artificial forest freezing the tree's and all animals that lived there, almost freezing us „Your Lives For My Master.” Fenrir spoke as I looked at him and teleported behind pulling out my lasersword and cutting the wolf's back targeting its hearth „goodbye for now” I replied sending my entire power into the silver wolf using my lasersword as a conductor frying and disintegrating the animal in the white flash of my power in mere few seconds. However my attack was intercepted by a red haired young man dressed in some jeans, and leather coat, who looked at me with his green eyes as I jumped down.....”you are hurting them...?” The Red haired man replied as I looked confused not knowing to whom he was referring. Yasumi was agitated looking at the scene

"Who are these people now...!?" Yasumi screamed it out as fear was rising again within her. She didn't know who to trust. Making me hit her gently in the face „Wake up ! they're Galamouths children by the way have you seen Arua and Aya ? damn these two ditched us" I replied while Mystica send her shadow birds into the red hair man, making them attack our enemy with all their power and speed. The red haired man merrelly oscillated his blade 720° in a blinding speed and sheathed it back in slicing the birds into pieces „hm" He replied thinking a bit as I continued looking at these two. Yasumi looked at me a bit confused she got surprised by the hit. "I... I'm sorry...." she looked away, seeing the point in my words. „they're not gonna be easy to beat and remember that there's one more enemy in hiding the one that controlled these tanks" I replied and jumped in the air flying towards the red haired man „okey its on bozoo I hope you won't waste my time" I replied smirking as my eyes turned red while I moved my hand and shooted an energy beam right into his face throwing him a bit away. Meanwhile snow reformed Fenrir's body as the silver wolf growled and then howled "Idiot! Chaos Mist Knights I Call You Forth! Kill Them!" The Wolf screamed while the mist wraiths unaffected by our weapons of any creating invisible soldiers that attacked us using the old hit and run tactic annoying Mystica who was the first one attacked, forcing her to shoot her red lightnings blindly missing them as they runned around, while I was trying to defeat the red haired man who flicked the beam high above the sky with his left hand „I'm on no bodies side.... I fight in the name of "Justice"&"righteous" you were hurting the animals and I saved them, that's it!" He replied as a huge demonic vortex formed walking away into it shoving the bottom of his long blue leather coat „Well thats that" „I replied jumping back and getting attacked by Fenrir's invisible knight. But suddenly these attacks stopped as the knights were send away by Fenrir himself suprising us a bit as he stared at us omnimously „Time To Go! Master Is calling" he replied vanishing into the blizzard with the wraiths, as the cold winds subsided silently, and the temperature starting warming, we also noticed that the tanks disappeared as I jumped back to the ground sliding on the bark and landing on the ground observing this disappearance „they're gone !!" I yelled out to my comrades, they were really gone. However I was wrong thinking that it meant the end of this battle as something more powerfull appeared with a loud bang, that almost teared the entire forest. What was manifesting was beyond our expectations, it was a massive black collosus, looking like a giant black mecha type weapon that slowly walked in our direction. This thing created a tremendous noise shaking the artificial ground. Sasuke looked at me worried „so what's the plan?!" he asked while I was smiling „well we gotta run and run fast" I replied taking a hike and running away the giant black mecha slammed its hands together creating a sonic wave that flattened the trees as it quickly advanced in our direction throwing us down „this ain't good!!" I replied hitting the ground and rolling on it for a while before standing up and starting to run again. „I Am Ragnarok!" The Giant Black Mecha Said In A Booming Machine Voice „Global Incinerator!" raises left hand to the clouds and fires red beam into the sky making the atmosphere catch fire. The artificial roof broken by the shoot collapsed, breaking down into pieces it created debris that combined with the fire from the atmosphere created a meteorite shower, orange balls hit the ground forcing us to jump away avoiding being hit. Yasumi rushed through the branches, jumping and avoiding being hit in the mid air "This is a pain....!" She mumbled. "Lets hurry up! And get outta here!" Yasumi screamed to Mystica who nodded in response as both of them rushed quickly. They both started jumping from tree to tree, trying to look for an exit. „Hate Of Nature!" Ragnarok screamed as a massive airwave was formed, the doors to oblivion were formed as the forest catches fire, every artificial ocean dried up, every wind died. "N-no way!! This is impossible!!" Yasumi cried. „looks I have to use this faster than I planned" I replied turning myself around to face Ragnarok, my eyes shined in a golden color „Im coming to you Ragnarok !" I replied and standed straightly preparing myself for the transformation that started taking place as I gathered the molecules from the air and tried to synchronise with the nature, calling out to all the spirits hidden in this forest. To all the living beings that suffered from these attacks. Their voice called on me, and I replied to their cries. Offering myself as a container to their will my eyes shined golden as a massive air current formed around my body, the green wind blew with incredible power gathering energy, forcing an energy ball into creation that was thrown at the dark

mecha ragnarok , I my self engulfing even more started to shift form growing rapidly my self turning into a mecha like creature , a white mecha body was formed as my shape and I looked at Ragnarok „ I carry the will of the forest Ragnarok ,the breath of life that gives creation the joy of the shining sun,the sorrow of the lonely moon,the enchanting sung of the cicades the strenght of an ant and speed of a tiger, the awariness of a hawk and a wisdom of a owl and the ever changing fate of a snake” I annouced and rushed quickly hitting Ragnarok into his face making him fall, as energy wave came into creation of my rapid attack almost throwing Yasumi and Mystica down , while I continued beating Ragnarok down creating cracks in his body, wonding the dark god terribly. Ordaining the punishment by my hands but by the will of the forest and all living creatures, despite this beeing an artificial place the lifes of these creatures were real, they habitated here and raised their own children creating a something we could call a society, and this connection with this society allowed me to gather powerfull streanght. Sasuke quickly picked up Yasumi shielding her from harm while Mystica looked a bit bewildered at my new form and the incredible rage I attacked Ragnarok, beeing a beast my self transforming my own form in communion with these beeings we fought as a massive entity, ready to destroy our foe. Was Ragnarok a combination of hate I wondered as we pushed him down , again and yet again crushing his skull , revealing the innerworking of that hideous machine as the ground literary flew around us.”Shell Release!” ragnarok's outer shell shattered because of our punchess revealing the true creature inside „Hollow God Ragnarok!”” We will devour you !” The many voices said throught me as from my form billion heads formed coming out like snakes, resembling snakes in their design and they opened their mouth biting into the hollow God Ragnarok trying to consume him and inflicting damage , pouring venom in his wounds that were inflicted making him weak. „Hollow God Ragnarok you shall die !!!!” The many voices replied combined with my own voice.,„You Lose Now Your Own Need For Revenge Has Secured My Victory!” Ragnarook replied as suddenly the events took another un-expected turn Ragnarok's body opened up revealing a massive black void that pulled in everything „perhaps it would be you're victory but not today!!” I screamed releasing the connection with the souls , as the form broken down during the sucking procedure with my self beeing suck in the form while gathering the power of the light inside my self. Dissapearing inside the vortex for a short while consumed by Ragnarok. Sasuke quickly jumped in front of Ragnarok alarmed by the situation, looking with deep worry at what happened to me,getting infront of him and ready to fight. „Its been a long time I forgot how strong I really am” Sasuke replied while Mystica smirked „ It looks like that boy was useless after all dying like that” replying in an evil manner she continued gazing on the scene at Ragnarok who appeared to be the victor of our fight as the lights that represented the souls of this forest flown away returning to the trees and all the living beeings that became very depressed because of their loss. The forest was weeping over my death and the loss of this terrible battle. Sasuke stood up facing the enemy , while praying and gathering his light powers „Blessing sword!!!!” he commanded as the light started to form into a brillian structure combining gently into a small whirlpool that than in a flash formed a shiny sword.Ragnarok vanishes with his meal thinking he won ,when suddenly orange flames engulfed his body as the dark god realized he has no control over his powers and couldn't stop the dis-integration process from consuming his own body „ You seemed to carreless you know” I replied telepatically to Ragnarok as his body was slowly engulfed in orange flames. While Yasumi looked at the whole situation "B-Blaze!!!"She shouted hopelessly, observing the flames not understanding why Ragnarok was hurting himself. Ragnarok was consumed in bright flames however by doing that I briefly managed to connect with this beeing and realized that Galamouth corrupted a representation of the natural order to do his bidding. Ragnarok itself wasn't evil but was trying to do his job, to bring decay and destruction in order for a new birth to start. Galamouths madning vision demanded such sacrifices ,as the billions of dark souls that composed Ragnarok were released from this beeing and flown away dissapearing to the afterlife, while I myself was standing on the ground coming out from the orange flames that consumed Ragnarok's remains looking upwards I smiled a bit enjoying my victory but deep down in my hearth I knew it was a sad victory in the end and that I obstructed the natural order of things.The eternal life circle that commands both death and live, the rule of matter that is bound by time is to

someday rot and fall prey to decay in order to bring a new life. This was how life in the material world was always preserved, and this time it was me that defied it being a spiritual the one that never dies cause he's already dead, a walking spirit a demon that emulates a living being cheating both death and life. That was indeed me an eternal cheater a thief of life, the forever wondering criminal that couldn't ever find his resting place. I was nothing more than a ghost that decided to hunt the entire universe interfering with its laws. In a sense I was no better than Galamouth himself who wanted to destroy entire existence for the sake of his own mad plan. Was life and existence different things, yes and no. While everything exists not everything is alive, in order to be alive you must be bound to death, things and beings that escaped death are therefore already dead. They can only exist, like me I can exist in many forms I like emulating material and living beings but I myself aren't alive. I just emulate being alive by creating a physical body from my own spiritual energy. This container makes me and others think that I'm alive but I'm merely existing. I'm myself no longer bound to death having died a long time ago, and despite that I walk among living beings pretending to be alive either to gather resources which I can use in my own spiritual development, or simply stealing something from the world of living mostly an experience building connection and serving God. Spreading knowledge about him or more exactly it and in exchange being allowed to do whatever I like. To play randomly in the whirlpool of God's creation and to test its strength correcting the mistakes made, and tying the knots whenever needed this is my role as the architect of the universe, that judges the construction of reality itself. Being something of a crazy engineer that likes to break its own toy, God can at times be ruthless but on other occasions very loving. One after seeing the true face of God might consider him distant and cold, but in truth he loves every single of its creation and that's why he gave all of us this incredible power that is creation. I myself am just one of many that like me create new experience for others to enjoy, finding fulfillment and enjoyment in this task that gives us so much overwhelming experience of all kinds. Experience that creates energy this experience being the currency of the spiritual, by which all the exchange is governed. Because if there's a will to experience something it shall be experienced bringing birth to other experiences as well. Creating more energy in the process combining known with unknown giving birth to new. The next extraordinary stage that is always being set up. Is always a work of man, spirit and God. The Eternal trio that combined can create true miracles together. Megacivilisation itself being an ideal representation, of a man made concept combined with spiritual energy under God's surveillance, would there be anything that is impossible? . My answer to that is no! Because I was one with God I could obstruct the rules of the material living beings despite myself no longer being material. That is because by doing so I made place for God. A place for God that sometimes is taken over by something that wasn't that important. God is eternal, it will always watch over us. So who and what was I, I was the conductor of God's will that was implanted into my own desires, having been eternal and all knowing God knows all, this is because he or it is always connected to us gathering all information the moment they're produced. So would God not know of my desires? No God knows my desires and through communion with it I can accomplish my desires in the most safest way possible. No harm can ever come to these that serve our creator, for when we decide to become servants. We in a twist of fate become true masters of the hidden world. I was such master that looked at the change he was creating as the orange flames were slowly dying down, releasing the wounded tree's while I sent some of my and God's energy to heal the forest. Taking care of these tree's and beings that gave us this wonderful shelter. Waiting for my comrades to join me and walk down as I stood silently lost in my thoughts. Mystica was the first one to jump down smirking as she sat down next to me „it looks like you're not that useless since you didn't die” She replied a bit menacingly and a bit teasingly looking back at the rest „oh thank you didn't know you care” I replied sarcastically „I don't” she added quickly as we continued waiting for the rest. Yasumi was smiling, slowly walking over "Are you alright guys?" She asked smiling towards myself and Mystica, while I stood up yawning and stretching my arms „yes were fine...but what next I think were lost” I admitted looking around, the forest created a very complex maze, without using any walls to cover the structure. Composition created from living beings produced a confusing spiritual structure and with our enemies gone, complex

magical systems used to sustain this place complicated matters for me , I wasn't able to make a perfect reconesance. „I am fine..” Sasuke replied looking at Yasumi „Im fine too miss Yasumi” Mystica replied and looked at Misa who was lost in her own thoughts. „ah,whats wrong?” Misa replied looking at Mystica, beeing lost in the situation. I continued analizing the energy patterns trying to figure out where the exit to this place would be located. The situation was a bit annoying since we lost both Arua and her little sister , propably seperating during the attack. Since our guides were lost the situation didn't present itself favourly to us, and on top of that a new enemy could attack this place any time. „Arua ! where are you !” I yelled hoping the girl would show herself soon I was a bit worried over the two, hoping they didn't get ambushed."Arua! Aya!! Where are you?!" Yasumi shouted, frantically looking for them. Sharing in my worry ,there was no trace of them making wonder whether the girls didn't betray us , thought at the same time I knew this was very unlikely as I remembered Arua's attitude towards Galamouth. Not noticing any change I decided to move forward hoping that we would find a clue to our situation „ Yasumi ? Guys lets go there's no point in waiting for them...they'll definetly find us in time” I replied understanding the importance of constantly changing our location to avoid another ambush by the enemy. We were in hostile territory after all in a middle of Lord Galamouth battle operations, everything could be used against us, thought I noticed that the bugs were trying to lead us somewhere as these little creatures howevered closelly to us. I choosed to trust my intuition and followed the flying bugs. Suddenly we heard a noice coming from the nearby bushes I prepaired my self to attack, but calmed down after seeing Arua coming our way ,she came out from behind the trees. She was with Aya riding firestrom. Her red wolf. Aya sleeping in her arm. "sorry" she replied while I looked at her „what took you” I replied annoyed by this sudden seperation and looked at her „ All right now lead the way” I commanded and looked back relieved, happy that they were all right."sorry. I must evacuated Aya from war. Huh? Where would you go?" she replied back. While I yawned and breathed out hesitantly observing the tree's and other plantforms, that were growing in this forest „ lead us to the place Galamouth is located” I replied a bit boored.While Yasumi sighed and smiled at the two girls."I'm glad you're alright." she paused, "can I ask you something, Arua?" Yasumi asked her question. It was peacefull at the moment as there wasn't anything suspicious going on ,we waited for a while knowing this was a temporary state. Arua first answered my question "I dont know where is he" she explained making me sight while Yasumi who felt beeing misunderstood rephrased her question. She shook her head."I wasn't gonna ask about Galamouth."She paused, "What did you see inside that dimension?" Yasumi continued as I added „its a very good question , where were you ?” I asked again requiring more information. Hoping Arua would enlighten us about the purpose of her visiting that illusion realm. Arua replied "nothing. The illusion won't damage me. I just...met Katherine"... „ oh so thats her name, we saw her also just right before the attack started but now she's gone” I replied looking around not sensing that girl anywhere. „What is she ?” I asked."I dont know. She is not a part of my past. Also she is not one of Galamouth children" Arua replied. „than propably she was someone hired by the mad lord” I replied, wondering what kinda traps were installed by us. Anyways we found some strange markings on the tree's, this was something odd for me as I walked over to the bark reading them. Noticing it was written in an ancient language one I didn't know yet."maybe" Arua replied and looked very gently at me I showned the green marks on the nearby tree, touching them slowly analising the micro energy pattern. That were slowly emitted from the marking that were engraved in the bark."what are you doing,Blaze?" Arua asked while I was trying spiritually reading and ackquiring information „Im doing a spiritual reading” I replied and observed different information about how the supernatural,material and spiritual were created. Spiritual reading was a very interesting technique that allowed me to understand every language in the world, learning them in few seconds. A spiritual language is a language of thought energies that are universal, this manifests as symbols or images or simple thoughts that are translated by our minds subcionsciously into words that are understanable. Thats why I can write this text in english, in Megacivilisation alone , combined with billion of dimensions there are many languages and customs used. However thoughts or thoughts energies remain always the same, this is the language of the spirits. Wherever I

find a magical energy writing I can choose the method of reading the text, I can try reading it with my eyes, using my acquired language skills or reading it by hearth tracing the thought energies that compose the remnants of the spell. This is also true with other life forms, some like animals can be talked too only in that form. While humans or humanoid like creatures, that acquired the ability of speech like vampires or werewolves can teach me their language as I connect to them and the best part is that it can be done during a sexual intercourse as the both physical and spiritual molding, enables the process to go easy as I receive information about the thought energies and the language symbolic acquired, although the learning process still takes time as I must verbally practice the words and the language learning process is of both spiritual and material exchange thought it takes a lot more faster than a traditional style learning method as I can be a good speaker in the matter of a week or few weeks, though more complex languages may require years of practice. That I wouldn't mind because of the pleasures of sexual interaction. As long as I'm not too distracted by my perversity it is the same with spirits, while ancient spirits, demons or angels are already accustomed to our language having been taught by the humans. God or new forms might be taught using this method to enable a better relation it takes time of course but it's not very hard. Learning spiritual language however isn't easy as it's mostly composed of images or thought energies and in order to be able to effectively communicate in it, we need to practice our skills in concentrating, it's easier for introverts who are naturally more intuitive and able to observe these energies, than an extrovert who doesn't concentrate inwardly but merely on the outside, that's why most extroverts rely on a translated medium instead of trying to feel the energies themselves and have their own insides do the translating. It isn't hard but takes a lot of practice and openness to the spiritual realm, and the ability to understand which thoughts are from the outside and which are from the inside. Which are made by myself and which are a result of me tapping into the spiritual stream, and which one are specifically designated to be received by my self. As in this chaotic exchange a person might actually receive other people's thoughts or energy thoughts created by the negative entities. For example you can hear a neighbor thinking he cannot stand his life or that someone, somewhere will kill someone. These aren't thoughts that are destined to be for you but this is an indication that you did all right connecting to the spiritual realm, my advice would be to not be scared as the ancient texts say, the negativity is the lowest vibration or energy pattern the first thing is to release it in yourself. Then comes the moment of silence everything is normal, and this doesn't mean you lost contact but that you're on a standby for communication if there is something you might receive it in a voice or thought, depending on the form you prefer. I use them all as a proper understanding requires combination as the signals might be one liners. That's basically how it works. On a very basic level. "oh i see" Arua replied while Yasumi was a bit surprised "and? What exactly for?" Yasumi continued asking her question feeling a bit ignored. Arua didn't answer our questions. She saw a blue wolf coming from behind the tree, the creature made itself visible to us being of spiritual origin, it walked slowly towards us. "don't worry all. She is my friend" Arua quickly assured us, while I merely yawned. Yasumi was obviously excited by the situation. "Interesting...!" she exclaimed, while I observed the situation hoping some answers would be presented. The wolf came near. The wolf was mentally giving information was able to connect to the stream due to my ability. "then, what will you all do?" the wolf asked Arua. "what will you do after this? Come in the illusion realm or whatever you want" the wolf repeated the question "All do about what?" Yasumi asked while I looked a bit surprised it seemed I was not the only one who understood spirit language, "Hey Yasumi? why did you were able to read their thoughts?" I teased her, remembering that Yasumi didn't remember anything about her spiritual self, and yet she was able to listen to the way spirits communicated telepathically. "I would like to see that realm." Yasumi's expression quickly changed from interested, to dead serious. "ok. Let's go" Arua replied as we made ourselves ready to move into another dimension, "Do you think we will find any information about Galamouth there?" I asked wondering why we were moving into the Illusion realm. The winds started moving, carrying the leaves and increasing with speed, fulling with magical energy as Arua started meditating gathering an orange spiritual energy around herself, her eyes shined in a beautiful green color, two blue lightnings hit near us being carried by the winds making us feel dizzy, as the

spiritual transition of yet another kind started. Suddenly the backgrounds went chaotic as the ceilings went orange all of the sudden, and the trees started slowly disappearing just if they were erased by somekinda programist, we could see everything go unstable as the ground started behaving like water. Now spiritual energy was visible and everything was out of order, the temperature was a bit more colder, but it didn't bother me, on the skies millions of stars shining in different colors, and planets aligned in some column from a very tiny one to the biggest one that almost filled the entire sky, there were probably a billion of them, the ground was filled by orange and blue lightings that were racing towards their destination. From time to time a weird creature would manifest but disappeared as quickly as it was noticed, a piano melody was being heard coming from all directions but it too disappeared. Then we stood up on a crystal floor sliding down into an incredibly complex spiral as it started spinning out of control, but we didn't fall off the slippery road we were sliding down. The sky was now green filled with falling comets that hit the ground exploding but avoiding us who were lead while sliding into the center of the spiral where a big eye was watching us, once we fallen into it, that eye morphed into a corridor of sort dark with green spots that shined with fluoristic energy, and then we found ourselves in the cosmos observing distant galaxies, we weren't walking remaining in the spirit world going through the Echelon again, the land of Illusion Arua told us about, we weren't walking but been blown like a wind until we found ourselves in a forest with a very bright sky, walking again and looking around noticing the clouds as they lazily moved on the beautiful sky, this wasn't Galamouth's sky scraper anymore we were on a planet „were here the land of Illusion leads here ?” I asked suprised. Noticing some odd familiarity to this forest, it was definitely a bit weird making me think about the place we were in. Now of course I visited many planets so real forests weren't as that un-usual for me, but this place was one that seemed almost too familiar, one that I wouldn't visit for a long time. The wind blew casually, the sun sprinkled its rays into the ground. The light being dyphused by the air currents that made their way in haste. The morning was just starting as we started walking slowly passing some bushes on which blue berries were growing. In some distance from the place we were in a white monumental castle was located, being build on a small lake island. The Castle was gothic in designs, stylized on the ones build in around 10-th century of earth timeline. It was a colossal building structure resembling a huge mansion, heavily armed and fortified. Having just one point of entry through a moss. Without us even noticing Arua and the wolf made their way to this structure, the girl slowly walked over towards the huge brown gates, knocking on them. She headed back to the castle. The huge doors opened, and in a short while entered the structure accompanied with her faithful animal friend. She walked inside treading in the narrow and dark corridors that were lightened up by the candles hanging on the walls, she left the corridors, walking into an open space there she found a mysterious figure only she could recognize "i already tired searching you" said Arua noticing the figure as it walked over towards her. The figure slowly revealed itself to be Galamouth, smirking as his eyes shined in red. „you play your little role perfectly my dear” He replied opening a dark tome he was holding, starting to read it and reciting some ancient spells that were written inside this book. „do you like my little castle?” he asked observing the environment. The walls were covered with green mold indicating that the castle was build a long time ago and stood currently abandoned. "i like it. So why you came out?! I feel bad after tricked them. I thought this castle is mine and you wouldn't lay a hand in here" Arua replied making Galamouth smirk and laugh „what a foolish child even I need some rest from my important work....Im gathering important data here, unfortunately this pathetic world is build only on lies, even this structure was used for the benefit and luxury of the whores that parasited this land, fortunetly their long dead now, pathetic filth” Galamouth replied turning back and walking over to a medium sized apple tree that were standing in the center. Picking up a red apple from it „and they made us believe that it all begun from this” Galamouth replied, throwing the apple to Arua. Catching the apple, she looked straightly at Galamouth's face "who is Katherine?" she asked the mad Lord while he looked at the brown apple tree smiling „oh her? someone I hired she's what you call.....what was that wordassasin, henchman the type that you pay and she's in it just for the money....she has no true idealism in her but had a unique credentials in case of her

skills...well she can be used in many ways as a slave or for pure entertainment... I heard Blaze likes these kinda woman ...so I think I can use her to turn away his attention from my plans” Galamouth answered observing the green leaves , that grown from the branchess of the tree. The leaves were lightly green making Galamouth smirk „ the light in this place is insuffecient just like in this God's world... I do not understand why such a great beeing as him maintains this un-effective illusion, wouldn't it be better if we returned to Echelion ?” Galamouth explained and observed the situation slowly „the current world is based on an idiotic notion of birth and rebirth, which is basically a mindless circle with no evolution” Galamouth replied observing how dimly lightened the place they were was."i won't go out from here again. Never. So what will you do with them. If you want kill them i won't allow that happen" she replied making Galamouth smirk as he faced her „ Now why would I kill them when they're all so much fun ? no my dear I have more ambitious plans for them” He replied and went ahead walking towards a brown door , located in the middle of the garden space, opening them and dissapearing inside „ come inside Arua !” He yelled at her dissapearing. Inside the room he pilled a tons of books, maps and research papers , that pilled up fulling the entire rectangular room. While The Mad lord entered his study and sitted himself down behind a clasic style desk , putting on an old fashioned glasses and lighting up a nerby candle. The room was covered in darkness but was small, having it only this small desk and a victorian era massive bed, which was ornamented in gold and had purple sheets on it, and a brown cloth that covered it from becoming dirty, this all was surrounded by a literal pile of different kinda paper work the mad Lord engulfed himself in this place.Arua following him. She leaving her wolfs and Aya behind. By passing collums that were formed out of books Galamouth has stashed out, while the mad lord himself was writing something down. „ look this charts show the entire chemistry of human nature” He expressed pointing to a circle he drawn in which he drawn the symbols of five elementals „ and here we have the basic elementals water,fire, ground,air and energy... these five compromise the basic outline of creation, and the main aspects of every material beeingit is these small indistictive patterns that create majority of material forms it creates life as we know...just this the five star system is the fundament of it all ...each of this well designed algorith creates a sequence of alternative actions that in combination defines the structures of both the macro cosmos and the micro cosmos...or how to put it in you're little mind it defines both things outside and inside” Galamouth explained starting to draw piramids,which lines were connecting to other piramids, forming a cluster of piramids that camed out from every of the five elementals,eventuallu fulling the entire sheet of paper Galamouth was using „ there take a look yourself this is the graphic potrayal of human and universal all nature” he replied and faced Arua directly „ and yet this model decays...how can such a miracloous and seemingly perfect structure bear fruit to such a faulty design we know as humanity?” Galamouth exclaimed asking his question."what do you mean?" Arua asked „ this is the Draconian model of the universe that combines both the material and the spiritual planes.... a perfect design twarted by un-perfect humanity... the greed lack of ties hindrance or obstruction of spiritual energies the humanity is just pile of rotting flesh that traps the soul in an usseless container... my body and yours is pure astral design composed of spiritual energy... we have no flaws in each other my goal is to remove materiality and move and eradicate humanity....than I shall recreate the Draconian race of titans !!” Galamouth expressed smiling devilishly his face beeing in an insane extasy only he could comprehend. "it is necessary? " she asked hesitantly walking back a bit „ Absolutelly the Draconian race are like spiritual servers they contain the majority of information, they are the Archetypes incarnated into our physical realm” Galamouth explained standing from his chair and walking ,throwing the piles down to make way for himself as he wished to sit down on his bed, creating an even bigger mess „ only by bringing them here I can comprehend the fundamental mysteries of life and to recreate the starting conditions its like pinpointing the exact criteria of manifestation that seems to escape my grasp.. we cannot have an end without the begining” Galamouth explained"i won't helped you. I'll take Blaze and the other back" Arua walked away and was suddenly blocked by white Master who materialized in front of the door. The old man looked at her angrilly and pushed her away on Galamouth's papers, than calmed down realizing that he made a mess „ forgive me my Lord” White Master expressed as

Galamouth nodded signalling that he's not mad by this sudden intrusion „How dare you speak like that to our lord!!” White Master continued but Galamouth interrupted „it is ok White Master let her leave” Galamouth commanded, forcing White Master to make way for Arua who quickly walked to the door. Arua stopped at the door "I'm sorry father. I cannot accompany you this time" looking at white master "I'm sorry white master...if i have bad habit and thanks for what you did to me before"... White Master walked towards her but kept his distance „I can forgive you this time but you better explain yourself Arua” he explained asking than turning around to face Galamouth „and you my lord are you really letting this go ? this impudence ? since were on the subject I regret to inform you that we failed you my master, we haven't been able to locate Dietrich, since the boys mother death we weren't able to establish contact, on the other important points Blaze Master and Dietrich's mother little survent accompanied by others are currently in this dimension, she seem to lead them here...I would estimate there a half kilometer away from this location, Yahweh and the other god's had failed to make any contact, obviously it is our estimation that they retreated to their own timelineDark Master and Enblemo are still in the process of analyzing the anagraphic time sections, you ordered ... we ask for more time” White Master explained briefing the Dark Lord as he looked at him smiling „great thats all right White Master, atleast for now Blaze Master and Dietrich are not our priority .. they cannot escape the un- avoidable just like Arua cannot stop being my pawn, all pieces will eventually fit in order... what about the Dawn girl we retrieved ? are the reports done” Galamouth asked smirking making White Master smile „Yes my lord we done tomography and the resonance had revealed unique patterns in the girls brain...this is a fine sample my lord ,her organical and biological structure reveals patterns of the ancient Draconian race she must be a descendant, and is a well recreated link to the Akashic Records you were longing for... in the girls DNA we found biological imprints of advanced bio-chemical weaponry and spiritual energies not known since the ancient times,this was done by combining the molecules of basic acids and different chemical substances..a truely marvelous feat of inginiery” White Master expressed making Galamouth smile „than I cannot wait to see the reports” Galamouth admitted.Arua admitted trembling "D-dawn ...?!" while White Master smirked looking back „weren't you suppose to leave us” he asked his question smirking enjoying himself and showing her way out. "tch!" Arua left t"i'll lost my magic and the worst part is my soul will vanished" Arua explained making me understand it „ah I see than we need to correct it by defeating Galamouth than will ask God to remove that curse so that you won't dissapear,or get formatted...in fact you won't vanish but simply return to the life cycle its not that scary but we can remove this algorythm from you and let you exist in a similiar manner... hmm maybe Galamouth has some goodness in himself he made it so that the rape event would set you free” I replied and smirked.Yasumi shooked her head."That's just nuts...!" she screamed it out to me „why do you think it is” I replied smiling."It's just weird on so many levels." Yasumi replied looking at me „well here everything is weird tell me exactly what do you consider as normal ?” I replied smirking and continued looking at the skies smiling „all right tell me Yasumi where do you think you are ?” I asked. The Satan the matriarchal invention of evil adopted into the patriarchy, the great serpent and the bringer of doom. An ancient fear of masculine power that was used by the masculine power to overthrow the feminine, and the Whore of Babylon the distortion of the great mother Goddess that rulled over all, the Sophia. Feminine aspect of God the great arch angel Lilianna was reduced into a hag like creature an underminion of the male Satan, evil angel of God that betrayed the male God. When did God become a male nor when it was a female? God as a being above all its creation is a neuther with equally female and male aspects. The mother Goddess and the Father God are one family based on mutual respect for each other none is above the other for they're one. One being that is above all division, one being that is withing ourselves. God is inside us all, we all have an intimate bound to the creator of the universe, the bound which we recreate among ourselves with others, this being known in our language as love. The mere understanding of this fact is the greatest recognition of God. The ultimate mystery of this entire universe and an important aspect of the events potrayed in this story, that both took place in reality and ones own mind. There is no seperation between our imagination and reality, because its our imagination that constructs and improves reality. In spiritual realm that can manifest in material

reality , we are just conductors of a powerfull divine will. Beeing employed in the greatest assignement of the universe called creation. Attraction beeing the most wonderfull tool given to us by our true lord, why do we reject it ? Why do we reject the natural ? why are we affraid of intimate relations when all are one ? Why do we destroy what we want to create ? Are we the ones mis-uning our powers ? Or are we the ones that do not understand our power ? Is that so ? Why do we as humans always think of ourselves to be so inferrior? To be un-important ? When ones life become un-important ? Sadness over takes our hearths because we believe the false truths of seperation. The hierarchical order , where ones are above others , while others are below the ones. These beeing below made to think they don't matter in the grand scheme of things. Made to believe they cannot partake in anything important. Not understand the greatest mystery of the universe ? Lies created by the System that nourishes itself on greed and avarice. Lies that fight creation. There is and never will be any hierarchy above God's will, this beeing said beeing the part of the God's will plan creation, we are a part of the highest universal hierarchy. Everything must fall back in face of creation whether its Material or Spiritual. God has ordained that creation is the most important task one might begun and seek collaboratively to fulfill. No form matters , no place is to small. The work can be done in many ways, in many forms in many structures , in many societies. No position is higher in the hierarchy of the Universe than that of a creator. Thats why for the time the Mother Goddess, the aspect of God was worshipped by all, for the streanght lands it power to the creative mind, beeing the force that enforced the visions into the reality. We need minds, hearths and hands working in an union. As the German silent film „Metropolis” made in 1926 by Fritz Lang. On Earth eons ago from the relative perspective I was now in. Warned „Hands and Mind need a mediator, and that mediator must be the hearth” for when we love the things we create, we become attracted and once were attracted we gain streanght , even during dire times to complete the task. For the Glory of the LORD is with us these that create and distribute our creations so that others might create. This is the sole commadment of God , do not restrain creation. Do not restrain neither by material avarice nor by logic, because even if we do not understand in time we shall posses the keys to uncover these mysteries. The universal knowledge spreads like a deasease but its a virus thats main function is to heal, the wounded minds and hearths of man. This too was ordained by the great heavingly consul you all worship. This is the sparkle you were longing for ! The Polish sparkle that might change the world!!!. A combined effort , of rediscovering the secrets written in all secretive cults, the mysteries of eastern traditions, combined with the Roman Catolic faith, to construct a unique vision of etherly realm. To those of you clouded in darkness on you're mind, these of fragile hearths and tired hands, this is God throught these writings , not the exact words you read on this text, but by mere visions you see in you're heads upon reading these works. The writers are only an imperfect tools in the hands of a perfect creator, these words while not perfect if written with pure hearth surve its purpose and I shall not find anything wrong in any such attempts. For I God that talks throught many of you, ordained this creation calling on it by the power of my divine will. Feel no sadness , no fear to talk from you're hearths throught youre minds , because these words come from me, you're creator and the ultimate master. Therefore the change that was foreseen was ordained, does it matter in what way I choose to work out my desire ? Do You have the power to grasp the entire concept, I dare you to try. Try creation as its the only way you can understand the divine purpose of you're creator. I do not Condemn. Join this personal agenda „ Free Independent Culture” Even if another dares to speak in my name , the personal experience might make it worthy in furthering you're understanding and getting closer to the truth I reside in. If you have the urge to speak, speak it full mouthly for you have no way of knowing why you have that urge, I will not restrain you're free will, and always choose to talk throught yourself and you're experience, this is why you may not always know why you dare to speak of things, yet you must know you must speak, for these words are not always yours inside you're words and you're own creation, how magnificent it might be ! I shall always find a way to speak my truths, I do so in a way you will not be able to discern whether, the words are yours or mine ! For I God will not make anything that will destroy you're creation, I shall only suplement it with my own wisdom just like you suplement me in my own creation. For we are one. Therefore dare to speek and the only way of knowing is that of

the fruit and its tree. If you wise enough you shall know what tree gives what fruit, I suggest study it you who read it. A person clouded in darkness might feel locked but its merely an illusion, a illusion of a wounded hearth, therefore I speak to you the one that locked itself in that wounding illusion, perform that task do not fear nor have any more remorse. Even you have a purpose that you need to define yourself. Find that purpose and believe in oneself, for there is no loss that wounds you more than the self imposed illusion of darkness. No need to fear the outside world, no need to dismiss love, Im talking to you ! the one that writes and the one that reads. Do not fear you're own illusions of hate for these are lies. No need to condemn yourself to the abbyss for there is no abyss, there is and always will be creation and you shall be made aware of that the moment you start believe, the moment you calm down you're hearths. The truth is magnificent so that it shines, this is why you reffer to it as the divine light. Senna open you're eyes, and so the creation of this story goes down the one I reveal the wisdom of God thought my own words. Trying my best to use my own vocabulary to say God's intention. But because I dare to speak for God dosen't mean Im the bearer of the ultimate truth, in fact my truth contains just fragments and need to be combined with the truth of others to be understood after all Im just one single person. Trying to surve the Lord, but am I free from making mistakes, Im not so what I understand is just a tiny fragment, with this kinda knowledge its like beeing given a shining geam, everybody polishes its own understanding of the world. So nones understanding is betther than others instead its made to combine, with each other. So the priest that surves the Church sees only a part of the divine wisdom, the other part is in hands of his enemy, this is made so that the priest be the first one to open his arms saying Im the agent of God. But for that to happen Vatican must stop its trecherous ways and return to its own purpose, for the church isn't a bad creation it was twisted by the lack of understanding among man. There isn't any religion above the others and instead all religion are a part of a singular religion. The Faith in God. Gods religion laid to his people in ancient Israel. That spread throught the entire world forming different religions, sect and occults. This must be combined not destroyed but instead adopted and formed into a uniterally system that will store the Knowledge of God. To understand properly opening of arms is a gesture of brotherly hug, a priest is a person that sais were all brothers, for these that surve the church that way, there is no wrong and these survents are true to theirre commadments and the sacrifice of Jesus Christ. The Treachery of Vatican means war, the church as an institution proclaimed to be the successor of Jesus Christ. His only wish was peace, for has he not die on the cross for that very reason. Vatican and other institutions at times betrayed that wish, provoking wars in the name of theirre religion, and yet they themselves had only parts of the knowledge. How did they therefore claim they know all that is to be known about God ? God gives equally and recieves equally, no matter is the religion of faith constructed here on earth. The fundaments of God's plan will not change, nor shall he dissapear and stop influencing people even if all religions are overthrown. For the belief in God is a streanght that surpasses it all, therefore priests should repent from theirre sins, just like people they lead do so. For they were made of the same dust and are equal in the eyes of God. The vanity of the priests is the worse betrayal of the Church, the vanity of the church leaders to go against creation is also a betrayal. This even includes sex. This is not to be anti-clerical or made into heresy, but is written so falsehood may subside. A God's survent dosen't wish to fight God's church he has no reason to, but why does the church wish to fight these that are working or trying to work in the name of God ? Is the Church affraid that one might not be a catolic devote at all, and still be called on God to perform his magnificent work. This is made so God's work cannot be made into a tool for greed, one cannot make profit out of God and build a material position telling lies, one can only become a creator and try to comprehend the beauty of God's original design, and profit by that in gaining understanding as to how improve ones own life and by this righteous means gain material prosperity, while not taking away others treasure. Without any restrain on others people free will. This cannot be made by telling lies about God, by making it a he and a tyrant, perhaps it would be easier for politician if God was a ruller like themselves, but God is not like them, he/she is incredibly tolerant and constantly patient. Have that not been so this planet would suffer doom trillions time already for we as humans errored in so many ways, and offended God in so many ways tormenting his visions, yet

there never ever be any ill will from God to us for we are in the process of understanding, and what understanding would there be if we wouldn't be able to make any mistakes, how else would the knowledge of ourselves be revealed to ourselves ? How else would we gain any value in our development ? That is the science of God's approach, careful analysis and rectification. Slowly condemning our sins we die ourselves, accepting our inner darkness we grow beyond ourselves evolving ourselves. Growing beyond our wildest imagination. The whole scope of God's creation cannot be easily comprehended. Yasumi herself didn't yet grasp that tremendous concept, or at least I imagined she didn't, looking at me with deep worry her usual sign "I don't know where I am or what this place even is, but hey, lives are lives!" she said. Making me smile as I analyzed and recorded her words in my mind smirking a bit, "okeys dear and what is life ? because we call it existence there's a difference to things that are alive and these that exist, you might say I'm no longer alive but I do exist, for us existence is life and we never die" I admitted looking straightly into the girl's eyes. "as long you exist you continue experience and these both things never end, you will always live on as a trace in human memory, and you will live in the God's realm, furthermore it's not just you're recording but you're soul will continue to experience new things, for we start existing and then are born into the material plane, that's why Arua can die but she won't ever stop existing her existence can be called back to us, and she might live again just in a changed form, her experience will be similar to the one she had when being alive, the change of parameter won't affect her" I admitted smiling and looking at Yasumi. "actually there's very little that does change once you get to know it, the world is still the same as it was, and you are all but few minor details the same as well, this is because what makes us exist doesn't die it's only what we see as physical that dies the biological body that once worn off can be substituted by anything available" I expressed. "you see in truth body is just a training vessel...look at Mystica and Sasuke they're beings that already substitute these vessels with our true bodies, the energy that's inside us, these bodies are unbreakable and cannot and will not ever fail us" I explained. Yasumi looks at the ground, processing what I just said. "Are we all immortal then?" "...yes we are at least in spirit, since you're no longer in your human body I guess that makes you immortal as well" I admitted answering. "Training..." Yasumi asked. "well yes bodies are training vessels for our existence" I replied. "but... I thought..." Her voice trailed off. "You thought ?" I looked at her asking. I smirked laughing at the exchange. "Of course you can think, we think it's possible...but what was the subject of your thoughts" I replied teasing. "Silly you...! Well people usually think their lives are just at that. I mean... when they die, they think it's over." Yasumi answered almost shouting. "than people are wrong I am dead... Lord Galamouth is dead as well and yet we continue to be alive, and our fight has implications in what you call the living world, we continue to exist and we are alive, whatever you prefer to call it, it's only the material shell that ceased to function, there's no need for it anymore" I expressed smiling. "but how is so ...well this is the greatest mystery of the universe" I explained. "Yes, yes, existence..." Yasumi continued. Making me wonder why didn't she ever finish her sentences. "what about it ?" I asked surprised. "Just... surprised is all." She expressed. "well it's ok...I know this ain't an ordinary situation" I expressed. "I'm just wondering..." she paused and looked for the words she needed to say. "Is there such thing as the end of time?" I sat down looking into the skies, the sun shone brightly again and the clouds moved slowly, the white gigantic masses were created from water that evaporated due to heat. This image was the illustration of time. "smiling I looked back at Yasumi. "hey Yasumi can you look at the clouds?" I asked noticing a slight breeze coming our way. She looked up and nodded with almost emotionless eyes. I smirked as suddenly everything she saw stopped for a while, while I continued in her head. "what you experience now is the end of time, time is very relative and it depends on your own perception... as you see now for everything except you the time has stopped...I can even strip your own sense of any feeling of time but your mind will probably create a new sense of time to help you accommodate all your experiences as such time never ends as it reconstructs itself to suit our needs" I explained telepathically releasing her from my mental control, as she noticed the skies moving once more. "you see that's why time never ends because once we start experiencing it we usually find it very comfortable it's a ladder that segregates our experience's so they can become joyful" I

explained. Sitting down on the tree taking a deep breath, I wasn't a material being, thought I could still feel the air in my lungs. It was because of two things first thing I was now a relative being, it means my existence could be experienced by chosen few that were more adaptable in the material world. This is an interesting fact that needs to be explained, how can things both exist and not exist in the same time, the relativity of reality also described as dualism makes it possible. We exist in a world that is a combination of both Material and Spiritual, because the spiritual cannot exist without the material, and the material cannot exist without spiritual. Both realities fuel each other, and both realities are real. Most of you reading or listening to this story are of course living in the material reality. Only selected few can experience something outside that world you see around you. To give you a more familiar design, most of you are aware of digital television. At least you should be because the time frame this story was written in should already contain such advances in technology, so using it to continue my lecture seems to be efficient. The digital television uses a cable to send a stream of signals called the multiplex, each signal needs to be decrypted and recreated using a single box, called a setup box ...or a built-in accessory inside the TV set itself. This is a mirroring of a process that exists in nature in which our bodies are such receivers, and set boxes that decode, divide and decipher signals and frequencies that constitute our material reality. What a spiritual entity known as Demon or an Angel, god, goddess or even God itself does is to simply create a more customized version of such setup box that allows to receive a much wider spectrum of signals and which allows to send out signals to less advanced models, thus becoming noticeable or materializing in the material world. The real genius of God therefore wasn't the creation of structured outside worlds but instead, creating setup boxes that on an internal level categorize and structuralize the signals, rebuilding our reality and constructing the world we live in. Which we then use to perform God's work of creation by creating new signals, even though we might be so consumed by our reality that we don't see it. Unfortunately in order to take advantage of our deception, the System was created, to guard the illusion and keep us safe. Starting to abuse its powers over us and creating a reality where the whores started to control and occupy the societies and beings they were to guard and take care of. Institutionalizing patriarchy over all developed societies. Other point that constitutes our reality is the simple algorithm, known as time, which can be described as a simple step by step process. Becoming a code itself that describes the parameters of each individual reality based constructs and receiving setup boxes. The spirits can access limitless amounts of all realities and signals having the ability to create entirely new realities and dimensions without causing destruction to the original worlds, though having the ability to be noticed or make actions noticeable in these original worlds. This is in fact the Spiritual realm, which is also the material reality. In truth the Spiritual realm isn't separate from the material, but merely borrows material elements and just like a painter takes things from real life world to construct their own vision. That's why at times people from the material world can see or even interact with spiritual beings, though usually it's rare to find spiritual beings like my self that live in a hybrid of both spiritual and material worlds reacting with the inhabitants of both worlds. Yet even this is possible if such fate is desired, the usual method however remains either reincarnation. Or living in a perfect world one constructs by itself and can share with these that he or she loves or feels attracted to. Hence why spiritual manifestations remain rare, reincarnation is a way of continuing our existence and forgetting death, for some it's a valuable method as it also allows to forget all the missed opportunities or burdens. On the other hand the second alternative allows people to live after their death in the exact way they desire without the need to suffer. On the other hand my path enabled me to share the abilities of the spiritual realm with interacting on the material plane, allowing me effectively to return to live in the form I desired. This another hybridic path that's usually chosen by few but enables one, to gather experiences without resolving itself to mundane reincarnation and thus losing my self, or locking my self in an ideal dream world or simply becoming a watcher as I gained the ability to interact on carnal level. However as time flies this method might become more common, as it allows to continue experiencing life in an unchanged personality, of course it's not always desired and this choice isn't very common. It also requires knowledge that is considered to be lost, hence not many people living in the material might

know of this hybridic path, nor they might realize the true nature of the spiritual realm. Currently anything spiritual isn't considered cool, however this process is changing as earth is entering into a new millenium where spirituality might play an even bigger role. This story is a planned step towards the eventual creation the Kingdom of God in Poland and the legendary Sion, it is because of the internet that this work becomes possible, and while this not might be viewed as such this is the first contact between the spiritual civilisation on such a grand level. This is one of many books, movies etc where the influence of the Heavngly realm can be seen, for further resources watch Transformers the Dark of The Moon , the scene where Megatron orders his troops to prepaire to attack the Washington DC ,and prior to the opening of the first moon pillar that brings the wave of the Decepticons into earth.In this scene where Megatron scolds Starscream on the sky an phoenix is vissible. The ancient Phoeinix is a sign of rebirth throught death, the bird died in its flames only to be reborn as an egg. From which a new /the same bird hatched over again. Also the interest with the moon and the darkness is a sign of rebirth of the ancient spirituality , in which moon and the goddess of moon Lilith , the wife of the male aspect of God the first introverted female is a very important aspect. The moon a designated symbol of introversion,spiritualism and ocultism. While the sun is a symbol of light, the material and the extroverted reality. The sun seen as the heavngly body that lightens up the entire skies, was atributed a masculine role and is a symbol of extroversion ,because like an extrovert the sun and its sun is hard to miss. While the bright moon dosen't light up its sky instead preffering to hide in its shadows at times dissapearing completely from the sky. Became the symbol of the introverted and all things hidden from , normal people sights and the spiritual realm is a civilisation that lives in the shadows of material. Remaining very enigmatical and mysterious to the cassual observer. This are therefore the secret teachings of the children of the moon, hidden as these won't be acknowledged but instead remain mysterious and un-heard off. But avaiable to these willing to make an effort to read ,listen and understand. This story requires a lot of processing and thinking to be done. This wasn't written for pure entertainment alone. But this too does not contain the entire thruth but merelly fragments that one can assemble to create the truth,he or she might understand. Meanwhile Arua who was listening to our conversation walked closer thinking."time..." Arua close her eyes. "I don't have enough time" she replied hesitantly."whats wrong ?" I asked worried by her reply knowing that we needed her to find Galamouth.Arua waves her head. "Nothing..." the girl replied. While I stood up and walked over to her „ok where to next princess ?" I asked hoping we start our journey before anything comes to bother us."where...would you go?" she asked making me a bit impatience „I told you already were looking for Galamouth his real self not a residual copy" I answered. „You yourself said ... you don't have time" I expressed noticing a slight change in the breeze."ok...follow me..." Arua replied and started to lead our team I clapped my hands showing the rest that were moving out „guys were going !" I yelled hoping they heard.Arua lead us back to the castle, we wre moving throught closelly monitoring the area, in the middle of this forest there was standing a huge statute, collumn. With ancient faces engraved in it, the names of these sun gods and goddesses was forgotten to the times, but Galamouth used it as a magical soul energy pilar. The collumn was sending yellow energy currents into the plants , the grass was carrying the mini signals sending them to distant dimensions that were connected to each other into a powerfull structure. Tiny blue lightings made small noises that were heard as we walked throught the bushes.Arua turned around while the wind blown into her hair, lifting them up as the girl was gathering spiritual aura, she murmured something but no one knew what she said. Her eyes were blank, I observed her closelly wondering what she was up to.Suddenly a door appeared in front of them. "open it and you will find him" the door was brown, looking at them I closelly approached them. Mystica jumped at front and quickly oppened them,revealing a blue portal inside them shaping into an image or room, Mystica entered the doors quickly. While I was pushed inside by Arua . "let's go" she said jumping to the portal,making the blue energy engulph us as it started shaping into another dimension. „you could have waited?" I admitted while we found ourselves in a new enviroment. „where are we now ?" I replied hoping the others would find us here. We were walking in a huge castle hallway, having jumped into another realm yet again. The grey castle walls were full of medieval coat of arms.

While its floors were covered with green mold. near each of the coat of arms two black knights were standing, these were just armors that were putted on the display for someone's pleasure. The building was huge as we walked slowly through the dark hallways "we are in the hall" Arua replied while we looked around. We noticed weird statues standing near some huge gigantic stairs, that were located in what appeared to be the center of the building. Arua looked at the golden ceiling above the stairs. She reads the stars, that were engraved there, made from green chryzantine jewel like structures, that were forming complex symbols that were arranged in somekinda mystical fashion. "let's go" Arua commanded walking to the stairs, which started glowing in a green aura. „whats happening ?” I asked following her slowly. "dont mind it. Someone trying to make you all afraid. Dont worry. Its just child play" Arua replied. „Is it Galamouth ?” Mystica asked looking back watching the stairs closely. "No! Its the stars!"” Ah I see its just some stupid stars” Mystica answered and giggled. Making me look at her and sigh knowing that she never changes, but than again her personality was evolving slowly.

"I'm not stupid!" there was a sound that came behind one of the weird statues. I a boy in clown clothes came out, looking annoyed. "sigh. See, its just child play" Arua calmly answered. "Arion its not a child! I won't let you wish upon the stars" the boy continued, speaking to us angrily. „humph kiddiess should go home” Mystica answered smirking and walking up the stairs. "we are too busy. We won't wish upon the star. So get out from here, Arion" Arua replied a bit angrily. While I smirked a bit. Meanwhile Misa decided to draw some dresses and when she had finished she decided to make them alive, with her magical pencils. She quickly dressed herself into these new dresses. The kid came closer to us "I won't go anywhere priestess!" Arion admitted showing his tongue out.

The stairs despite being inside the castle formed an entire new structure, similar to Japanese shinto temple's, build from red wood that was decorated with fine gold and silver, yes this place was full of symbols from Earth. We followed Mystica slowly entering the stairs while I eyed what the clown kid was doing, standing powerlessly or obviously appearing to be powerless under this situation. Above the stairs the floor was decorated with multicolored marble, that were putted into nice flowerly patterns. On the edges of the one of these shrine's founding pillar a pot was bowling with green substance evaporating from it. We were eyed by a tiny figure that was standing hidden in the darkness. I could feel the presence but ignored it for a while entering inside the shrine. Above us on the top pillars that were joined to each other by wooden poles coming out of them, masks were hanging, these were the traditional representations of the oni, Japanese folklore demons, with a scythe hanging near each single mask. The Scythe was a symbol of a shinigami, or how I used to know him the grim reaper, or lady death. Small amounts of light was being let inside the structure, while tiny bugs made their way passing us slowly carrying tiny bolts of energy and implanting them into the walls structure. I turned my head around noticing the tiny figures disappearance. Slowly making my way on the silverly decorated eastern carpet that shown golden symbols of lions. Around us there were huge boxes placed, these brown boxes contained magical gifts that were used by Galamouth to power his spell. I was suprised how he was able to cultivate such diverse sources of spiritual energy. Than I noticed the center of the shrine to which Arua was moving closer, a huge golden star was placed in the middle of the shrine. Under it on a red cushion a small silver wolf girl was sitting, smiling and laughing. "so you are in here too? After Arion now you?" Arua asked the girl, facing her directly while we made our way towards the altar. „, who is she ?” I asked looking at the girl. "ehm...she..." Arua bit her lips "a friend uhm i mean an old friend...maybe..." she continued hesitantly while we awaited the new girls reaction. Mystica smirked and walked over towards her bowed down. Walking back towards me she then turned back smiling „, a priestess used by the demons” she replied commenting. „, huh?” I asked wondering what she meant by it. Arua was obviously troubled, so she decided to look away, without saying anything. I knew this meant that there was more troubles installed for us. Arua came closer and whispered, "what will you do? Continue searching or waiting she cast a spell on you?" I merely sighted. „, well that might be fun or not” I replied and was wondering what was going to happen „, looks like we entered another trap” I admitted. "ehm maybe it will be but I'm not sure. I dont want

to face her" Arua whispered back ,while I looked into the girls silver eyes ,, so what do you suggest we do since she already noticed us" I replied knowing that our situation could be a little bit hopeless."dont ever answer everytime she ask a question" Arua replied quietly ,,she didn't ask anything yet" I replied and looked into the distance."i just warned you. Its the way she cast a spell long ago. But now?" Arua shaked her head "i dont know",,all right you there were looking for Galamouth do you know where he is" I asked the question to the girl that was sitting on that cusshon ,,answer me wolf girl" I continued. Than I kneeled down in order to give my respect to this akward priestess. We were in a shrine after all , so I thought it would be better if I prepared an offering. In ancient times it was customary for visitors to make that when entering into these holy places. Opening my grey back pack I took out two medium sized bowls. One in red color the other yellow. Than I stood up and walked back five steps making sure I was exactly five steps away from the silent priestess, I putted the bowls on the ground, and again opened my bag to take out a crayon. I putted the red and yellow bowl two steps apart from each other and started drawing lines ,this was the begining of the circle that ended ,after the lines turned touching the other bowl touching it. I than repeated the process drawing the other half of the circle. I lifted the red bowl and connected the circle from one side to another putting the bowls on the line, than I lifted up the yellow one and done same. I entered the middle of this circle standing between the yellow and red bowls.I waved my energy concentrating on the divine power of the universe. Looking up on the cealing I noticed how the spiritual energy was slowly moving towards my circle.I inserted my hand into the bag and picked up a mineral water bottle I took from earth. I poured the water into the red bowl ,untill the bottle was empty. Observing how the spiritual energy interacted with the water from the bottle. Turning my attention towards the yellow bowl I used my spiritual energy to create flames. This was a diving flame of the holly spirit that I than kneling down transfered to the yellow bowl. Standing up I faced the silent priestess, cautiously analising her moves. Both the Water and the flame were transferring energy ,sustaining the flame in the yellow bowl. The circle gradually lighten up in a beautifull mesmerazing green color. Releasing a green aura into the surrounding air currents. I moved my hands more more rapidly ,performing an ancient ritual dance.Bending my knee's and waving , forming a fist and than opening my palm streaching out my fingers. Moving my hands in a karate fashion but much slower in order to not loose the energy flow. I placed my hands above the two bowls, making circles with my palms , while blue smoke was forming out of the water and the green one arouse from the orange flames. I was perfectly in the control of the two smokes,throught my spiritual body I was adept in controling the electrons that formed both the energy and matter. Allowing me to reshape any surface at my will. I draw the two smokes together mixing them slowly like a tornado, moving my hands gently as if I was petting the smokes both clouds continued coming out from their respective sources, and both of them retained their colors as bright light was coming out of them in rays. I continued to slowly mold the two pillars of smoke into a two colored one. Forming a eastern dragon out of it. The mythicall creature opened its eyes as it was flying above my head. Green and blue at the same composed from these two colors, and changing it at will. The Dragon was circling above my head creating a circle mirroring the one on the ground. Which continued glowing in that beautifull green color. The Dragon opened its red eyes and looked at the priestess ,flying above the oltar looking on the girl .While I left the circle returning slowly back to the group. The Dragon growed a bit but not in an evil manner, it was just manifesting its streanght. It staired back at me and the group.The great lizard like dragon directed it attention on other ornaments in the shrine. The hidden figure revealed itself to us ,walking slowlt towards us from behind ,I turned my self and noticed the tiny creature. He was the size of a human maybe or maybe a dwarf ,looking a bit grotesque like a little imp, while the boy from behind joined him standing and looking at us angrilly. The tiny two figure took few steps in front of Arion and bowed respectfully before us ,,I see now why the Lord of Darkness Galamouth finds you annoying, that was an interesting presentation you did there Blaze, my name is Enblemo Im one of the Galamouth's survent ...and it makes me proud to do my lords bidding, I was created for this very thing, you see Blaze for us born from darkness that can only emulate life surving is the only way to survive , therefore we cannot allow you to interfere with our masters ambition" Enblemo expressed

as I felt two other energy beings materializing in the shrine. The two old Men one dressed in white robes similar to the clothings of the ancient patriarchs, and a mirror image but dressed in black were walking closer. „Allow me to present my coordinators the one dressed in white is called White Master, the one dressed in dark is called Dark Master...they're Galamouth's right hands, consider it an honor that they came personally to dispose of the problem you pose” Enblemo admitted, while we continued gazing at the new comers. Mystica quickly took interest in these new figures and walked forward to Enblemo „hey imp you said you serve Galamouth than bring us to him I have some un-finished business !!” Mystica screamed out as her ravens filled the space above angrily flying down and flying between us and Enblemo annoying the dragon I created. Who went above near the ceiling and from this distance observed the whole commotion. „I'm not an imp and you will die here !!” Enblemo screamed out ... „You fool they are immortal just like us” White Master expressed, walking closer to Enblemo who bowed in response to his own master's harsh words „forgive me my master I forgot about that” Enblemo expressed apologising. „This is a battle of spirits we will test your group's ingenuity” White Master answered looking at us. While I looked a bit and faced Arua „what now ?” I asked. The colors of the floors slowly changed colors, the molecules were discharging different electrons, that were changing combination these electrons created matters, by combining into different structures that's why possession of these skills is considered the most greatest treasure of the universe, the one that can control electrons or energy is truly immortal. Of course it's not a task one might do without co-operation with different beings that specialize in forming and directing different energy patterns just like mini programs, that united create an entire operational system on your computer. This ancient wisdom was gradually forgotten over time, buried deep in the sands of the material reality. The power of God contains this knowledge that can create miracles, that's why we should praise the one and true God, that controls all the other gods who are merely forms he chooses to manifest or angels he employs. God is a master of everything in this world, however his mastery would be better described as co-ordination, it is that co-ordinated the energy flows on the floor we were standing, by using many beings that always remain connected to him. Just like a computer or terminal connected to the network can send important data, so too God receives these information and sends his commands to these beings that then re-interpret them according to their needs. The pink energy currents formed into different shapes and structure that were manifestation, of this impressive magical tool that spawned and tied with each other different dimensions. This magical tool was God. Galamouth's madning ambition was to use God itself, to negate itself but this was impossible because in God there's no negation. God as an entity exists in everything, everyone and everywhere connected to its creation at any time. Every creature having at least a small concept of God and what it is, thus each being perfectly capable to restore God, being God itself, for God's essence is truly in everyone, everything and everywhere in all forms and in all signs, everywhere God talks at random occasions celebrating the insane date of life and death, where only life exists. Galamouth being a part of this dance as well. In the hands of both Dark and White Master golden crossiers appeared, forming out of air, the molecules combined because their minds sent electrical impulses into the molecules that were floating around, programming them to form into magnificent golden, intriguingly ornament crossiers. Which they knocked on the floors two times. Sending blue rays at us forcing me to push everybody out of the way, as Mystica's ravens descended down attacking the two men, who used the crossiers to cut the ravens in half. While the explosions caused by the rays being heard in the distance. Mixing with the squeals of these shadow ravens „you dare to hurt my little ones ?” Mystica asked smirking as her eyes glowed in the red „You underestimate the power of darkness gentleman, let us the true face of horror” Mystica replied as she started moving incredibly fast appearing behind Dark Master and literally hitting him through, with her bare hand moving it up like a sword cutting through what appeared to be flesh, but making Dark Master only laugh as he reformed himself from air after being cut down „I cannot be killed so easily dear” he replied looking at the Mystica who jumped away in the speed of light „so I can see that” she replied returning to the group. Enblemo rushed at me forcing me to evade the little demon as I clapped my hands sending energy waves at him, that made him fall of course, I then moved my hand forward my self moving

backwards and shoot an orange energy beam at my enemy. The ground started shaking, the shaking caused by the explosions that ripped the floor forcing me to avoid these energy blasts and fly into the air, sending lightnings and mini tornadoes at Enblemo. Who swiftly evaded them while the girl and the Dragon, observed us curiously. Her eyes sparkled a bit and a green aura was seen coming from her. Some strange shadows appeared in the floors. Along with small amounts of water, the shadows started drinking the water sucking it inside themselves. The water evaporated. While Misa rushed into battle trying to attack the girl, but was deflected by a purple electromagnetic shield, and jumped back running away. The priestess herself merely disappeared. Arua sighted „Why the situation become like this? Zipper!“ behind her appeared a spiritual zipper. "fire storm and dark shadow" Arua continued summoning 2 horned white wolfs that started walking towards her. "I order you fire storm. Burn enblemo! Dark shadow search the priestess" she commanded as the wolfs rushed attacking Enblemo, who merely sent some burn lightnings and jumped away being chased by these magical creatures „impudent brat!“ he screamed and sent some white energy balls at Arua. Meanwhile I was busy trying to attack White Master with my lasersword but he only avoided my strikes „Is that the best you got boy?“ he mocked me „Don't underestimate me!“ I screamed, knowing I wasn't doing as good as I would want to. Fire storm ate the white ball before it attacked Arua, making Enblemo annoyed as he evaded some purple energy shoots. Arua continued shooting these purple shoots at the imp like demon who was jumping away in haste "sigh i really hate Enblemo. Fire storm absorb his energy" she commanded and the wolf appeared behind Enblemo, who turned away and moving his hands into a triangle sealed the wolf's mouth, rushing at Arua herself. Trying to hit her with some kinda magical combination. The Dragon was surrounded by the dark ravens, which Mystica sent out earlier and observed the situation slowly. While the Dark priestess giggled being controlled in some trance and remaining invisible as Shadow continued his search for her. White Master used a powerful blue energy current that he summoned to push me back, while I shielded myself with a silver like substance I was able to materialize, to absorb the blue energy. White Master walked back and looked back at Dark Master, they both united their powers, but were interrupted by the dark strings, summoned by Mystica who started running trying to tie the two brothers together, but was hit with White Master's crozier and jumped away burning „what a poor child“ Dark Master commented, making White Master angry „don't sympathize with the enemy you old fool!“ White Master screamed at his brother, thinking he was too naive to understand the threat we posed to their creator. "what the-" Arua screamed avoiding Enblemo whose red eyes shined when he tried using his entire power to blast her, instead hitting the floor that was shattered in the massive explosion and the two were covered in dark smoke, Arua concentrated summoning the other horned wolf which came out. In a blue aura entirely made of water. "Aqua Marine!" she yelled. Over hearing the conversation of the two masters, Arua decided to use it to her advantage and screamed "i like dark master better than white master" obviously making white master a bit annoyed, as he answered with firing a powerful energy blast at her „silence!“ he yelled. Angered by the fact Arua was trying to use Dark Master's softer side, both of them being created from the same source, represented different sides, White Master was more forceful and colder in his dealings with the surrounding world. While paradoxically it was Dark Master who was given a more warmer hearth in some kinda twisted joke, Galamouth made to entertain himself. "Dark master why white master angry and so scary? Is he stress because he not as good as you? It is the way he show his jealous?" Arua continued. Making Dark Master smile and laugh a bit „Well you know my child, its because he really cares for our master and takes his duty to seriously“ he replied before being hit by his brother in the hand „Shut up you fool can't you see she's distracting you!“ White Master answered angrily. „Really? my brother? you need to learn to trust people more“ Dark Master replied. While White Master sighted „You hopeless fool“. "white master! what Dark Master said was true. You must trust people more" Arua replied. While White Master turned around looking at her with disgust „trust these inferior beings...did you lose all of your senses Arua? these are just tools used by God's to control the world“ White Master replied and smirked. "yeah I'm a fool. It is because Galamouth never give me the true freedom. So i decided to collect some fun" Arua replied looking back at White Master.

„Freedom is just an illusion do you really think you can decide about things in this world ? Do you think such a tiny intellect is capable of understanding the choices to be made, we all are just pawns that magnify the glory of our only creator Galamouth ,nothing more than simple algorithms given forms you're no more real than all of us a single speck of energy, a light that fades away. You wish to decide without even being able too ? and what would you decide little girl ? The world is not your playground anymore it all belongs to Lord Galamouth he alone may decide our fate...it would be wise if you remembered that” White Master answered Arua. „are you sure brother ? there are many things that live independently from the ambitions of our creator” Dark Master replied. „nonsense such way of thinking will lead you to abyss nothing is independent from our lord ! Now my brother destroy that girl !” White Master screamed madly. „No I wasn't taught how to take life unlike you !please reconsider White Master, I think you're the one lacking the understanding of our Lords will” Dark Master Screamed and stood in front of his brother. „How dare you speak that to me Dark Master I am your brother and we are one ! we were created from the same source ,we share the origin together, connecting to each other we are the closest to one another , and together we manifest our true potential to serve the Dark Lord Galamouth , don't be tricked by the sweet words of the inferior flame” White Master expressed looking at the whole mess. The tiny particles of colorful lights were flying around us , dancing to an enchanting song. I stopped looking at this new strange phenomena. Wondering what was now happening ,the lights were summoned by the dragon that was flying below the golden ceiling. Its eyes in green color as it was observing the battle being waged below itself. Growling and sending out these lights , it tried to act as a peacekeeper, but was partially ignored. Just like its existence wouldn't matter I felt a bit sad because of this fact. „are these tears ?” Mystica asked wondering as she grabbed one of these lights in her hands, and it vanished. An evil grin appeared in Arua's face, "I always know that I cannot be freed. I'll always wish he would take me where I belong. Where I can feel that I'm just an ordinary girl who doesn't know magic, spirits or God exists in this world" Arua admitted looking at White Master, who laughed and continued gazing at her with his sinister expression „ You should feel lucky to be considered our Lords Pawn” he replied , not wanting to acknowledge Arua's sorrow, rejecting her views that were against his own grand doctrine of life. Where Existence is just a key fragment of the ultimate reality that cannot be accessed by ordinary or average experience. Hence he mocked Arua's childish dreams. "lucky? Am I?" Arua laughing. "don't joking around!". White Master moved swiftly and hit her belly throwing her away. „ you're just a nuisance” he continued as he used his force punches trying to eradicate her, while I rushed into the battle attacking Dark Master who avoided my attacks. Arua's servant the white wolf protected his mistress, attacking White Master "why?" Enblemo avoided Mystica's attack trying to run away, as the demon girl tried to use her shadow tentacles to strangle and impale him, Enblemo however swiftly avoided entanglement. The masses of air started moving faster , entangling Dark Master who was preparing for an all powerful combo attack, gathering energy from the atoms of the air that surrounded him creating an invisible thick wall that repelled my attack, my blue energy the only thing revealing its structure. Sucking its power Dark Master was able to use it against shooting at me , forcing me back. „damn it !” I shouted rushing away from that place as my enemy was preparing powerful spell. Red energy beams shot from the ceiling engulfing Dark Master ,who was able to create a whirlpool , controlling the energy spell with an amazing mastery. Making even me look at the show with awe. Exploding the energy bomb covered large distances in amazing speed making me paralyzed with shock as I was engulfed in this painful miasma concentrating my powers on deconcentrating the energy waves. Dark Master rushed quickly at me attacking with his crossier dealing huge blows to my body as I screamed and moved my hands forward shooting energy waves in his stomach. Falling back and barely escaping this painful entanglement. Even though my body was made of energy , I was able to feel the pain in all of the electrons that formed my manifestation. Just as if my body was made from flesh , spiritual beings are capable to control energy in such way that it recreates entire proteins and my body not only looked similar but to a certain degree emulated its sensations, this being said in normal attack I was able to turn off the pain sensation at will. However in the case of Dark Master's spell it were the electrons

themselves that were destabilized and in need of restructuring, responsible for the unbearing pain sensation I experienced. I tried to breathe regularly as I avoided shoots from Dark Master, him being quite determined in putting me down, I moved my hand forward and in some kinda duel fashion fired power shoots at him, forcing him to hide behind the column that was blasted to pieces. Crumbling and fading away. Meanwhile Mystica used her ravens to try and hit White Master, who used a silver shield to suck the energy laughing mockingly at the blood child's attempt. Mystica rushed herself sending few kicks into the shield, jumping in very advanced speed, making it crack and then explode shocking White Master. Who watched at the situation in horror as the shield's silver shard flew away into the distance. Enblemo noticing his master's troubled situation, avoiding Arua's wolf summoned a pink lightning and sent it to White Master creating a pink shield. Running away quickly barely avoiding being bitten by Arua's wolf. Mystica walked over to the pink shield looking at it angrily. White Master smirking with superiority „worthless creation what can you do now?” he asked mocking Mystica, who continued to look at the shield smirking herself as her eyes shined brightly red. Indicating she was charging up spiritual energy into herself „I wouldn't trust in that weak shield of yours if I were you” Mystica replied gathering dark powers, making White Master look at her with disgust „what are you planning to do? you wretched shadow!” he replied angrily. „I'm the Blood Child of Bezezebub the Lord of Earth realm, the king of the new Sion and the God child of Ball, you shouldn't underestimate my powers” she replied chucking. „I bet you're Lord didn't tell you that? a shadow formed by one that is to become a living reincarnation of a God like Lord Balzebow can wield powers of the third dimensions, ranging with the abilities of such as yourself who are also demonic shadows” Mystica replied. White Master merely rebuked her angrily „how dare you lecture me! don't compare yourself to such as I we were created by the real personified God!!!” he screamed making Mystica laugh as she continued her lecture „you poor things weren't even told that..... my my how unbecoming of a master that is ... the real gods and the true one God are collective consciousness formed from us all, the energy that created all of us is the God...there's no such thing as a personification of a God just a being that is chosen to represent and act as a God in the material or the spiritual realm, if such a being accepts its role it is imbued with the collective consciousness powers and if it doesn't have a form it is granted a manifestation that closely resembles the one used by the collective consciousness to communicate with the individuals, that individual becomes then an acting God or Goddess and is called the child of God or the children of the gods...but since the real Gods are just merely our collective consciousness united from all living things how can it possess a personality instead it used the combined personification of all the living beings” Mystica replied smirking. „your master is just one that decided to serve the greatest shadow, the negative collective consciousness that some call the satan, but in no way that makes him a God, he's just a mere shadow that went too far and needs to be dealt with” Mystica expressed in her intimidating voice, hoping to scare White Master or making him doubt in their master. Mystica looked angrily summoning her entire powers, golden miasmic forces quickly engulfed her, forcing out into the air heating the area incredibly, turning everything around them into a fiery miasma. Making even me look with awe on Mystica's attack, while trying to avoid Dark Master's lightning bolts. Mystica's shape turned into green color covering her physical appearance as she was trying to connect to the forces of nature I summoned earlier and create a powerful combo spell, unknowingly unlocking Yasumi's true personality as the girl was able to wake up from her earthy persona. Meanwhile

Misa attacks White Master with her ice frozen spells, sending two ice spears that were easily deflected by White Master, forcing Mystica to retreat, the demonic girl observed the energy currents connected to White Master that were sustaining his shield, moving her hands and opening her paw she released darkness into this magical circulatory, engulfing the multi colorful lights and redirecting, reshaping the entire spells structure, forcing White Master to jump back. While Mystica herself smirked evilly. The effect of Mystica's powers, sent shocks to Yasumi's mind which removed the boundary between her earthy persona and her spiritual side, temporarily. Pain shot up throughout her body as it broke, and she leaned back on the wall nearby, and almost falling unconscious because of it. I avoided the attacks of Dark Master, hiding behind a pillar that was disintegrated by

green whirlpoolic energy, the energy consumed the pillars from inside destabilising the pillars and breaking their construction. Forcing me to flee and shoot out some grey energy hoping to capture my enemy in the silver plasma I was trying to form, I was impaired in these skills trying to avoid being hit, and healing myself from that pain. Dark smoke formed from the broken pillars temporarily covering the area. Enabling me to hide myself and get into protections of Mystica's ravens, being relieved that I managed to escape avoiding some random blasts fired by Enblemo, who himself was tried to hit the wolfs that were pursuing him. „what a hell” I commented docking the energy bomb and moving fast towards the wall. Walking besides it with my back turned to it I tried to hide my presence to remain unnoticed and was seeking a way to escape this battlefield. Noticing the nearby stairs I quickly made my way, carefully and observing the situation. I moved towards the wall and bitted my hand till blood came out, I touched the wall and allowed the blood that were coming from the wound touch the surface of the wall „ some may call me a coward but I have no time to play games” I commented while my essence was entangling in the form of this blood, with Galamouth's energy patterns that were forming this structure. My electrons connecting to his electrons, allowed me to access a rich depository of ancient knowledge as images appeared in my head, different symbols and unrecalled time flashes, pictures from times. Books, ancient texts and entire spiritual insignia's became known to me in just a matter of few seconds. I was using my spiritual gift to spy on Galamouth's energy patterns trying to deconstruct the systems he used. This was a powerful war of vast resources. For the time being I wasn't being hindered with my information gathering. Meanwhile, Yasumi sat motionless on the ground while leaning against the wall. Her long dark hair spilling all over her face which prevented anyone from seeing her expression. Engulphed in a weird trance. Back at the walls I was experiencing mental flashes, showing spheres arranged in an infinite number of ways. Both orderly and in chaotic fashion. Being pushed like tiny balls. This was representation of the matter. Galamouth's research lead him towards the esoteric mysteries of life and foundation of life, the single impulse that by manifestation created rotation that at different speeds formed and represented a different calculation. Allowing for the foundation of more advanced energy forms. Speed as time manipulation was introduced by God to further our realisation. The never ending self desire which we call life. The melody of the spheres and its connection to the theory of the strings, some concepts even I had trouble with understanding. Galamouth managed to implement his desire in different time shifts forcibly deconstructing reality, by altering time manipulation. He used the light to emit false particles. Desinforming the collective consciousness about the proper algorithms of the creation plan. I managed to correct that by disabling the false protons embedded in these selected time frames, and rearranging the collective consciousness memory banks to avoid further confusion. Then I made my peek into structural and organical databases, I managed to get access to. „ He made a lot of effort to tamper with these I'm impressed I hope I can collect the entire energy patterns and diffuse them” I commented while taking a look around whether my work wasn't discovered. Galamouth implemented dimensional bombs made by vaulty energy shifts of logic. A pure abstract phenomena crafted out by using God's own defense mechanism. Despite the fact that it appeared to be an abstract phenomena, it could have real life consequences. Deconstructing the Material plane and creating confusion. Similar to the one made by the introduction of the Nephilim race in ancient times on earth, before God was able to reconstruct the designs and separate the two worlds by a distant time frame. Allowing the two races to flourish in their respective realities. Galamouth's intentions were however centered around clever dimensional booby trapping. That would deconstruct reality, and make sudden realisations available. Spreading confusion and chaos, while itself not destroying life the altered realities would continue getting entangled into crisis situation, resulting in a massive reconstruction, system overwrite and restarting. Which on universal levels would be comparable with an massive apocalypse. That's why the faulty structures, needed to be remade and I was one of many legions of Ascended masters assigned to this dimensional war effort. Repairing damages done by irresponsible ambitions. While others continued the fight. Lord Galamouth's interference while for myself one of the largest disruptions ever battled with was just one of many ego driven lunatical attempts. He alone was able

to create damages that needed zillions of repairs to be done. By specialised spiritual units, both human and non human. This was a true battle of the spirits that was being waged under the cover of this event, I swiftly directed the many units allocated to my self by God by establishing the link and communication, with the remaining Ascended masters, using God's as a medium, exchanging informations and pinpointing the locations of anomalies. Unlocking hidden agenda's and reconstructing the strings of Data's Galamouth corrupted. The others were disabling the enemy forces, resending and disabling the enemy's spiritual framework. We managed to conceal our work with swift and motivated action reorganizing, the cellular DNA of the micro universe, which itself constructed the DNA of the cosmos. Galamouth was observing his own safe place, un-aware of our reorganization. I was trained in these arts by Alpha and Omega and learned this experience, over the course of my self imposed existential mission. I was able to direct the flows of communicative energy and to cancel the entire plan, but needed to use Galamouth's spiritual console and get entangled with his spirit, or in human terms implant my realisation into Galamouth's own will frame, decentralizing his obsession and allowing the mad Lord to return to the unitarian connection with God, similar to the dualistic model I use myself. „Sometimes I see reality as Illusion a never ending dream” I commented to myself smiling. Meanwhile dark aura took control of Yasumi, when she was struggling with her sudden awakening. Trying to control the negative flow of energy that overtook her body. She saw a dark figure manifesting in her mind, and heard a voice „Blaze is doing something to my spell kill him” the voice which Yasumi identified as Galamouth's ordered her to act. Over taking her will and forcing the girl to move. At first Yasumi tried to struggle and to break away from his control, but to no avail. She was too weak at that time and the place was very unstable to merge her personas. She could not do anything but obey, otherwise she'll break and be his puppet for all eternity. Galamouth was well aware of her vulnerability and sought to use this as his advantage. Knowing that it created a problem for me to attack a friend. Galamouth sought to create more confusion and despair, dark snakes appeared in the temple crawling slowly towards unknown destination their eyes were secretly observing Yasumi. Being Galamouth's informants, Yasumi hesitantly moved towards her target. She stepped one foot at a time, the world spinning around her. Everytime she places a foot down, she could feel Galamouth's power growing and enveloping. For her it seemed like a suffocating blanket, and only added to the torture. Galamouth's intention was to cripple her with all his might, create the most unbearable pain one might endure. He was a true master of sadism and torture capable of performing the most wicked deeds. I turned around and got out of my trance, noticing Yasumi walking over. She approached me while still being controlled and tortured by Galamouth, almost wishing for death. She drew her swords weakly and lunged at my neck, yet in her mind she wanted me to run. For even in her weakened state, her movements were still sharp and accurate. As if nothing had happened. I merely walked back knowing, there was nothing to fear. She slashed my arm and it was bleeding heavily, but I noticed that she seemed to avoid fatally injuring me. Smirking I enjoyed this cruel treatment a bit. Thinking about whether to use this situation to my advantage, visualizing the rapes I could inflict on her, my twisted mind was rotating in ecstasy but was quickly knocked back to common sense, by Arua who appeared quickly saving me. "you must fight her but don't hurt her. I'll try to take Yasumi back" She replied trying to grab Yasumi's hand. But before that, the great impact knocked her. Make her flying and landed hardly in the ground I closed the opened wound, ending my grotesque spectacle. That I often used to taunt who ever was foolish enough to attack me. Inside deep inside myself I grew to enjoy some form of sadism and blood shed, not in all cases thought but at times its justified to squish some moral whores. Still even after saying this violence never leads anywhere, it can be fun and at times necessary but it isn't the best way to do things. Thought even in this form I at times fallen into mine tantrum states, and no one would like to be on my bad side, after all I destroyed entire worlds or atleast I think I did. Because if beings like me could use their powers freely the entire universe might cease to exist, thats why at times Im only made to think I did these things. Since I live in the world of my own I can do whatever I want and I can even resurrect destroyed world. No destruction is real, were just made to believe that something is destroyed at times. But if you start walking the path of God you realise that there's always creation. But even thought I at

times used force and abuse I only did these things to teach my victims, later befriending them and making them my allies. Overall I preferred to stop my thoughts there as to not hurt Yasumi and slowly moved back observing the situation. That rapidly progressed to its new stadium, I knew Galamouth's intention was to divide my small group, my self not having intention to sustain it. I was slowly thinking whether I should leave them be and move on with my mission, but decided to stay and wait for them, what fun would it be if I made my way to the target so swiftly, what need was there for haste anyways. In this place we had all the time we possibly could need, there was a lot of time to use my brain cells and think a little. To rethink my own strategy and develop a plan of action. While I found Galamouth it would be better if I knew how to take him down. This was truly an introverted war, a war where witty strategies are valued it was more a fight of psyche than of a brutal force. Naturally it would be much more advanced than anything I came across. A rare event one that surely deserved to be remembered in annals of my own personal world history. In my travels I rarely could be involved in matters I would express as being extraordinary or spectacular, these kinda things that we might call adventure don't ever happen out of sudden impulses. They take time to develop in real life. My usual experience would be something of mundane energy gathering and occasional erotic or porn story. Even rapes aren't a common thing as being on the move and need of hiding my true nature from inhabitants of certain less advanced spiritually civilisation require me to be a bit more discrete. So what was Blaze Master's usual role, that of a judge like an in-game tester, archeologist, magical researcher and teacher. At times I would act as a common criminal if that suited my needs. Or would permit me to obtain something I would desire. At times however things would get intense, I would answer a call for help get my self involved in some manner, or simply stay longer in a certain time frame recruiting more contacts and allies and teaching. In certain worlds politics often constructed interesting things and made it worthwhile to get involved. Since I don't have a destination I could enjoy whatever I liked in these worlds why I do my own God given assignments. That's why while observing the situation I intended to enjoy it more. Meanwhile Galamouth made her attack at me once more. This time, he completely took over and stabbed me at my chest. Forcing me to retaliate, shooting a white beam of light that threw her away. „Arua how long will it take?“ I asked regenerating my wound and reading my self to battle. One of Galamouth's snake launched a sneak attack on me but was burned down by the dragon I created, making me turn around to see the creature disappearing in the orange flames. While its companion was silently observing the scene and decided to withdraw, I my self moved quickly returning to the battle field.

The girl recovered immediately and ran towards me, this time, her swords glowing and seemed to emit a dark aura. I decided to avoid being hit as I didn't like the idea of being stabbed with something like that. My movements were fast, but hers was quicker. And before I knew it, I was already stabbed at my chest and stomach. The tip of her blade has already passed through me. Then she pushed me to a wall, knowing the tip has dug deep in me and the wall behind me. A sharp pain flowed through me. It also seemed that I was poisoned. It couldn't kill me, but it could torture me. Then a burning sensation started from the wounds, adding to the pain. Matrimona's servants are nothing to sneeze at. She was the one who picked all of them. She knew their abilities and weaknesses and nurtured them until their power can be nearly compared to the war gods. I coughed out some blood as my cell programming wasn't turn off, my body behaved like a real human body, every cell created incredible anguish and quickly I understood that these sensations weren't easy to overwrite. The pain becoming unbearable as the poison Yasumi used was infused with antimatter that slowly ate away parts of my energy cells, negating their effects. „What the fuck!!“ I screamed opening my hands and blasting a light energy into her face, trying to escape someone that could literally kill me, and force me to reborn into a lower form. I rushed quickly trying to escape panicking. The thought of losing my powers even for a moment didn't appease me at all. I was terrified for the very first time, black holes were forming into my energy cells sucking and nullifying my electrons that composed my body. „So this is death !!... Damn you System Whores !!“ I screamed spitting out blood and trying calm down my emotions, quickly activating a link to God and trying to perform repairs on my cellular structure, before Yasumi could start her

attack a new. Misa used her magic to create a dark gust of winds ,which she swiftly formed into a dark tornado using it to attack Yasumi, helping me to get away. While I managed to undo some of the damage.Misa quickly attacked with ice tsunami , stopping Yasumi in her tracks. However these weren't the only tricks the little girl had, as Misa merely grinned and sneakily summoned a spell book ,which she holded in her arms ,then she read spell from that magic book and made a powerfull explosion spell blast in orange flames blasting all of us out of the way, making me wonder about Misa's sanity.Unfortunately Yasumi saw that I was panicking and used that weakness to her advantage and before I knew it, she was stabbing me one after another. Her speed was blinding and and I could just feel myself weakening.My body seemed like a ragdoll, only standing because of her attacks that was supporting my body.Blood and organs were everywhere. Yes it was disgusting. But it was a living hell that time.Fear, pain and suffering was there. It seemed to have no end. Even with me trying to regenerate my body, it left like there was no hope.She was faster than me.The only things in my mind was my life, will I really turn into a lesser being, the fess of losing my power which I've gained because of my hard work, the pain, and the ecstasy that I so wanted. It was a confusing twirl of thoughts and memories.Then. All of a sudden, I heard Galamouth's laugh, distracting me from most of the things in my mind.Anger quickly aroused in me making me tremble „why you ? you think this is one of you're foolish little game I will destroy you” I replied as the laught multiplied and made itself louder „how foolish you are Blaze trembling for you're life like that” Galamouth expressed, making me sick. Hearing his voice in the middle of that fake torture that somehow over took me, Galamouth used my own desire as my weakness. The desire to be humanlike while retaining immortality. To feel everything and to not loose anything were the reasons I trembled so much, shooting out lightings trying to hit Yasumi , to inflict some damage into her hoping some sort of a way to defeat her will manifest. I felt the incredible hopelessness of this situation. My mind was full of depressive thoughts which of course I didn't want to believe ,thats why I choosed to struggle till the end. I refused to give up that easilly.Even thought I faced loosing my own sanity.The swords only seemed to take in the attacks and nothing happened. Only even more torture.And as I felt darkness taking over me, I noticed her eyes. They were in moist and glassy as if she had been crying. Then I realized that she too was in horrible pain.Both of us were victims, not by Galamouth but by our own desires.

Galamouth only showed us what our weaknesses can do to us. This however made me angry, because the Lord of Darkness had so easy access to our thoughts, the nature that I used as my advantage for the first time was used against me in such manner, faced with this situation I was contemplating a terrible choice. Something cruell in order to save my self. I needed to eliminate the obstacle and as I runned away. I understood that only a miracle could save both us I turned around and moved my hand concentrating my entire aura and infusing it with darkness, creating sharp blades ,by literally squishing the atoms and molecules together I shooted this energy directing at Yasumi's hearth. My intention was to kill her spiritual self and return her to the material world. While of course it wouldn't be killing her in reality but just merely transporting back to her former life. This was the same that would happen with me althought , having doubts I intentionally made my blades miss the target. Suddenly the recently silent piestess joined the battle herself, suprising me as I avoided Ice nedless beeing shot at me from an un-expected direction.She used her ice magic to build a cage around me , trapping me in the ice prison as I directed my powers into termal regulation melting the Ice walls.While I was trying to melt them, my hands were sudden incinerated by long sharp daggers which nailed me to the wall. Another one was sent flying to my heart. Falling down to the ground I screamed.Trying to stand up and run away. Mystica's ravens surrounded Yasumi trying to confuse her and striking some blows, enabling me to leave safelly and hide behind a pillar, were I tried to rest gathering my streanght. Yasumi herself was trying to avoid Mystica's shadow birds , running quite a distance away from me she concentrated on Misa, quickly standing in front of the little girl wizard, and blasting a red energy ball at her.She deflected the balls of energy with her swords, and the aura from her swords covered her as well, then she disappeared out of sight for a moment only to reappear quietly in front of Misa then hold her neck and raise her in the air. Meanwhile Mystica herself was avoid beeing stabbed by magical swords, beeing

summoned by laughing White Master who smirked being safe by his now green electro barrier, Mystica was forced into elaborate pirouettes in order to avoid being stabbed, dancing as if she was a prima donna. This of course made her furious a bit as she frankly emitted out a green energy waves trying to diffuse the barrier. Dark Master fatally stabbed one of Arua's wolf making the creature scream and evaporate into dust. Making Enblemo himself breathe out relieved as the demonic servant walked over to his master. Yasumi heard another creature's pain and she staggered for a moment but Galamouth controlled her once more. Tightening his force grip on her, entangling her with his own dark spirals and forcing her mind to acknowledge his impulses as master command „Now Yasumi do not hesitate use your power to bring death to these that oppose my will !!” He commanded smirking evilly as he observed the entire battle from his hidden chamber. Eating fruits and petting his own shadow birds as they squeaked. He then turned his gaze to the sheet of paper on which he tried to draw a portrait of a woman, but her features looked awkward and out of proportions. Making the mad lord angry as he looked at his work with some hint of sadness „why can't I draw this picture ?” he asked himself looking hopeless. He breathed out sighing and continued observing the battle „no matter this scene shall entertain me” he answered himself and continued to pet the dark bird. Around him a creek of wine was floating and he used an golden chalice to fill it up helping himself with a delicious drink. Smiling and enjoying the qualities of this fine brand alcohol he observed Yasumi's reaction knowing well she was bound to his will. In her mind, it was still a swirl of pain and confusion, but she was getting used to it, her body felt heavy and she was almost feverish, but still, the mad lord continued to make her stand up despite feeling weak. Though for her enemies it isn't obvious that she was way weaker than she's supposed to be. Back in the battlefield I was finishing healing my self and breathing with relief just as Misa had her throat choked by controlled Yasumi not being able to call out to anybody for help, tears covered her eyes and fallen down on the ground hitting the metallic floor, the only sign of the little girl's helplessness. Inside her mind, she could feel her hand holding someone's neck and raising them in the air, she hated to do it and wanted to hurt herself as well, but cannot do so because of his control. "Anybody.... please stop.... me..." We're the words that was swirling in her mind, and desperately so. Ironically her words got to the mad lord himself, he himself not being entertained with the brutal display decided to stop controlling Yasumi, noticing a change in the patterns on the energy field he was monitoring he decided to revert the energy he used controlling Yasumi into something more useful, thus her link with the mad lord ended and Yasumi completely unaware regained full control over her body as the dark aura left her instantly. However there was more to it than we were at that point aware, God itself in its energy along with Alpha and Omega, Yahweh and Belzebub interfered recharging a powerful energy structure and attacking Galamouth's energetic patterns, this being the true reason why Galamouth had no time controlling Yasumi and why the dark energy causing me so much pains suddenly miraculously disappeared. The patterns that Galamouth used to torment both of us were of great importance to Galamouth and therefore he couldn't no longer afford to waste them on us, having already performed his tests, he employed them in the energy battle that was being waged elsewhere. Meanwhile Arua who observed the whole situation by passing Mystica who was trying to defend herself from a shockwave made by White Master, she moved quickly "Ring of Fire" Arua shouted and suddenly fire surrounded the room, making the dragon growl as fire was his domain and forcing Mystica and White Master to stop their battle and take cover, Arua's body started burning in fire. No. The truth was she wore clothes that appeared to be made from fire. "Sorry Yasumi maybe it will hurt" she replied and concentrated her powers into a heat ray, which she slowly directed onto Yasumi, controlling every single molecule of this fire, that engulfed the two of them making me observe the spectacle from a safe distance. Arua could hear Galamouth laughing in her mind as he took notice of her actions „I see...so you fusion with phoenix didn't you ? foolish girl. you always sacrifice your soul "

"You never care about me, so...I won't care what happens with my soul! Phoenix! Fragile eternity!" both Arua and Yasumi burned in the blaze forcing me to take control of the flames connecting to the spell she used „Foolish Blaze you amuse me too much, you're trying to stop the little girl from sacrificing herself ? Is it compassion Blaze ? or are you afraid that with her death you'll lose the

chance to find me ? ...this intrigues me you're quite the hypocrite there mr Fallen one, you who deny yourself trying to oppose me the master of darkness.. Blaze Master you act as a child that's hopelessly lost in an entire new world, not realising the realities of this world you think this is all a game....a negative being in complete denial you cannot change the world without changing yourself....well it's not you who desire any change, you simply like to balance not able to decide about which path you wanna follow, you toy with everything in which you find amusement. Truly interesting one ...definitely the most foolish one I ever met a being shrouded in darkness and covered in light you're neither of them, just an apparition of nothingness a complete void that pretends to exist ...Blaze Master you are nowhere and nobody you cannot take anything for yourself !!” Galamouth shouted in my mind, making me angry „ Shut up I'm at work now go away and leave us in peace ! I'll deal with you later !!” I shouted out telepathically „ these fragile bounds you call friendship are truly nothing do you really think you possess anything ? that there is anyone in this whole existence that cares whether you are here or not? You are wrong Blaze accept this you fool you're just everyone's victim abused by anyone and thrown out like garbage no body cares no body will...you're unnecessary...things that are unnecessary should disappear, fade away not leaving a trace ...and you will disappear along with this decaying world there is no place for you in the great plan” Galamouth exclaimed mocking me „ Shut up !! just be quiet and don't say a word, you're the one that is useless here, you think your plan will bring you salvation ? !! What is that you're trying to get !” I screamed out being annoyed by the mad lord's words „ nothing you need to know !” he explained and continued to concentrate on me as I was trying to get ahold of Arua's magic. "Don't do that Blaze...you wish me to die? Don't worry I won't die easily. So please don't you dare to hold my magic!" Arua screamed to me and I sighted „ all right” I disconnected losing the connection with both Arua and Galamouth and went back „ all right I'll step down I believe in you” I expressed. Looking at how Arua was controlling her spell. "Thanks and one more thing. Please take care of my body. I'll be back as soon as possible. " suddenly Yasumi screamed and Arua herself didn't look both fallen unconscious. However Yasumi returned to normal waking up after few minutes. Arua made a seal on her body that appeared as a yellow circle with God's eye in the center. This seal prevented Galamouth to possess or control her again but it had a huge risk, Arua was temporary out of balance I jumped quickly and retrieved Arua's physical manifestation, unlike me she used a mortal shell to contain herself. However I decided to use my energy channeling skills and to put her energy balance back into the form she used, to reconnect her presence with this world. I channeled a green energy into her flesh reconstructing her damaged cells and calling back her spirit, normally after using this spell Arua would be unconscious for several days however I was able to summon great powers, from the divine realm and channel them into Arua's soul summoning it instantly to her body, and awakening instantly rearranging her hair. My healing skills went beyond normal beings abilities I was able to understand grand mysteries, on a level comparable to a Son of God and Galamouth himself. I also realized why Arua was afraid of dying Galamouth made a material shell in order to control her and limit her powers and that's why Arua was unable to manifest in her full potential. Arua was a supernatural entity bound to the material body Galamouth created, out of his own blood being thus the true blood child, it was the same with both Masters and Mystica prior to her death when Galamouth was freed by Dantalion, it is only then that Mystica gained her freedom. Although to what extent was Mystica a true blood child and a spiritual being remained unknown, as she herself holds mysteries to my own past and the path I chose. I knew Mystica wasn't an ordinary being herself being created from the higher order, the one that during her life was the wife of the prophet. I myself being a trinity of a demonic count of Chaos, a fallen Angel and a son of God all in one, combined into one being, it's rare to have one being to be all of these at the same time. I wasn't a compilation of three beings but instead one that belonged due to his abilities to three different classes. I was born as an Angel that fell from the heavenly realm in order to experience humanity, becoming a human I then returned to the spiritual realm as a Human, fallen angel and a demon at the same time all these were appropriate to describe as I never lost any of these characteristics that gotten entangled, also my fall didn't mean rejecting God I merely fell because I connected to the human realm while still being conscious of being a divine son of God, a status I

my self never rejected combining this with the characteristic I gained I became a fallen angel,demonic self proclaimed count of chaos,and a son of Godwhich allowed me to form a pathway through unknown combining all these characteristics into one of immense understanding and spiritual wealth. It is possible but rare and often takes a lot of wisdom and time its hard to be able to entangle such opposing qualities , the son Of God characteristic allowed me to be above all other traits and perform God's will. While using my other traits to perform this work in a way that cannot be reproduced by anyone else as I had a Quatro identity , the Identity of the cross one of the rarest , simply putted being a son of God allowed my self to be a supernatural god my self, meaning that was entitled to sit in the gods conference and to interact with gods on a level equal and not as a messenger. I was one of the most powerful entities although there were still more stronger than me and more experienced in spiritual matters. Also I didn't use my title as god since I didn't gather any followers thought I connected with others on a more personal level so I still have many friends in the universe and lovers which is better than having followers my spiritual number is 4. This is the number that manifests my true divine potential I observed how Arua was waking.Arua opened her eyes,"uh...what happened?...""are you all right?" I asked standing and breathed out ,, you told me to take care of you're body so I did...you should be healed now" I explained and looked at her , while the ground shook a bit."um...yeah...maybe..my body so weak..." Arua replied and I took her hand and smiled ,, don't worry Ill keep you safe...lets help Yasumi ok" I replied and observed how the battle progressed ,, looks like neither side is winning" I replied sighting a bit because of the un-easy discomfort it gived to me. This whole situation was a bit vexing to me."uh...ok. I cannot summon spirits for now" Arua replied still regaining her powers, even though I healed her it took her a while to regain all of the stamina she lost, I didn't had any intention in joining the battle for the time being and thought it would be best to observe it from the sidelines ,,lets just observe the battle for now, by the way where's Aoi" I replied noticing that Misa was walking towards us smiling while Yasumi remained confused ,, we gotta move a bit or we will get targeted" I added."she's fine. I sent her away..." Arua replied ,,oh yea I forgot sorry" I answered. Yasumi sat on the ground and was watching the three of us from a distance. She was annoyed with herself. Maybe even hated.She wanted to apologize but couldn't bring herself to do so because of the guilt she carried. The guilt of letting her mistress' enemy take control of her. But no, it wasn't her mistress' anymore. She's been gone for a while. ,,hey Yasumi come over here" I shouted silently trying to yell in a way the girl would hear me, while the enemy won't. I didn't want us to be discovered here while Mystica was doing her out most best to keep them pre-occupied, against her will. I was bit annoyed with her hesitation as we were standing near the pillar ,, What are you doing come over here before they notice you !" I shouted modeling my voice into a silent and calm one.All she managed to answer was a weak alright. Then she walked towards them wearing a pained expression. "You should have let me die there...""Thats not an option all right" I explained observing the complex battle that manifest as lighting and bolts, we were a far distance from the magical battle that took place, the interdimensional shrine was gigantic and very complex ,and the covering violet mist that however near the shrines floor made things more obscure, the clouds as always were carrying purple energy bolts and in a distance we could hear some explosion and squeeches made by Mystica's shadow ravens, a white flash of energy was also visible after a while ,,they're getting quite serious there" I commented."How can I atone?"She ignored my comment and seemed to be feeling guilty. ,,how can you atone what ?" I asked suprised noticing the lightings attacks going our way I moved quickly and grabbed Yasumi, as the white flashes were drawing near ,,quickly pushing her down letting them pass above us, while we lied on the ground ,, You want to atone you can start by not making problems and listening to what you're told...its freaking war if you haven't noticed and a little bit of discipline could be usefull... now come on lets make our way to that column where Arua is standing, we should keep our guts together all right" I replied and took Yasumi's hand dragging her slowly as the lightings shoots were shoot above our heads and exploded somewhere in distance hitting a wall. Three rays of light formed in White Masters hand as he slowly made his way, holding them tightly looking like a saviour while Mystica only smirked and rushed at him , hitting his body and running through his stomach with her hands.Only to be

repelled a blue energy wave that quickly engulfed her body making her disintegrate in blue flames as she was screaming. Only to reappear next to him as White Master regenerated his wounds „ Its very unlikely we both get fooled by the other acts” she replied smirking and jumped back engulfing herself in green aura while moving back in incredible speed „ than let us see who's power has a more devastating effect” She commented laughing, while the surrounding was engulfed in a blue mist that started to create a wind, the blue smoke was another spell that was being summoned by the blood child , it gathered energy currents that manifested as colorful lights the very same nature White Master was using. Making him angry as he understood he revealed a new strategy to the enemy, he himself tried concentrated to disrupt the flow of the enemies magic, however this made Mystica to mock his attempts , her skills were much more fluent than these of his trying concentrating , this old man or atleast an manifestation of the old man couldn't win with the spirit that was masquerading as a 9 year old girl. Mystica's eyes shined in red as she was completing a powerful spell attack. When everything was gathered the multicolored rays combined by fusing with each other in a very intense molecular level. Creating bright flashes of light that formed into a powerful current of energy, the whole procedure looked like boiling and created an small bubbling sound. Electrical currents went their way on the floor hitting White Master who tried to avoid them and canceled them using his staff. „ curse that creation...is he trying to reform the energy patterns” White Master mumbled under his nose and made his way towards the little girl trying to attack her as she swiftly avoided his attack giggling „ now now don't be so impatient old man” she commented and jumped back in dancing manner „ soon the dance of darkness shall begin” she replied continuing to dancing. The devilish princess of illusion concentrated her mind on a very powerful summoning spell and suddenly in the blue mist shadow people started walking , materializing on White Masters eyes. Who looked at the girls efforts amused „ so the little girl knows summoning ,these pathetic tricks won't defeat the greatest necromancer that ever walked in the spiritual realm” White Master commented, grinning and shooting out his aura into the distance forming a skeleton army out of it, slowly the violet rays materialized into white bones and started moving one on one. Growling the ancient army made its way towards the shadow people, striking the shadows and making them disintegrate into nothingness while White Master laughed amused by his easy victory „ here we go isnt that scary enough for you little girl” White Master commented and looked at Mystica standing in far corner of the battle field. Mystica only chuckled observing her shadow creations disintegrating, noticing how the dark particles formed on the white bones, in reality the shadow people were created from anti matter and their substance converted matter into energy and returned it to universe, making the skeletons bones crumble as they slowly dissolved, disappearing into the phantasms they were created from together with the shadow people. White Master noticed that Mystica was capable to foresee his moves even before he planned them. Showing a rare sight of admiration „ well done my enemy this will prove an amusing battle” White Master expressed Playing like little children they choosed to enjoy their small parts in this grand battle of chaos created by Lord Galamouth. The fluids of darkness full the stage as billions of eyes were suddenly opening, the observation tool was being used by forces outside anyones imagination, the spirit world itself a living and mysterious being observed the commotion, every atom and molecule was a witness transcribing all the data in the forces of creation themselves. This battle was yet another creation, a spectacle that was to be played so energies could be gathered. Lords Galamouths madning ambition was being used by the creation itself to full the world with new project to rapidly expand the creation it was necessary to create massive scale changes. This was God's own doing the implementation of these insane ideas into Galamouth's mind, the allowance for my self to follow through my dreams this was all a grand scale mystification employed by the master creator God itself, God who in its true structure was us, each of us combined into single mind, or more precisely we all were fragments of the divine mind form that happened to be our creator. Everything that ever existed was a form of GOD and so everything that ever happened, whether it was good or bad was for benefit of God. Its only required that this game expands and expands in madning circle into many dimensions into many scales. This was a process no body could control even the divine consulate of gods themselves , who were in fact merely pawns. Again the question

revolves around the nature of the true mastermind, was this war fought against God ? We were the ones that were fighting on God's side and yet God was also helping Galamouth. Our enemy or was Galamouth a co-creator. IN many cultures around the world and creation itself , no matter whether they advanced or not the opposing forces hate each other locked in a duel of forces, this was the story of the age long Light vs Darkness conflict that is supposed to be waged in many supernatural realms, and even so it is not so in the spiritual. Darkness and Light are merely siblings that walk their different paths even if they argue so much, they aren't enemies. It isn't the spiritual design to have these forces combat each other, in fact it's only when these forces are brought into the material realm and forget about their nature that they become enemies, willing to spill each other's blood. Yet among us spiritual beings that are manifestation of our minds imprinted into the material plane in the form we ourselves choose, with our only intention to serve the collective consciousness and to gather different kinds of energies, these oppositions don't make us enemies. Merely co-creators that went away in different paths in fact the original darkness is merely the material world. After all to most of us especially these beings that never were humans it is flesh that doesn't shine as it's not energy but what humans use to call substance this is a very intriguing concept to most of us, of course I who myself was a human could understand the human world best and thus often times I choose to work with the supernatural element of human nature, as well as with humans themselves. I also prefer when spirits assume a more humanoid form as this allows me to express myself fully it seems Galamouth chose the human interface as well. At that time my observation skills were limited and my perception was probably intentionally clouded, and yet I am reporting this event as thoroughly I can to you , that is correct each of you is an individual manifestation of God, and this is how you all that chose to read this are involved in the events portrayed here. After all reporting to God and submitting myself to it is merely submitting myself to all natural powers that rule the world, to you're kind, to all living beings. To all creations that walk on many planets or swim in water. To all energy, to all computer networks such as the internet I use to circulate this story. When you aren't submitting to money , to the luxuries of this world and any authorities than you're submission is to God itself, cause only God holds power above you and you work for it. One of the most powerful universal organisations called Kingdom of God , is an organization that gathers people and beings that serve God. Its magnitude cannot be understood by humans, and even if it looks small and insignificant. This organisation works effectively controlling the structure that tried to oppress it , by using tools such as the Three great Popes of my era Pope John Paul II, the German Pope Benedict XVI , and Pope Francis although the fact these tools were just faulty humans, and with regard to the whole operation a tiny part. By using these three God was able to regain a slight control over the Vatican it was enough to say that it's still in charge. For many people this trio were a very powerful spiritual influence to many they were the road to salvation , used by God as a sign and not through their own influence, for what they never understood their symbolism was the key. The Three elders that visited the Christ and the Three elders that oversaw the work of the institution that oppressed humanity for almost twenty three centuries, was to be a sign of upcoming changes that were formed by God itself in a way very similar to this war being fought by us. In human realms many people saw the true terror of war and battlefields being fought in the skies, a bomb hitting a Syrian town. The deaths and release of many people from one state to another, these all events were partially influenced by the events of this bizarre war that we were fighting into the depths of the energy world itself. It's astonishing that a war of energies and minds can have such influences on the life of so many human beings. Despite the fact these events were one of the many tribulations that were always necessary , this was also very similar to the time of my birth when an authoritarian regime was being thrown down by the forces of liberation called the Solidarity movement. Which was created by an enthusiastic patriot called Lech Walesa, but was the story true, was that man a hero ? Or just a tool of forces that despite looking innocent quickly took over the country ? When the Soviets the inventors of communism were taking over they also were claiming that they took over for freedom, to introduce bloody terror in the name of an idea , a plan that with good will could create a perfect society perverted by the greed of money became synonymous of blood. Even the flags used by the Soviet regime were a statement that advised

everyone this is an oppression that spills blood and so the freedom and equality became imprisonment and betrayal. The same was the case with democracy that was supposed to become the rule of people, capitalism was in fact a rule of money, greed and lust. The very same powers that created Nazism and Communism before, the so called free world was an illusion portrayed by mass media controlled by greedy corporations. The truth was that in the world of Pope Francis Christ was crucified a second time, The Christ's second coming quickly turned into despair. For in many God was dead overtaken by the lust of money, people were no different than cattle that was locked in storage rooms waiting for the day of eventual meat extraction. No freedoms, no freedom to speak no freedom to have sex love and tolerance perverted, by foolish ideas that was created to make an offense. The rich continued their carnival of death, hunger was to accompany the festival of luxury. The war must have been overtaken and in doing so every force was given liberty to perform the tasks that were necessary, therefore Galamouth's own vision was no more wrong than the vision of anyone else, and yet a strife had begun a controlled war that only appeared to break out of that control. These were the borders that had to be destroyed, these borders that never existed. Only in human mind, for only a human mind is capable of creating these borders. The nature itself has no need to limit itself, in fact all limitations are self imposed and counter productive, these limitations never bring anything good. Love cannot be defied an Auspice cannot be denied. The lies created by the System and its Whores were becoming the tools of oppression on an un-imaginable scale, such confusion that spread like a virus could threaten the entire creation, or could it? It was yet another illusion. For God could never be denied its own work nor it would ever fear anything invented by human minds, the System and its whores proved an amusing toy for that eternal child, and so this passion created strife to correct the wrong doings of man. Everywhere we made everything wrong not following our understanding and listening to the advice of others we became weak and slaves, this was and is a nature of man, this is why the human race is an inferior state to many. This is a state of covering one's own eyes, there is nothing to see, humans live in such denial that they deny even their own existence and this is their true hell the oblivion they fear. They disappear because their minds are reborn into something new never becoming anything else unless we ourselves will otherwise. But if these same humans have a desire to become than they shall become, the negation of everything has a devastating effect on human wish and it only is required to wish to become to cheat death itself and be reborn in full glory, there was always an ancient way to follow every single dream up to its end, which could be the beginning of an impressive journey, we never know what we truly are. We never even do understand such small aspect of our nature the true grimoires of magic are the ones that are written, books and merely books the one that understands this simple truth has power over all magic that was ever created. How can one write this simple fact so that it will be understood, the art of writing is a lesson long forgotten in the future worlds. A written sign used to be a holy symbol, a divine sign of reverence, going against the written word was said to be a crime, this is how written law was created. Why was language given such divine powers to judge man? This was because of the very nature of a written word, a sign is eternal it never changes it can never decay, it remains in the place forever. A thought that creates such signs is therefore a key to understanding God, God master the creator is in fact a very skilled writer that creates the stories of every single life. That's why writing itself was considered to be an art, and the written word the highest form of culture, now forsaken by the mediums that could portray images. In the worlds of the future only few will know how to read and write despite the fact it will be taught to all. The correct way cannot be revealed in such a simple manner. The true writer isn't the one that is afraid of an error or mispronunciation, it isn't a person that writes with the accordance of the laws, a writer does not write for gain. Not for money a writer is only the one that makes signs and images appear in others mind. He is just a messenger conveying a secret hidden treasure a message beyond even himself. A tool a writer can choose to perform these tasks are the forms he wishes, for himself or others, despite using his own ideas a writer isn't just an author. A true writer is a performer extraordinary by sheer excellence portraying a vast imaginative mind and the full grace of the creator, this was how these books were written in the past, and this is how truly write a compelling story. Only in such manner one can use the magic of imagination and to

create things in otherworldly realm. WE ARE GOD we are the masters, culture is our domain and we create, events and examples, legends and portrayals it is we who decide about the end even if its decided for us , we alone stand in the grace of the lord one mighty creator. We are the minds of all who posses wisdom. The battle continued at its own pace as the magical energies culminated in the storm. The resitute of energies was gathered to form a compilation of unknown proportions this battle was far from over. Suddenly green lights started shooting at us ,forcing me to engade our new attackers. The crystal spheres that appeared, beeing formed by Galamouth's dark powers, despite himself avoiding direct contact. He actually enjoyed tormenting me as he had the crystal spheres quickly engulfed in flames forcing me to direct both my hands at them firing a massive energy discharge, however the spheres weren't even damaged and instead absorbed the energy I give to them firing it into tiny rays that forced me to use my powers to deflect them. This dangerous light show could harm a living thing , but I used my powers to direct these lights into circles by controlling their atoms, making sure to use the impact of the speed into the spheres attacking them on molecular sphere making them explode , but not destroying any of the four spheres ,which started slowly attracting its particles and reforming on my eyes becoming engulfed in pink flames. Forcing me to make a run for it , but the spheres followed me rather quickly and knocked me to the ground forcing me to fire some blue energy currents as they merely multiplied ,making me wonder what kinda game was the mad lord playing with me, I concentrated on my opponent and was studying its structure realising that the mad lord was using crystalline structures combined with light hologramy , the very same I was using to manifest my self physically , I stood up quickly and rushed at the spheres with light speed, making sure to use my powers to absorb the spheres as I smashed them, and taking their atoms into my self I was soon confronted by Galamouth himself who used the spheres to channel energy directly into me . I saw images that were visions from distant past, combined with modern to me images, I saw Galamouth in his young times sitting under the tree in Poland. These images made an incredible impression on me , as they shown part of Galamouth's motivation that was behind his mad ambition. Poland during the November uprising and the so called oppression by the Russian armies, the nobility that was composed of traitors, the grim aristocracy and extroverted chatter a lot of talk but nothing ever came from it , miss Emilia Platter that idealised heroism to such extent she neglected family matters. Hero's that died without reason, because of some argument started by the nobels. The Truth about the tragedy of many families that lost their dear ones in unnecessary military struggles, money abandoning freedom, and the Pope condemning the uprising. A flash back to another pope making a nazi salute. The money deals being made against the freedom of Poland and ever lasting corruption the reason why the nation that was the wall between the Western and Eastern civilisations fall, was betrayal. Poland was a country betrayed by its citizens , by the very people who build her, but she hidden a even worse secret as the nation itself was merely an illusion established by the system whores that were to rule over the vatican. Poland was established on the ruins of the ancient civilisation in a way that mirrored the spanish conquista of Azteck, the images were shocking but not unknown to me, however I was able to witness just how much distress it caused the young Dal -Wing. The images switched to forests and I was able to clearly recognize them , these were the ancient forests of Poland in times before the church lead conquista, the pagan symbols and peaceful tribes and small village like structures that were hidden in the depths of these seemingly hostile dark forests. The culture and civilisation of ancient Aryan's that were almost direct descendants of Atlantidians, and their gruesome end when the forests were burned by the medieval crusades lead by a group of greedy German catholic priests, holding a blood stained cross in their hands and claiming they represented the ONE TRUE GOD, while at the same time almost literally kissing the butts of the medieval princess, who couldn't stand the barbarity of the east, an Image switch to Galamouth's times, where a priest was sprinkling holy water on young man that would be killed during the battles of the November uprising. While he himself would later be shown drinking wine with Russian tsarist general, while the men were executed by the tsarist army, a war that couldn't be won was provoked by the system whores for entertainment and justification. As they quickly passed new laws and legislation that would protect them but not their victims this was the rule of the western

civilisation ,the system whores and their object of devotion the decaying gold. That was made by producing blood stained coffins, each coffin had a golden bar on its top, and I could see billions of them aligned in a huge pile, they were dancing with the rich whores that were laughing at the decay they created. Suddenly the coffins opened and the dead came out of it , to the panic of the whores that were eaten by them, and my visions ended as I felt tiny explosions coming from my body while Galamouth destroyed the atoms he made inside me ,tormenting me with incredible pain as I came back to reality. I was able to get rid of the atoms and burn them in flames freeing my self from his influence ,, that wasn't the best idea” I commented noticing that the ground was shaking and while being a bit bewildered I was wondering did I return to the same world. I made my way rather quickly by passing the columns hearing the noises of the battle realizing that I was still in the same dimension. While running I noticed shadows coming from the material dimension, and I could see how the two worlds started interacting due to energies intersecting and going through, mirroring each construct. This battle was happening on the other side despite the fact it could be felt by people in the material realm. Meanwhile the Young red haired journalist was walking down the corporate corridor, surrounded by the golden walls with ancient inscriptions and embedded on them, that described the glory of the material world , she slowly smoked a cigarette thinking about her nervous attacks trying to figure out the reason for this strange behaviour, she understood perfectly well that her boss won't tolerate any such behaviour, failing to cover one of the most important events made her being viewed as a traitor by her peers, she jeopardised the whole event and she understood that she could get punished by that. The smoke of the cigarette went into the air creating circles and she felt something strange overcoming her body, while walking she then looked forward and noticed a little girl dressed in a witch costume. Covered in the white mist, created from the smoke of the cigarettes, the journalist was smoking. Misa was running trying to avoid something and unknowingly crossed the borderline between the two worlds, the fragile line that separates the world of matter from the world of energy. In this advanced time the border was easy to cross since the both worlds developed in unity, seeing a spirit running off somewhere by having a holographic gaze into this unknown reality of this spirit wasn't something that would appear strange to this journalist. After all she herself made contact with these beings numerous times, envying that free spirited child that according to her was now in a better realm, she continued walking feeling a small chill. She then started to wonder did these feelings have something to do with the mysterious spirit realm. A long time ago this journalist's ancestors were in fact shamans and powerful warriors, but this was long ago and she knew most of this from ancient fairy tales. In this modern time people of the corporations understood and were taught about this mysterious second world, of mind and energy and divine principalities at schools. They treat it the same manner as learning about the customs of the ancient foreign lands that appeared to be stopped in time. Science went so far that in this world people not only knew that God was real but also that demons and angels existed, and the population wasn't even afraid of it, in fact the spirit realm was ruled by Yahweh the God's interface who was treated on the same level as the elected states and the elected leaders of the material world. The Megacivilisational government has a special governmental house for God's and other divinities to decide about divine matters that were treated as serious as the elected material leaders where. The Megacivilisation Guardians were a special spiritual unit that was under the orders of Yahweh in a bit dictatorship way, but despite that these forces co-existed well with the material Megacivilisation army and Police and worked in tandem to resolve incidents. Whether they were on spiritual level or material. The society of Megacivilisation was two dimensional, and there were two Powerful universal states existing with both worlds so closely interacting that ordinary citizens didn't even know the difference. It would appear funny to lower civilisations hearing the news reports about mages waging a war in a distant galaxy, and then the commentator switching to everyday stock exchange or announcing that there was a powerful material terrorist attack. Or how about schools that summoned different characters from history to have them tell about what they did, now call that a presentation of history. Debate with Adolf Hitler over the world war II , even he didn't expect that civilisation would develop so far. The UBERMANCH he dreamed off was made by a spiritual peaceful force, and not war and dominance. The demons and

other spiritual beings would often walk on the streets in Megacivilisation, that's assuming they weren't somewhere else in time and place. Because Megacivilisation was just one universe that became the ultimate reality. But even this reality was growing and evolving, this society was the most powerful social structure ever built, but its own corruption and the mis-use of the system could at times prove catastrophic. Hence why the spiritual forces were more powerfully performing their work. The journalist knew that and made her way walking in the golden corridor, but then she felt sudden hesitation she wondered was it the right life for her. Was this existence what she wanted? Was this the place she should be in? The road of money and the so-called civilisation based on what the system whores called reality. This reality was however full of hate, suffering and greed. War and suffering the extroverted ruling elite oppressed the spiritual introverted minority, and the patriarchate always suppressed the more liberal matriarchy, interesting thing that no one rarely ever thinks is why do the introverts are portrayed as a minority by the systematic media? The truth might as well be an outright lie to this belief, perhaps it's the snobbish extroverted elites that are in minority and thus in the constant need of suppressing the majority. The system whores always fear the introverts, that's why the extroverts always portray our side as unhappy and sad, fooling many of our kind that there must be something wrong with both being spiritual and introverted, we should hate our mothers and swear allegiance to our father, to our eternal father God. This is how they justify this practice, and yet who ever told them that God is a father and not a loving mother, what happens if we accept God as a female God. The great Heavenly mother doesn't seem to be wrathful, doesn't? This is another thing these patriarchal fanatics that ruled the system because of money seriously fear, because only then their lies actually come out. So they were as that bold in their arrogance to actually consider God beneath them, and use him or her as a tool to justify their oppression. They took the place of God in our hearths these politicians, religious leaders and celebrities, sounds like Lucifer right? the angel that rebelled against God and plot to overthrow him. The Lucifer who is he? the Satan? perhaps the true symbol Lucifer was meant to represent were the rulers that in their pride and arrogance went to far, makes sense doesn't it. Once you understand the way the ancient wrote and conveyed their hidden messages as to avoid being killed, and understand that humans aren't perfect creatures but can be swayed into politics, even these holy men and the mightiest of prophets weren't above picking sides. You need to understand that neither side is better than the other in the eyes of God. Logically speaking humans are always pretty much the same, always trying to justify themselves with a more higher power, instead of using it to the benefit of all living creatures. It's not that God doesn't exist but we as the society perverted the true image of it, mis-understanding the true availabilities being presented to us. The ability to understand the reality we live in and what we are. The choices were always ours to make, and yet we feel that we were pressed in making the wrong decisions all the time. Is this the lack of responsibility or our own fear of not being good enough? Or maybe it actually sounds too good to be true, and so the wisest one of us decided to believe in wrathful God? Is this wisdom or just self-imposed oppression. Definitely telling this now won't make things better but it's a proper start. The first steps were already made and the choices lie with every being. It's enough to know that there is a choice and God is not money, money is not God. The system whores who claim to promote democracy indeed fear it, because they don't want us to choose and stand up for our choices, they fear our freedom. The wisdom of ancient dimensions will triumph over money. This is the secret esoteric knowledge of East, the wisdom that defines reality and empty words or shell. We have eyes so we can see, ears so we can hear, and noses so we can smell, and we were given our heads to think and use these things in combination to create a culture that redefines the way we live. This is what money fears. But because their professors will ignore this knowledge, many will be fooled into thinking this is idiocy and so the masses will dance the poisonous dance of death to the money whores' prestige. A chef that doesn't cook was made top chef in the system domain, so that he could brew poisons for the human hearth and this doctrine spreads. Seeds of decay unleashed by the whores than what is that Galamouth seeks to accomplish. Or is his ambition so wrong? Perhaps Galamouth's plan is merely to kill the treacherous Top Chef of the system domains. The true devil and patriarchal maniac that went beyond reason in

exterminating love and trust humans once have had with each other. Such Chef might as well be symbol for the mass media and the journalists that were made into mad and rabid dogs, that hunt for the poisonous meat , blood and despair. The young journalist was overcome with despair, and slight grief as she was making her way through the azure and golden corridors somewhere in the corporate system whores domains. Gold in this social structures made itself a sanctus over profane, but in reality appeared rude and decaying. Bribe with the blood of many workers , that barely made enough for their bread and were forced to provide for the filthy whores, even with that what they made. The breakers of family and drunks were ever present where poor became oppressed. Bestiality of the male patriarchal alcoholics is the bestiality of the worst kind , rape humiliation and murder. The patriarchal's enjoyed taking everything from others and then destroying the very little they left, and whenever someone dared to speak the truth , they were labelled as promoting hate speech and murdered on the spot. This is the world ruled by Gold, extroversion and patriarchy the true domain of the system whores , the greed and lust. That produced these offending golden corridors and proclaimed itself the best of the living kind, despite producing merely death. These liars were at times punished by the just. But some decay cannot be prevented as it too remains a natural process. The female journalist could feel the stench of greed ,and hear the true decay of these that considered themselves to be the rulers of all. It was time to make a choice again whether to surrender to the false god which is money, or seek out the real true God that's nothing what they describe it to be. God is the absolute they cannot even begin to understand, equipped with their rationality that denies fulfilment to any desire. Suppressing human emotions, the system whores control the reproduction. This is the manifestation of power of these raised in patriarchy that became gynocrats the opposite of matriarchy ,where a woman becomes a controller of life and not a life creating force. This is the terror of the System Whores. Extroverted regimes that calculate everything into profit. Denying self expression, making it a crime sexual repressions and destruction of the weaker biological organisms and forcing them into labour. Slaves of the modern era, the hypocritical dreams of the wealthy CEO's born in the luxurious wombs of the whores. The controlling of spirituality by creating religion, a priest acts accordingly to the wishes of the money man. This is what happens in all the cults and organized religion centers. This is the price that was paid by the Judas Iscariot the thirty silvers. A symbol of betrayal and the sacrifice of Jesus from Nazareth, to serve as a warning to never trust money and its elites. Their words will always remain poison and be full of lies. The poor Pope owns an entire bank, a rich person cannot become poor even if he or she ever wanted it . For their lives are not theirs to dispose, their slaves of the Money the true god that controls the SYSTEM and its WHORES. The tragedy of the rich when they cannot get more, the rich are just enough to be considered as parasites drinking the fluids of the working class, when there was a philosophy that would create a world friendly to the masses and not to their elites. They turned these into regimes so that everyone that thinks alike would be labelled as a dangerous individual, wanting to oppress human rights. The rights of the elites to steal everything from their slaves. The holy right of whoredom. Which cannot be denied the System whores are the elites of this and any other worlds, the capitalists, the leaders, the celebrities and everyone else that serves Lord MONEY. The dance of the whores , the terrible attitude played by blood, wars and hate. Galamouth's desire included the eradication of these factors in order to create the perfect utopia. He saw the current states of the world as decaying and unworthy of further existence. The female journalist has still not reached her choice, perhaps she couldn't understand the right path she should take, or perhaps because all of the choices were forced onto her. Being forced into making critical decisions , despite the fact she used to be an ordinary corporate slave just few days ago. Born from a precisely chosen pull of genes, with planted information in her DNA strains , which decided about her looks and programmed her personality, just nothing more than a biological robot, and yet with a God given soul, something the system whores couldn't program. But something they always wanted to suppress, to control the spirit and subject it to matter. Was not only the dream of the CEO's who created her , but also the main goal. This is why her parents were given specific diets and were examined medically, their DNA controlled without them even knowing them. Programmed by simple regularities and repetitiveness and hearts closed by idle chatter.

Never less there was always some failures that we the spiritual side could exploit. These individuals that became introverted as a result of DNA manipulation , were errors that became troublesome for the whores, therefore they became subjected to more pressure controlling through fear. Nevertheless the computer networks became the freedom centers and helped us to contact these individuals. This is how we created working environments that allowed us to enter these social groups. This is the place this corporate journalist, turned to find some answers. She was thinking about the purpose of a certain scientific discovery. The Nekroid research program that was carried out by the science research department of Polandia in the year 4303, was the leading discovery of its time. Proving that the spiritual realm is a energy dimension that expands over entire material reality like a river connecting different pockets into a single biological and metaphysical organism. A structure that was later identified as God. This shocked the society but nevertheless had a very small impact on the global population. Even the resurrection of the dead that was carried out by these skilled engineers, was treated more as a curious natural phenomena. This was done in the era where such naturally occurring phenomena was already well documented and constituted public knowledge. The plans of galactic colonisations were of more concern to these living there as earth was reaching its maximum potential, and the mineral and energy trade with neighboring civilisations brought billions of profits. Nevertheless the research proved to be important and would define the future structure of the world, that would be unlike anything before ,the new Sion was born. The new era of life based on the very energy that created all life. Was this Gods own power that defined the future of many generations. The insight into the very power that created us. The ancient voice that spoke to the researchers for the very first time „ The tragedy that surrounds such a fragile body seems to shallow the deepest soul, for such tragedies make the human ability to slowly deteriorate. Oh what has thy done to deserve such a tragic life of sadness, for thy has not lifted a finger against thy kin. So many paths of tragedy but thy shall not fall to the deepest of the abyss, for thy has kept the soul apart from the darkness of hate and the crimes of hate. Forth I am but a passing creature in this grand world. For what is thy without such brilliant beauty of the round blue sphere named earth. The dance of live and the shower of light, the bright smiles is that we forgotten, why have we abandoned these ? why have we corrupted our minds. For what we forsaken our joy ?why surrounded by such grief at which kin have used against thy life, buy nay like the raindrops that fall of the sky , thy eyes trail like roads of endless tunnels for thy life has worsened thy strength for such status has brought forth thy betrayal and thy tragedies

Thy is the beauty of thy kin who have fallen deep within the endless dark abyss that has begun by such desires against our kin

106 children are to save the world in its needdoes the world need only 106 children to be saved. Come forth the bringers of light , awaken the ancient flames that will engulf this decaying world. I call on you thee that bring salvation reveal to us our desires , show the shining path toward our salvation, o thy children of mother earth. Awaken from the slumber and repel the darkness that lies in our hearth. Whispering in the wind are many words that we have long forgotten to understand, for our ignorance has grown and has blinded our sense of knowledge. The trees now stand lone and the gust of the wind blows away there leaves for there was a time when we humans sat next to them to hear the lessons of their old knowledge before our time" the journalist stood in awe as she never experienced this before, Planet Earth was calling back their children, God and the ancient spirits called these that belonged to this ancient race. To return to the way of their predecessors. From now on the choice was simple it was the only right choice to make. She turned away and left the futuristic palace of Gold. She abandoned the System whores and the corporation that raised her, she left and thrown away that false life, looking for a new fate in the darkness of space. Where the new light was gathering. Meanwhile I was walking on the pink floor inside the ancient temple surrounded by the green mist, the battle was now over and I was trying to locate my friends. To continue our journey. Suddenly my path was blocked by our little and a bit incompetent sorceress. Misa who with her unusual nonchalance started another useless conversation, "whats up?" she asked smiling, gleefully , as I smiled a bit relieved that our youngest member was doing quite all right. „have you seen the rest ?” I asked being specifically worried about Yasumi , as I haven't seen

her since we separated. I was a bit worried because this dimension was very unstable and only God knows where we could be teleported if it breaks a part. Lord Galamouth was obviously busy with some power restructurization as I could feel the streams of energy being reshaped into a new informational structure. I looked back at Misa and awaited her reply. "no i haven't seen anyone, and I was worried..it's good that I find you, let's search for others" she said with a happy voice and a little bit of worry. I looked at her sighting „It's all right but don't run off on your own, stay by my side...by the way ? Since we're at it ...you could tell me a bit about yourself” I replied acting in a bit of a Tsundereish manner, for no reason apparently. I was also quite interested in our mysterious but weak member, being wondered what happened to Dawn we met earlier that suddenly disappeared. Thought I had a good idea about that, according to my one theory she simply remained locked in that last dimension, thought I was a bit concerned about whether we should find her and rescue her from all this mess. I know that Mystica was simply Belzebug's blood child that assumed one of the characters, the spiritual archetype I used from time to time for different tasks. Thus the once nameless identity became incarnated as the character I used and therefore became kinda my little servant. Seems Belzebug didn't have much concern about this single soul, thought whatever the man called Belzebug or the Collective known as the Belzebug force, were the ones responsible for imprisoning Galamouth was a matter of debate. I guess the Guy Belzebug who is the acting God Belzebug in place of the Collective consciousness that is the real Belzebug God acted in accordance of the will of that specific collective. Well all right let me explain it a bit, there are two forms of God the Spiritual and Supernatural or alternatively the Symbolic and the Acting, The real God is a name we use for a collective of consciousness, it's basically like all minds of all living beings connected into a single working entity, this connection can be based around a single idea, or whole, naturally all beings are connected to an infinite number of such structures that are represented as different symbols, these symbols are what we came to understand as Gods, and these are Gods of the Spiritual realm the symbolic God, now occasionally because this improves things on a material level and because basically it's more practical to have something as a resident God overseeing a selected material area, an individual from the collective will be selected to reincarnate or incarnate as a direct material representation of a given collective consciousness, he or she and sometimes it, becomes then the gods of legends or myths the supernatural entities that are acting Gods, these are the gods were used to. These beings can of course appear in different forms most of them would be immortal and possess greater bioenergetic capabilities than normal humans or living beings, they may also be born using a direct fusion of energy rather than the traditional method of being born by the species they're meant to work with. In fact a case when a member of a species gains access to Collective or is meant or even allowed to represent the Collective creates a different being that is called an messenger. It's one of the most common methods thought this doesn't grant the being any powers and often is basically an added value to certain individuals who either simply choose working with the spiritual realm by themselves and thus eventually gain this knowledge or are born with an open door to it, instead of the abilities being shut down for most of the beings' carnal lives. Lord Yahweh and Lord Belzebug are the most known examples, where in fact Ball collective and Yahweh are the same collective, thought one structure is more representative of regal powers and the other suggests a more passionate and simplistic attitude concerned with simple religious practices of the ancient world. Lilliana or Sophia is another side that is concerned with matriarchal and female sides of God and it's the primal structure I'm connected to. Making me its messenger. This in fact are all the same structure that are simply divided into smaller parts, these are gods that are one GOD, and the number of such structures is infinite, thus spawning an infinite number of gods which are all represented in one single GOD the creator. Some ancient cultures understood this mystery and even understood that the real Gods are the members of this collective, thus giving the rise to animistic religions like Shintoism which actually describes this quite well. Occasionally these messengers can even use the collective powers, to become living energy beings this is how spirits are born and how the spiritual risen from the shadows these beings then become immortal and manifest in symbolic, archetype forms created by energy that represent them. They continue to be alive just like all material beings and transcend time and space. Becoming the Ever wondering

spirits just like in my case, these beings will continue experience things just like they were alive and will be able to transform matter into energy as well as enjoy many things material beings are capable. By looking at them these beings do not look different from material beings, and the energy is able to mimick everything in detail, though one key difference is that these beings will become introverted and will at times appear a bit smaller than they used to, colors might not be that vivid as in real body though represented realistically, these beings will not feel any strain or pain can easily defile any laws of physics, and survive in traditionally hostile environments like vacuum of space or extremely hot and cold temperatures, shape shift into any energetical form representation they will to, or continue to be represented by symbols and appear in photographs etc. Generally these spiritual beings are very similar, yet different from ghosts. Which are beings of matter created to delay the passing into our side, or to be more precise aren't aware the fact they already passed into the spiritual realm. As the actual passing is simply death itself and it doesn't require going in any lights, or tunnels to get into a special place though connecting with any forms of energy might get insights into new places a soul can wander off to, and places it can reincarnate into. Though the reason some times ghosts appear is also a sign that it is quite permissible to be back in the material world after one has died. Though for the majority reincarnating into a spiritual energy form seems either not attractive or they don't have any idea of such opportunity, believing that once you're dead it's either over or they need to return to cycle of life. Which is at times more practical as it allows most of the beings to experience different realities of both past and the future. All time is created in the same moment, some messengers however upon studying the natural pattern came to realization that there is a third option which involves the use of light, and tried to represent it in their teachings. Some of these include unknown individuals and others are well known as Muhammad or Jesus Christ, where the latter even succeeded in forming an energy form of himself and now continues in this form to teach and inspire different generations. Jesus Christ is indeed immortal. In fact the date of his true return on Earth he prophesized was July 15 year 4303 in the institute of science of Polandia at approximately 11 AM, he was connected by using the legendary Shroud of Turin, which contained his DNA and was still connected to his consciousness. It was one of many revolutions that shocked the world. Though the full impact of this was debated for many centuries. After thinking so much I realized I was still waiting for Misa's reply to my former question. Meanwhile Yasumi had started to chant and 4 bright orbs with the color of green, brown, blue and, red had appeared around her. Her voice was very soft but had started to become louder for each passing minute. She was standing near one of the main columns, that gathered pink aura composed of constructional energy, she herself was engulfed by dark winds that proceeded to attack her with blue lightings, but she was barely bothered by it continuing her spell work. As if those orbs have a mind of their own, they protected her and created an invisible shield for her. When they hit, small vibrations had only appeared on the shield and flowed down until it disappeared. The energy was being diffused into the pink floor while above the Golden Dragon observed both Yasumi and the priestess, closely eyeing Yasumi as she was preparing that spell. It was my closest ally and a fail safe mechanism. In response to Yasumi's spells it shape-shifted changing colors into red, and made itself longer, enabling me and Misa to see it. So that we could make our way to the place the priestess was sitting. Its only reason was to protect the Priestess, from anyone that would try to kill her. The priestess sat on her throne and observed everything silently. The Dragon flew above Yasumi majestically making his presence known to her, reminding to not try anything that would interrupt my operation. It made its way pass the columns observing the battle that was being fought further away. White Master shoot white beams at Mystica who swiftly avoided being shot, her eyes shined in red, having a diabolical madness inside. The little girl was a true incarnation of darkness, and the dragon felt it should keep an eye on her as well. Meanwhile we were walking nearby some columns not being bothered by any enemies when Misa decided to finally talk about herself „Misa is just a normal girl, okay..not so normal, she is a witch and a vampire at the same time, with really creepy and dark mind, but that doesn't mean she is bad...so yea, she is very positive most of the time, but when she is angry, you shouldn't be around her...She spent most of her life in Bulgaria, a small country near by Romania. So...since she was little, she discovered that she has magical powers, and soon she can control everything around her. Also after a month, she realized why she is so pale, and most of the time she

sleeps when its day and why she hates sun raises..she is a vampire too. So,one day she was outside when the moon was full ,searching for some adventures ..she met Blaze master.” she replied smiling cheerfully as I looked back at her „ so thats you're story... all in all you just happened to pass by one of these portals Galamouth randomly created and got suck in ?... way to go, Ill need to send you back to Bulgaria when its all over than” I smiled replying looking around as the colorfull mist became dense.The area was becoming noisy as different densitiest came together. I was trying to analyze these strange patterns all over again, trying to understands Lords Galamouth's methods. His never ended quest reminded me of my self. Why were these strange patterns so similiar to the ones I used. This questioned suddenly formed in my head.Arising suspicion to whether certains spells, couldn't be copied from my self. Who was Galamouth and what were his real intentions, this mystery intrigued me, there was something very fammiliar to this event, just as if this all was scripted before, written along time ago. Did all of this were just somekinda farse to test me, why did it appear as such as it was all staged by someone ? Sometimes weakness over camed me,creeping into my mind,slowing down my thoughts making them innefective, why couldn't I make the apropriate connection to understand this mystery, to resolve this matter. Why were the answers to that question so un-reacheable.The lights danced to the etherial music creating, birds from fire, the colorfull energies uniting on a molecular level, joining each other as pieces of a single puzzle creating an incredible spectacle above my self. I slowly made my way towards the golden door, a pathway to our new destination or a mysterious trap ? The door had strange enblemats engraved into it, these egyptian signs told an ancient story about how the early gods , were suppose to come to earth. In ancient times before the modern society ever existed, people lived in matriarchal tribes, all was familly. There was no wars except few small skirmished not because of supremacy, but because teritory. Food was scarce mostly grown and winters harsh, people lived in a huge forest always surrounded by tree's. The tree's themselves were the first people homes. These tree's hold a mystery, a mystery of life not understood to the modern man. Because inside these tries a life force was beeing grown, not just because of the all living beeings that occupied the bark, but also by the fact that the entire planet was an large transformator of cosmic energies, allowing ancient to channel and communicate with distant worlds. In a single breeze the wind carries millions of energetical impulses to fade to be felt , but capable to detection by certain modern devices, these hidden impulsen symbolised as faces on the mysterious door, where the souls and minds of intelligent beeings that both used to live on our planet and on planets far away. These voices were the first thing the ancient humans heard, these were the Gods of the ancient land. The deities that would become the source of all these myths and in their visions, their own home planets transfered to the mind of the prymitive that would forever become the image of both heaven and hell. The pathway to entire new galaxies stood infront of me, its insight glowing on purple, a very bright light.. The ancients viewed this as an entry to celestial homes, the ancients worshiped this revelation and this single impulse created all religions. When the continent shattered and land divided into the modern continents , this knowledge was divided becoming diverse it took hold of Europe and Asia creating multiple reigions that originated in the middle east. The triangle of the System was set, the dark sphere of influence of money. Which later spread to America's and the rest of the world.All religion fanaticism was born from a single ray of hope and yet none prevailed. However the people were eventually able to open their eyes and understand the message, that merelly said that were not alone. In the future some created the spiritual society eventually learning to use the mysterious forces , thus giving life to all the myths humanity created . Connecting the cycle of creativity. The cycle of life and immortality , the greatest cycle known to man. The ancient Gods thus were not only collective conciousness but also humanity's own ancestors that , used the mysterious quantum mechanic to transfer images, to say that: „ were still there and you never alone, We you're ancestors watch over you and you're generations and we will always be here ever present, guiding this young human race , so no one ever walks alone for there is always atleast two of us , to guide each newly born child and there is plenty” This was the message , they all were trying to say. The message that sings joy in the entire universe and yet so many fail to hear it all , why don't they hear the worlds that are over the air. Perhaps its because the capitalists don't listen to anybody, they think that only

the money whores have the right to freedom and their own revolutions, to create wars and decide who is the aggressor. Just like the country known once as Ukraine which overtaken by the System whores, tried to create a government for the capitalists and the System. To create a new golden capital after they destroyed the land of Poland and took all of the Polish resources, especially capital, the only resource of the money whores is the money they create and the lies they spread. Who knows whether it's really as that bad thing, for them to take that and create an entirely new society based on an never seen level of greed. The System whores dominated the Ukraine trying to set the new Babalon there, this would be the Kingdom of the Whore of Babylon, The system whore the personification of which was to be released from the jail, in which she was imprisoned by the righteous who deemed her greed a very serious threat to world peace. This woman was the true demon in human skin, a consciousness so depraved that it could create more harm than even Lord Galamouth's ambitions. For greed is the most terrible sin of them all, the lust connected with envy, this woman had it all, the business and money and yet the only thing she desired was destruction and annihilation. This was the true evil dressed in white she demanded admiration for the gold she created was a powerful tool. This evil persona would become the dictator of the new world order. All in all charming just like the true devil should be, dastardly thoughts hidden behind a polite smile this was this woman's charm, she wasn't a decaying corpse, nor a powerful necromancer. She was merely an ignorant human and yet she was capable to create this evil, and to become a perfect vessel to the whore of Babylon. For many she would remain a charming persona and even a loving mother, for in all these things her love to her children weren't false they were to become the heirs of the new order. A polite person that secretly moved these forces in motion and created a deadly chain of events, Death to Ukraine and death to world, the woes were heard for the money whores were now in control of their government. The kingdom of the Babalon where to come next, this would be when humanity would learn despair, for the prophecies mocked so loudly came to pass in the middle of the night. Of Poland so mighty that it would engulf the world in flames, a new revelation that came to pass. This was the foundation for this unique war of human thoughts, that created these energies. The Divine world order so small, literally the heavens were under our nose for what we understood as distance could be also translated as size, and by changing the size one could enter into the space between the molecules and to read, the fade waves of signals that created this divine border. The spiritual realm that like a lake engulfed all of reality was in the very air we breathe. This is why the trees were able to magnify these fade signals and to transfer this knowledge into the ancient minds that created this whole reality. In the molecules there is divine energy and by these quantum molecules all life exists as the information transferred, creates a divine network, transmitting knowledge and entire personalities into every place possible, such is the great power of the universe. Which is engulfed in ancient chains of information, DNA and everything else is a preprogrammed matter. That is maintained by the divine collective that, maintains this complex structure information never disappears, it only transfers from one state to another this is the truth about human death. The demonic princess dressed in white was just smiling, Mystica was enjoying herself engulfed in the darkness created by the madness of Lord Galamouth. The manifestation of the little girl moved forward, being herself an irony the essence of darkness dressed in pure white. The child appeared innocent and her red eyes shined in a teasing manner. She used the character I created for myself long time ago to aid myself in my mission, but it was the first time a real consciousness was assigned to the form of Mystica. The consciousness that was of the Ball collective and was formerly used to bind Galamouth into an illusionary realm. The trap of oblivion and eternal prison of a dreamlike reality used, in order to resocialize the truly corrupt personalities of man, or to show all the wrong doings they committed. This could be considered hell but as well it could be a paradise reality of eternal limbo that granted all the desires. For physical. Life is not the only form the soul can take, choosing to exist in the form of the impulse, it can still observe and manifest reality, it is even able to influence the reality as we know in the material I was one of such prime examples, the second being Mystica who was the true embodiment of an illusion, the princess of Illusion that just like me existed due to imprinting ourselves in the material quanta to form a fully printed out three dimensional material holograms that were

able to interact with the material beings, to make love, eat and even kill. As energy itself can be used for both goodness and evil. It could however be neutralized using plasma disruptors or a neutral field of quantum energy that would rewrite the quants and neutralize the material energy of the spiritual entity, the same methods we used to combat ourselves. While it doesn't kill the spiritual entity it neutralizes it making the being disappear or rendering it harmless, a safety measure developed by both the spiritual realm and the system to protect both worlds, however since even material resurrection was possible by this point of time, the spiritual entities were often considered as nuisance rather than serious threat. Still with knowledge being limited, the stories of demons were often useful to submit the corporate population into submission. Just like fairy tales of the old world, I think that certain prejudices don't change over time, people are always afraid to accept strange things, and this fear is easy to manipulate by corporate greed. Would System not use any dirty tricks to obtain its supremacy, the gold despite changing its form, from a mere ore still continued to influence the world's politics this time in electronic form, as digital currency thus, energy served two masters, for us being the very source of our existence the means to transfer information and for them, being the way to transfer information about their wealth and status. That's why it was natural for a conflict to develop in this matter as to which doctrine would prevail, and to which doctrine would the individual belong too. One of the choices this world suggested. Of course both sides would revert to dirty tactics at times, and propaganda, but facts do not change this was the Eternal War. That would never end as you cannot destroy the modern society that continues to grow, making both the System and Our civilisation evolve, that's why this war would last being a perpetual conflict. For where there is a group, there always be individuals that oppose or are outcasted from the group, and naturally they create their own group, and there's always racism and nationalism that despite its name does nothing to protect the nation they claim to come from. This was more relevant in older eras but a new form of corporate nationalism took its place, fanatical allegiance to the corporation that owned your life was to be the duty of you, who was born as a corporate slave in this advanced future of Megacivilisation. Would you have the courage to reach out to the darkness to find light, most likely you would consider this insane. So even in this advanced reality the general human population lived in ignorance, of the ways things really are. But there were these that belonged to our civilisation, discovering the lies of the system whores and their materialistic doctrine. Of course it would be a lie to say that on our side there's no nationalism as well, despite the fact that we all belong to the single collective consciousness, called the GOD this GOD is divided into smaller collectives that themselves, might be divided into smaller groups etc for example in the GOD collective we have the Lilith collective, Ball Collective, Yahweh collective, my own tiny fraction, Lord Galamouths fraction etc. Which like material fractions in the system most often follow their own agenda, you might consider these as parties that even have elected leaders, this is what the acting Gods are essentially, each collective can even have billion of these that create their own fraction in the same collective, and even the so called survents of these acting gods, are like real leaders or idols, most often they hold the status of the idols in order to attract the faithful to their cult and include them in their collective. Which would make it odd that Ball's collective granted me a blood child, since I'm a rival „political leader” and such actions are very uncommon. Usually a being would switch collectives, however it would mean losing the status while being a member of two collective organisations is very uncommon, but then I wasn't really a good politician myself, and my collective isn't really as that impressive I use the power of the entire God collective and the only member of my group to this point was Alpha and Omega, who herself was just an interface of the collective. Hence after billions of years or even longer I acquired a second member. Perhaps it was something of a consolidation prize from Lord Belzebub as I often helped him and the others gather their faithful, not that I ever was obstructed from interacting with the members of the other collectives. Mystica was therefore an official blood child of Belzebub meaning, she was very similar to royal guard, or elite operatives the ones I often fought against, and the ones that composed an elite army of Lord Belzebub and usually followed his orders alone and yet Mystica was mine to command as the form the consciousness took was the character I developed and had complete control over. Mystica could be considered defective for

Belzebub as she didn't undergo special training. But had a lot of potential. However above all it was a clean and pure entity having not been indoctrinized by Belzebub and in an essence abandoned to my favour while the rest was reclaimed. The reason of which at first wasn't perfectly understood to me as consciousness is a valuable resource in the spiritual world, its an essence of a living entity. While I had many real life friends and lovers they as well as my self belonged to different collectives, and while some not always could be aware of it the others followed the orders and the will of the collectives accordingly, others rebelled and a majority also belonged to the system, with which certain collectives even have political alliances, how do you think religions came to be in the first place. Do you think religions were constructed just by people, nope entire collectives which are a powerfull organizations of minds numbering often more than just a single galaxy, transmitted spiritual knowledge that manifested into what ancients accepted as gods. Thus in reality it all came from other civilisations that were more advanced than ourselves, worth to notice however that collective is not the same as civilisation, each collective is a combined intelligence of billions or more civilisations that share certain spiritual values, each entity even if aware and actively surviving one collective in reality has contact with unlimited collectives. Each collective creates new souls by combination, however each soul can defect to any collective it desires, thought unlike defecting from a simple organisation it can take eons of years and evolution, and only in very rare cases happens rapidly. So technically Mystica was still a member of the Ball collective however her assignment was to be a member and not a spy in mine tiny fraction, still it propably mostly because my „collective” could essentially be treated as a part of any true Collective. Since politically speaking I had little to say, but still holding the self proclaimed tittle of the count of chaos, which is worth to notice I cannot use the tittle of the Lord. Thought it could be used to my self as well its basically like beeing a monarch without the country, thought I still holded similiar powers as the Acting Gods and had the same knowledge and the access to the source. Hence why I could perform work not many in the universe where capable off. Spiritual entities and the acting Gods aren't politically speaking normal leaders, or atleast not in the closed form you normally assume, or see in the system domain. In fact while collectives can appear on the outside to operate as a party or political institutions, the most powerfull one even politically control entire galaxies with armies, they're not frankly speaking like the political organisations they're more intense in a form one feels union with and most often work independently from the system worlds authorities. Which by itself is also a collective Hence its perfectly normal for Belzebub to even control an unlimited number of ordinary looking organizations and small parties that on the outside belong also to the economical world. One might not even know which organization operates to whom as the members of the collective are spread in the entire universe, and its not un-common for even espionage to be encountered. Even if a Planet is owned by Belzebub there still will be present organizations that work for Yahweh, and entire galaxies might even switch collective owners by wars or intestellar conflicts. Spiritual entities aren't like closed politiciand will most often interact with civilian population seducing in order to collect members, why do you think the great gods are so willing to answer ordinary people and will often take time to develope certain strategies that allow them to personally interact with each individual, this is because in this strategic warfare you also are the resource, yes you the reader that reads this is also the part of my fraction or atleast a temporal member, even I share this knowledge in order to include you in my universal party, you will be a member even thought you will never ever hear or meet anyone of us in you're entire life. That is true didn't you know that you already belonged to a very powerfull collective ? GOD Now you're affraid how will you're life change ? When you know all of thiswell the answer will be simple it won't changeyou will still live you're ordinary life in fact, you wouldn't even know about such politics taking place right under you're nose...yet if you felt depressed than know this whatever or who ever you are, you are valuable beeing such valuable that entire universal wars are fought in order to attach you to different collectives to make you a member of it.... you are so important that the most powerfull Spiritual leaders will take time to meet you, talk with you and even have sex with you....yea right that is true, just ask and you will recieve just pray to the God and you will recieve, because you are so important that even this story is written and published without any profit on the

internet. This is reality so never loose hope. However now you understand my position and in a sense can witness for yourself how this , powerfull war is fought, one that can literally decide the shape of the entire universe, its collectives due also compete with each other and will most likely fight powerfull battles and at times Im my self fighting this war. Im the neutral and independent Count of chaos that fights this battle for every individual and while help anyone not expecting any reward, and perhaps this is the task I was assigned when I was born into the mortal shell. So do not be affraid to be yourself and aspire to greatness that is inside you. Perhaps I follow the design of a tiny little conciousness, after all what is an earthly pope compared to an acting God, that prayed to the ultimate collective asking for a soul that would revolutionalize his land, a humble request answered by the universe itself The Universe that has yet to manifest its own will to humanity, and yet the universe that is very present with all earth lifes, controling it and beeing its source. This is the power of oblivion the magnitude of it cannot be easilly comprehended. The spiritual entities could also be reffered to as aliens in fact all of it comes from space throught a sophistaced network based on telepathy between different entities, and entire cosmic megacivilisations, here lies the secret of religion and knowledge that was passed to this day by secret cult members that now has the ability to reach out to the light of sun, and to the eyes of the modern man, the leaders of Nazi Germany knew this as well... the system Whores were operated by a man that was essentially an acting God in training, and World War II might as well been a failed attrempt at creating an spiritually advanced civilisation ... a failed because it had nothing to do with spirituality at all instead Hitler himself was merelly used by the System whores in hopes of creating a powerfull ever lasting system whores domain that would be fuelled by the very powers of God itself. This failed miserably just like the babel tower projetct, demonstrating that money can never use spirituality and demonsting in an essence that the entity called Hitler could be compared to a cosmic child, that merelly wanted to play this fun earthly game called war and domination.not concious of the miseary and sorrow it brought and not entirely understanding the day to day human reality it lived. Or was forced to live in...it basically creating what it found to be the most amusing thing on the planet, and recreated its own world in the most closest way possible, for the humanized version of itself that was known as Hitler, however the spiritual entity Hitler isn't the man HITLER as these two are very different despite beeing the very same person....the difference is in fact a different of species as a person Hitler was somebody else concerned with material issues and basically a man, as a spiritual entity it is also a very different beeing that has knowledge and understandings of its actions.. Spiritual entities aren't also able to feel anger and intense emotions remaining calm,due to the fact that they do not posses a nervous system, beeing akin to robots or even quantum robots,they can however act out thereire personal traits , that are a part of thereire characteristics or were a part of thereire human characteristics. All spiritual entities are asexual as they use quantum forms that are basically material holographs, and therefore they don't feel any anxiety in terms of sexuality seeing it as only sexual stimulation, they enjoy sexual intercourse as experience sometimes using the fact thereire humanoid to experience sex with entities , that were out of thereire reach during thereire human lifes , for example celebrities,royalty or people with whom one might have unrequited love relationships, who might now be open for the experience. Most Spiritual entities are tought sexual stimulation in the collectives organisations and consider it an important tool in thereire reltionships with humans.as it allows to exert some form of control over thereire human subordinate or even other spiritual entities, and can be both a sign of friendship and fellowship as well as a sort of payment, or used to initiate spiritual relationships. There is no rape between spiritual entitees and a human cannot rape a spiritual entity due to the fact that you cannot sexulize an asexual beeing ,every sexual intercourse is seen by these entities as sexual stimulation and has noi indirec meaning for them as they don't feel sexuality in the human manner. Spiritual entities don't reproduce as they're merelly using an unlimited number of Quantum based material holographs to interact with humans and interactions with such quantum projection has little overall eaning to them.Its very common for spiritual entities to provoce sexual interactions as there is no sexual consequences., in Megacivilisation such behaviour is treated as asexuality and is considered a sexual orientation on the same level as bisexuality and homosexuality, asexuality under

Megacivilisational law is understood as sexual attraction to non sexual beings, such as humanoids or robots, thought it must be noted that all these beings must remain as humanoids and not be able to reproduce sexually...and its not the same as sexual attraction to alien non humanoidal and sexual beings, that can be treated as a form of bestiality and can lead to different legal consequences unless these species do have a humanoidal form. In legal terms all humanoids that reproduce sexually and can have children after mating with humans, are considered as human and are protected legally as any humans would be, however all entitled that assume a human form but cannot reproduce sexually and are asexual, also all human looking robots are treated as humanoids, and are freed from sexual laws about rape prevention, due to lack of sexual damage such as unwanted, pregnancy...sexually transmitted disease risks the fact of it being machine or spiritual entity. Also asexual beings cannot consent to sexual interaction, meaning that all sexual interaction with an asexual being is only treated as sexual stimulation due to both lacking any legal effect. This means that humans cannot marry spiritual entities, thought they can form companionships that is automatically formed after sexual intercourse has taken place, since an asexual humanoid cannot give a consent to sexual activity as it only can sexually stimulate a sexual being, once a sexual interaction takes place between an asexual and sexual they form companionship, that could be defined as an open marriage and such a spouse can generally even inherit or be granted the rights of the spouse automatically without any other legal requirements....having a sexual intercourse with an asexual doesn't imply cheating unless a Marriage contract included the notion of abstaining from sexual interactions with asexuals. Thought in case of spiritual entities most sexual interactions with humans are just casual and they quickly move on to the next object of interest..While Humanoids can inherit fortunes after their human spouses, and there were numerous of instances of the acting goddess Lilith for example inheriting fortunes and corporations that belonged to her human lovers, the reason why Lilith collective is considered as one of the most effective in the entire universe, they generally stand in a lower position in the house if a lover possessed a human spouse or any children. This law was created in order to ensure that finances and legal matters could be handled even after the death of a person that had no relatives, and the notion of companionship was introduced in order to justify making a humanoid like a female or male robot as a spouse, and making it a legal entity that owns the house, mostly for the possibility of selling, buying or handling monetary issues. This right includes any asexual beings one might have intimate contacts with and live with them in one's own home. Spiritual entities are therefore thought about these issues and make themselves available to any forms of relationships with humans, whether it be friendship or a more intense sexual union. However one must realize the laws described here are merely a more generalized version that usually only represents the megacivilisation as its whole, and generally local corporations might have their own regulations...where rights might not be granted to non humans, making the whole issue complex and bureaucratic., and are only implemented fully in selected circumstances or cases of emergency, however once implemented cannot be revoked, for example naming a spiritual entity a queen of Poland is also irreversible and carries legal and political meaning, being one of the reasons, why the nation of Poland became the basis for Megacivilisation. This being said having sexual intercourse in order to make a humanoid asexual entity as a companionship isn't legally required and one can grant it in a will or it can be granted by an arbitrary legal committee in selected circumstances, for example in a case where there's no successor to lead a monarchy, this can transform into a divine monarchy if the rights are granted to a spiritual entity, or remain a monarchy...also the transfer of rights and ownership of higher economical domains is mostly symbolical and allows for these entities to be treated as legal representatives. A divine monarchy is exceptionally popular and the rights are often granted to these beings that were once rulers of said realms, thought there are also cases where random spiritual entities were selected just for the sake of forming such a divine monarchy. The Divine monarch is basically a representative of the state and might possess its own army and administration. One of the examples of the Divine monarchy is in fact Yahweh as the dictator of Megacivilisation, where his divine regime co-exists with a capitalistic democratic government and a part from the Eternal dictator, it also has a democratic president that is elected every once in a while

10 to 15 earth years. Meanwhile the dragon flew in the ceiling off the temple roaring viciously as Mystica was making her way towards my self. Her eyes glowed in red, black ravens attacked a tiny figure that was revealed to be Enblemo, who defended himself with light spell, which he activated before hand by moving his hands forward, making the black raven dis-integrate, multiplying in force, as Enblemo used an green energy shield to protect himself from the dark powers that were shouted out of the black ravens beaks, and repelled on the green shields surface. Enblemo eyes shined in orange as he was trying to activate mentally a complex spell, but obviously failed due to Mystica's constantly interfering with that attempt, suddenly violet shots were fired on the ground separating Mystica from Enblemo and enabling him to escape as I myself was trying to avoid being shoot at. the Dragon attacked the rectangular mini turrets, with its own orange flames making them explode one by one, the noise of these explosions were carried by the numerous echoes that were created due to unseen forcefields being activated and reflecting the noise, making the impression that the entire shrine would crumble, I even jumped back motivated by these sounds before I realized what was really happening and remembering that I'm still technically immortal, I suddenly found myself shoot at with green energy current and I mentally activated an defense barrier that deflected the energy wave, moving my hand to the attacker that was White Master and sending energy bullets out of my hands hoping to distort his quantum image as he merely deflected these at the columns and moved faster at me, trying to hit me as I ran back avoiding his punches and kicking him in the face making him fall back and hit the nearby column destroying it. He then activated energy lightings on the floor forcing me to jump and attack the lightings, in mid air making them explode, as White Master observed it impressed. I looked at my foe annoyed not understanding his true motives, while White Master was merely stalling for time, as Dark Master escorted the mute priestess away from the shrine. I sent shockwaves and tried to attack White Master, who was skillfully avoiding being hit and was able to throw some Ion grenades, forcing me to escape by jumping above them and shielding myself with a pink barrier against the ion blast, that could distort me. It was able to distort my shield as I used an energy wave to hit White Master, who screamed annoyed before sending a shockwave, that I barely avoided. Energies were dispersed very quickly creating shockwaves, forcing me to jump away.. Yasumi was still in the same spot, her mind spinning and in pain when suddenly, she felt this strange sensation. It wasn't a natural recovery, it seemed like it was magic. Someone was helping her. It was the dragon construct I deployed earlier that now shined in red and orange, and tried to growl signalling Galamouth's attempt at changing the spell constructs that controlled this dimension,, the energy patterns were slowly dissolving, and the dimension was undergoing a transformation. The world we were inside was a powerful holographic construction a true dimensional fortress, with a powerful dimensional labyrinth and this was why Galamouth was so casual about myself being inside. The rays of energy were transferred inside the molecular structures filling the tiny nanonides of an unknown chemical components, these were then energized and reformed in a truly spectacular fashion, this was powerful magic at work. The one that could control such an spiritual construct was truly mastermind, no wonder it took me so long just to get inside, but I could well end up lost for eternity there as well.. Galamouth based the construction on the very prison he spent most of his existence, being sent there by his former pupils Balzebub and Yahweh as a result of an ancient war he tried to provoke. Lord Galamouth felt contempt for his traitorous students and vowed revenge, not understanding the true reasons they turned against him, the dimensional construct shifted as my dragon became absorbed and slowly faded away, my chain was unable to hold to this particular location as it slowly started dissolving and changing into a new one. White Master disappeared as he was being called back by his own Lord, Mystica being a bit angry trying to follow him but instead was engulfed in a blue aura and screamed in pain falling to her knees, waving my hands in her direction I was able to dissolve the blue flames that vanished freeing her from the torment. „it would seem he doesn't want you to follow” I replied smiling a bit and looking back at the pillar near which Yasumi was standing,, „wretched shadow he thinks he can escape !!” Mystica screamed angrily making me wonder a little bit why she was so anxious about getting him. Thought ignoring the fact for now I made my way towards Yasumi and looked around for Arua and her little sister, I

was worried by the fact their presence suddenly disappeared during all of the confusion. The darkness started slowly filling the area however not in the place we were, the location looked like a tunnel and in that tunnel a girl was running she was terrified "what the, where am I? ughh.." [she screamed while running and being hit in the head, she fell down and corrected her brown hair and looked around as tears were falling down into her blue clothes "don't tell me.... That I...." she stopped and started inhaling faster realizing that she still remained alive in some way, but not being sure, suddenly lights filled the area becoming more brighter and annoying the young maiden "gosh, what's with this freaking bright lights wait a minute, is that my picture in the middle surrounded with flowers and.... And...." she continued her monologue and looked at the odd scene being terrified, what she saw was gruesome to her and very unpleasant, there she was lying in a brown coffin, her corpse was lying there and it looked as if she was sleeping "i am dead... I'm inside of my coffin and this is my funeral...." She started feeling something odd a voice was calling her it hurt because the voice was like a squeal, she didn't know whether it was energy or human, but there was something scary to that voice, and slowly she could see images of the fortress we were inside, she started to be aware "what with this noise.... They are very loud.... someone, coming.... i am so sorry what had happen to your daughter...." she turned around looking back at the place she came from hearing her mother cry and people comforting her, this scene was canceling the other noise and she continued looking with disbelief on her face and feeling the wet tears but she started wondering whether these tears were real, hoping for it all to be a dream "isn't she my mother.... My step mother.... ohh god, she.. She... Master! what's the mat....ter....mit....mit....tsuki.... Is that you...." she started seeing a bleak figure that slowly materialized on her eyes, she was overwhelmed cause she could sense the person even before she appeared she stared straightly stare at the people that started appearing "AAAAAAaaaaaaa! Mitsuki.... That's impossible! You rise from death you.... You one of the red eye monster.... call the others.... IMMEDIATELY! Yes master...." the girl smiled shocked looking back at the other one and replied "what? Re....red eyed monster? Am I not a ghost? I'm.... What am I? what you call me, priest?" She turned around to a priest like figure that was revealed to be Dark Master that stood in silence trying to retrieve these souls along with the mute priestess and take them back to Lord Galamouth, but the girl was scared and walked back "STOP RIGHT THERE! You monster! You have their blood and now you are one of them! ughh...." a bullet sound was heard as the images switched to Dark Lord Galamouth himself who stood in a distance observing the scene being a bit anxious as he believed the girl possessed something precious that was necessary for his plan, however another man interfered appearing just as Lord Galamouth was trying to walk forward and grab the girl's hand "be gone spirits of the past leave this space" commanded Lord Galamouth as he was trying to use his illusions as deception and was blocked by an unknown factor a man with called eyes walked past the Lord of Darkness who was annoyed that the girl could call on a family member to come to her rescue, he found this bound annoying "darling.... Otori-sama" the man replied as Galamouth asked annoyed "who is this poor soul?" he looked at Dark Master who was surprised himself "that man, he's my dad" The girl replied happily while Galamouth smirked evilly "dad? your not Mitsuki from Otori house.... You're a monster that we sent into the past down from generations to generations." Galamouth replied hoping to break the girl's resolve by revealing her origin to her "no, no.... That can't be.... I'm a vam.... VAMPIRE.... Blood sucking monster.... - "I....I..." the girl was searching for place to escape "uh, there!" The girl screamed and rushed into a hole that started to slowly opening, she without hesitation jumped to something that appeared to be a mini black hole and was quickly teleported to our location, much to Galamouth's dismay. "it's very troublesome that all of my subjects are so unpredictable, we should find better personalities to plant the fruits of my experiments" Galamouth proclaimed as he vanished along with Dark Master to return to a more secure location taking the mute priestess with them. Meanwhile the girl continued her journey, understanding that her life was about to take as she too took part in this eternal struggle, and joined our fight against the maniacal obsessions of Lord Galamouth.

Chapter 6

„The grand Obsessions”

Lord Galamouth returned from his unfortunate gathering a bit annoyed by the fact that Mitsuki was able to defeat him so easily, he walked over to his golden throne and sat down, bending back, sitting himself comfortably on it he observed the dark purple skies that filled this oddly looking throne room, that appeared to be set in a very desolate area, a forgotten kingdom that was in ruin. Galamouth observed the yellow lightings being overwhelmed by the darkness of the purple skies.. He was wondering and took all these imaginary into himself as Dark Master walked over with the mute priestess. Lord Galamouth looked at the apparition and smirked obviously enjoying his power over life and death „soon it will be the time” he answered Dark Master, even though the figure was appearing to not ask anything. The area they were in was particularly interesting as Galamouth observed the foundations of once splendid castle, these foundations still had standing walls, from the throne room Galamouth observed the remnants of the ancient metropolis from above the hill the ancient castle or shrine was placed on what once was a majestic hill surrounded by many beautiful gardens while now was nothing more than an eyesore, created from dead bushes and dried up creeks seven circles of dried creeks surrounded the mountain separating it from a dead metropolis. Which ruins seemed to fascinate the mad Lord. „This desolate place will be perfect for the next phase of my great desire” Galamouth proclaimed smirking evilly obviously enjoying the sight of death and decay, he so detested. In the above the entire scene a red moon was located in depths of the purple skies, encircling the desolate planet the moon's redish glow was what gave the skies its deadly color. The bloody moon was making its way towards the center of the skies, as Galamouth nervously anticipated a ritual that was to begin. Magical symbols started to appear on the moon's surface, in golden energy the signs of the ultimate absolute eye encased in the triangle, the sign of an ever lasting force, the consciousness that exists for entire humanity, slowly transformed to the a characteristic depiction of a devil, a Satire with a triangle head and a cape all drawn in a simple triangle shape. Just as if the figure was taken out of the carnival theater, the devil was shown floating and dancing madly, he flew above the depiction of fire, that could symbolise raw energy, the life giving force, the devil could symbolise anyone trying to tap in into that power of god. A living being that became a Dark God like Lord Galamouth would be labelled as a Devil, notice the wording the Devil is Lived spilled backwards. Thus everybody that is a devil is in fact everyone that lived and somehow learned to use energy. To make themselves alive, becoming the very thing described by our culture as the Devil. Is this the root of the darkness that everybody fears? The most epic circumstances tend to be created from single ambitions, the highest tree rises from the smallest seed. Even insignificant people can create a reality of epic proportion. The moon then was covered by the burning seal of Salomon, with a triangle facing down, the fire being the force of the Jewish representation of the Absolute the God named YHW, from whom Yahweh got his name, the seal itself was given to an ancient king named Salomon that ruled the ancient Jews in their country ISRAEL, which literary can be translated as to a nation of Gods chosen people, while the triangle faced down indicated the Gods female persona the one known as Shekva or Lilianna the Goddess mother, that was also worshiped by the Slavs as the lady of the sun. The creator of all life. From whom all religion might be formed eventually replacing the mother with the father and giving birth to religions like Roman Catholicism and Islam. In all variation the knowledge spreaded to the farthest corners of the earth, creating many spirituality based religions like Shinto or Buddhism, but once combined, these religion tell the story, of the Goddess and her worshipers spread around the world, and of people and tribes. Giving rise

to a new spirituality based civilisation that simply re used the teaching of the ancient tribes combining it with futuristic science, allowing people to not only travel wide distances into unknown galaxies, by means of new quantum powered spaceships but also to transform into spiritual entities or „devils” and become immortal. The images on the red moon again transformed into a depiction of a bride , indicating that a cosmic wedding was to take place, the wedding beeing a symbol of union between both the feminine and masculine and in fact was a basic component of any ritual. Galamouth was preparing to enter into the dark realm of female sexuality as the priest of the new order preparing to take over the powers of the Absolute,by conducting an ancient fertility rite with the enslaved priestess, but he needed carefull time in order to activate the higher realms of the universal collective. Everything was a carefully enscribed symbol: the desolate world, which symhbolised the colapse of the human reality, the red moon the symbol of female sexuality or feminity, and himself as the Dark groom and the priest of darkness, as the co-ordinator of these dark cosmic energies that were formed from individual thought patterns combined by quantum mechanics. The red color is the symbol of blood which is the basic substance of live and red light meant life energy controlled by the dark ambitions, the mad dance of crazy ambitions was about to begun. Galamouth observed this spectacle, trying to memorize the ancient times, when even he himself was just a mere human beeing, but he wondered whether he even was a human. This question about his true identity was always something that tormented him, these visions of the world beyound that brought him right to this place. Were their reality or fantasy? he would obsess on them, when he was just a child preparing to the morning muslim prayers in the small Tatar community he lived. He was raised in an ancient custom in a strange land, that adopted their grandfathers as rejects. This strange foreign kingdom the so called elective monarchy, perhaps the only one of its kind to ever exist in this godly world. Was populated by strange angelic like nobelman and peasents that lived near farms, always obeying their local priests. He would always wonder why it camed for him to live in such a strange land, where every little town could have its own custom. How many people came here from all over the world , rejected from their homes. He saw many of them, wondering what a bizzare land to live in such harmony, but perhaps the days of its glorious past where long gone. As the times of the golden freedom, where nothing but a past away dream, the young Dal-wing was just finishing his ceremonial washing of his hands,so that he could commute with his beloved prophet in reverance. He had so many questions to him and Allach and all the saints Allach ordained, he wondered why he was plagued by such visions,was this because of a terrible sin him or his parents committed. Since beeing a small child Dal Wing ,shown remarkable and keen intelect, he was able to understand even the most ancient teachings. But even so he couldn't not consult the elders for more advise , as his questions were often on the most bizzare subject. He could only continue his morning prayer in his bedroom, trying to face Mecca ,hoping that someday, the answers will come. That someday he will understand what path he must take to redeem his clan, for the terrible sins they committed by coming to live in this far away unholly land , that was known as Poland.That was rulled by the devils in black, by the Roman catolicism that waged a holly war since medieval times against the survents of the prophet Muhamadd. Islam was more than just religion it was an powerfull tradition,its even more than a written culture or culture at all, for every muslim Islam is the world. Its not something the Christian heretics could not understand, he thought as he was deep in the ancient prayers, yet he camed to enjoy this strange land and would be worried whether he's not committing another terrible sin against humanity and God , against Islam.. He bowed his head in such reverance as if trying by this single act to redeem not just himself but the entire nation.In the eyes of the prophet he thought his family and clan offended, how else could he explain these strange dark visions. If not as torment ordained by the mercifull Allach may glory be his, but despite beeing tormented he felt even more love to his eternal creator for blessing him so much., as to letting him suffer for his entire family. For the entire Tatar community, that he felt betrayed Allach by siding with the Christian oppressor. But was this siding really as that bad ? The young Dal-wing had doubts, is this strange land really as that offensive to the eyes of the almighty Allach? This land had its own unique tradition, the young Dal-wing found enchanting, and he prayed in reverance to Allach to inquire whether he should take

this path that was opening in front of him, and whether it by these doors he will understand the truth behind his curse. In Islam doors are sacred and he often envisioned himself standing in front of such golden white, beautifully ornamented huge doors, which he pushed forward to open, revealing a golden light that engulfed everything. Then he was back on his bed, standing up from his bed and preparing himself for breakfast with his entire clan. It was a meeting of great importance when an entire day would be planned out, in accordance to God's wishes. Getting out of his room and making his way towards the living room. Guided by the beautifully ornamented hand rail. Towards the brown wooden stairs, he made his way down. To this huge red carpet where other members of his community were seated down just finishing their prayers as he took his place, next to the other clan children. Awaiting the morning meal, and the important discussion that was to take place. It all happened on a very cold day and a solemn time for the now occupied Polish Lithuanian commonwealth it was 23rd February of 1798, and more than a week ago the last king of this realm Stanislaus August passed away in Saint Petersburg, Imperial Russia. Times were changing and the Tatars found themselves in a completely new reality, a reality the 5 year old Dal-wing will face in his adulthood. Born in 1793 the year of the second partition of Polish Lithuanian commonwealth. The falling realm was a home for many minorities, which now were faced with a choice of staying or moving somewhere else. Now that their home Poland was no longer in existence, that was truly an existential question, would the conquerors of Poland extend the hospitality the Poles welcomed them with, or will they expell these tribal people unto the deserts was a question on everybody's mind. The smells of wonderful foods filled the room, as the women of the clan were bringing the feast, today was a special day. The Aromas were filling the entire room dispersing them in the air the sweet smell of fried meat, and baked bread. The smell itself had a magnificent magical power to make the young Dal-Wing hungry for the fried foods, that were slowly being brought into the room that the community was meeting in. The colorful dishes were being placed, in front of the young children still steaming with heat. Young Dal-Wing could behold the culinary art of his own world, observing the finer delicacies and wondering about the precise way the vegetables were cut and the exact time the meat was done to have such a pleasant brown color. The brown sauce covered with pieces of unknown to him mushrooms, gave out an incredible aroma, its taste was exquisite and breath taking, as the taste literally evaporated into his mouth connecting to the nerves in his tastebuds, giving a pleasant salty sensation. The forgotten art of culinary was an art of the highest civilised nations, that didn't need to rely on capitalistic wealth, but instead relied on communal wealth-fare and communal work. These were achieved by sharing hard labour in the kitchen to prepare a meal for the community they belonged too, by dividing the task and co-operation without competition, there's no need for leaders in the world where all tasks are shared freely. The fine cutted lettuce and carrot, the carefully picked herbs and spices. In summer time, wisely choosed mushrooms by the men of the clan, who knew which one to harvest and which to abandon. The fine selection of alcohols was another matter, not just reserved for adults. Wine was a delicacy that although in weaker capacity was also enjoyed by children of the clan, it was harvested and made thanks to their effort, picking up grapes, and using their legs to crush the fruits into the juice that later fermented in huge brown barrels, and would be later consumed on occasions such as these, where the entire community awaited the first days of springs. To move out to the fields to start another harvest season, a new year of abundance in terrible times of oppression. Now however all these things were still far away, it would take one and a half month, for the snow to melt into the ground and the grass sprout out from under the ice. Dal-wing drank a green soup out of his bowl observing the members of his community, noticing the members of his clan as they were discussing about matters of trade and commerce, not much of it he understood. One of the members shown a brown tiny bag from which he took out two golden ducats and putted on the floor, showing how much he paid for some merchandise, the faces of two other members looked in horror, as if a great tragedy had fallen on them, cause the guy paid such a price for some merchandise, a face of disbelief was visible at the eldest of the group. This being the father of the two sons, that reported their mis-adventure to the master of the house. Dal-wing's father was sitting with the man holding his nose perplexed and patting the young boy that put out the ducats,

telling the boy that all of it will be alright. The matter they talked about were border fees the Prussians had instituted for using the once Polish, market place. The Tatars were a bit perplexed by this situation, as they made their livelihood out of the trade of exotic spices. Which they sold to different people in Poland and to different locales owned by Jews, who were always keenly interested in the good quality Tatar Merchandise. The Tatar elder stood up smiling to everyone „It will be all alright my children, we had tougher times before, this crisis will end soon. The Szlachta will definitely not sit peacefully on that, they're proud for that and we guided by our noble prophet, may God bless him will stand ever ready to help our brothers defeat the enemy. Then soon better days will again return to this tarnished Tatar homeland” Dal-wing's father proclaimed sitting down on his red cushion, sighing terribly and smiling towards his son. Inviting his son to come over to him, making Dal-wing put down his bowl and come over to his aged father, sitting on his lap as the man looked around the community members, before beginning his speech „Takie ojczyzny jak ich dzieci chowanie is a Polish saying that means, the nation and its people are as strong as their young ones are, we should not fear adversities for we are here to deal with them in order to entrust the future of our community's survival to our children... you see these young ones are the seed that will grow fruits of our generation. Such is the duty of parents, to be instructors and protectors, we have a doubled responsibility to raise our children in the spirit of Allah. To teach them to understand between the right and wrong, because if we the parents don't do that, who is to show them the right path? Who is to guide the blind ones to the path of salvation. We must teach them about our ancestors, because what is a nation that forgets its roots? Our Noble protector the King Stanislaus August may God bless him, understood this truth quite well, he knew that if the Polish were to forget about the heroic deeds of their forefathers, then their community as a nation would be dispersed a nation that forgets its own history becomes wild. ” He spoke and stopped a while, taking out a wooden pipe, which he lightened using matches. While Dal-wing came off his father's lap and quietly returned to his designated place. His father was smoking his dark brown pipe, producing circular smoke, that appeared every time the orange flames disappeared. Enjoying the earlier prepared tobacco leaves he took the pipe out of his mouth, cleaning it up and continuing his monologue „I was thinking of something recent about how the Szlachta formed a civilised method, to protect its youth against barbarism by establishing the Commission of National Education. It's a truly civilised method of teaching, a community effort, one that should be promoted among the faithful. It reminds me of the House of Wisdom created by the obedient sons many centuries ago, to promote understanding and knowledge among all God's people, no matter from what land they came, where the man of God could study the words of wisdom in holy texts of the Quran. See my brothers and sisters how long Europe needed to evolve to get close to the wisdom and understanding the chosen ones already possess. So long it took to open the eyes that were closed to God's truth. Our God is merciful and wise and ever knowing. It is Allah himself who guided the members of Szlachta to these actions, in order to preserve the Polish nation its culture and its heroic deeds for the future generation. Poland was always the mother and the great lady was always, watching over us, the mother of Isaac the queen of Poland will always watch over this land and its people. We should ask the mother of Isaac to protect our humble people of Tatar the descendants of Lipka's ” Dal-wing's father spoke as the Tatar community yet again started to pray, reciting the verses of the Quran about the divine power. The divine power that shaped the future, that the present day Lord Galamouth was trying to manipulate, as he looked above at the red moon. Awakening from his own memories and realising how vague they were. He could only remember so little, and yet he felt he was content with forgetting his own past. After all he thought there was no reason for him, to invoke any loving sentiments. These were just shades that were to be erased along with himself into the infinite oblivion he desired. Galamouth dreamed about the world without God, without spirituality and meddling divine influences, that according to him have corrupted his destiny, he was a man that waged a holy war against the world he couldn't accept, against all the powers of the universe he felt were oppressing humanity. The eternal collectives and the absolute were his enemies, did he not fit to the ideal description of Satan? a fallen angel that rebelled from God, or a man that rebelled from religion. It was all the same, he sought to justify his ignorance with violence proclaiming a

holly war against the entire civilisation. The entire world that rejected his own existence, parrelling my own motivation to fight the system whores, Galamouth proclaimed a war against spirituality and mentality because he felt rejected or even harmed by the ideas they represented. A war against the immorality of religion, or perhaps a war against his own humanity or lack of it. He feared his own deification viewing it as the most obscure abomination, and yet in past before him many rulers referred to themselves as living incarnations of Gods. Therefore the concept was not exactly exclusive to our times. Megacivilisations technology only improved it recreating that which before was only in humanity's dreams. Resurrecting the ancient Gods of all religions and connecting ourselves with our ancestors, by waking them up from their millennial long sleep and reintroducing to modernity as the ancient gods of myths. That's how our culture was introduced into next phase, a truly universal era not just for humanity but for other species as well. The culture entering a new celestial era was not just the product of the so called media industries, but also of eons years old traditions, and mysterious forgotten cultures, the word culture can define the way of life, and for many tribes it meant both preservation and existence, especially in the forgotten times when ideas ruled over man, these distant ages where civilisations were based around something that future archeologist would call religion, but more precisely it were not just rites controlled by the formal etiquette, instead it was a living form of entertainment based on symbols and pantomime, originating from simple tales about ancestors that over time became supernatural Gods, immortalized in epics of the ancient world, and recreated as the divine collectives using quantum based technology. The Quantum technology, the mysterious devices of the future that could resurrect ancient societies, reconnecting them with the future generation and enabling a dialogue that survived death itself. Was based on holography and mathematical principles invented by the Polish researches working on the Leia display that although used water to provide the surface, allowed for interactivity with the holographic image. Which became the great ancestor of the Nekroid project that was able to connect quantum avatars with individual consciousness, as well as later successful transfer of quantum information that allowed individual consciousness to recreate the process without using outside technology. Giving birth to Spiritual entities that were able to not only imitate living organism's but also able to due to their quantum nature work in environments hostile for living beings. The other uses were mental influence and transfer of information or mode control, returning to its ancient roots. Galamouth however viewed these practices of resurrected Gods, as way more intrusive and dangerous than what they appeared. Galamouth had an important point as with all technologies, system abused even this technology using the acting Gods as tools, but also the individual acting Gods enjoyed their newly found immortality and power over societies, and by using spiritual means combined with technological advances were able to influence many smaller civilisations into submission amassing authority and power, that through skillful use of shadow diplomacy was unparalleled anywhere else, some acting Gods and collective could rightly so consider themselves the rulers of entire galaxies, and were often treated as royals or monarchs, which for some was merely an expansion of their former realms which they ruled when alive. Therefore Galamouth was exactly aware what it meant to go to war with the universe itself, his determination was serious as he continued gazing, expecting some interference from these that opposed his ambition.

